CIVITAS MAXIMA

TRIAL MONITORING

Gibril Massaquoi

Appeal Proceedings

Table of contents

Click on any day to jump directly to the corresponding section

- Disclaimer
- Gibril Massaquoi's appeal proceedings

- January 10, 2023 [Finland] **Day 1**: The Appeal Proceedings Begin
- January 12, 2023 [Finland] **Day 2**: Written evidence: Defense
- January 13, 2023 [Finland] **Day 3**: Conclusion of written evidence
- January 17, 2023 [Finland] **Day 4**: Expert statements
- January 18, 2023 [Finland] **Day 5:** Gibril Massaquoi is heard
- January 19, 2023 [Finland] **Day 6**: The prosecution questions Gibril Massaquoi
- January 20, 2023 [Finland] **Day 7**: The first witnesses heard
- February 6, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 8**: The proceedings begin in Monrovia
- February 7, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 9:** The first witness is heard
- February 8, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 10**: Three more witnesses heard
- February 10, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 11**: Three more witnesses are heard
- February 13, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 12**: Three witnesses and a biscuit store
- February 14, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 13:** Civilians detained in Waterside
- February 15, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 14**: Shooting in a store
- February 17, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 15**: Soldiers in court
- February 20, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 16**: Waterside Soldiers
- February 21, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 17**: Civilians held under a bridge
- February 23, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 18**: Executions in Waterside
- February 24, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 19**: Looting civilians shot in Waterside
- February 27, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 20**: Looters targeted
- March 2, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 23**: Kamatahun Hassala hearings begin
- March 3, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 24**: Forced labor in Lofa

- March 6, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 25**: A former soldier testifies
- March 7, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 26:** Lives lost in Lofa
- March 9, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 27**: Tributes made in Kamatahun
- March 10, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 28**: Women raped in Kamatahun
- March 13, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 29**: An ex-government soldier testifies
- March 14, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 30**: Back and forth between Monrovia and Lofa
- March 15, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 31**: An investigator explains
- March 16, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 32**: Child soldiers
- March 20, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 33**: Sierra Leoneans in Monrovia
- March 21, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 34**: Torture in Klay
- March 22, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 35**: A former child soldier testifies
- March 27, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 37**: Schedules rearranged
- March 28, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 38**: Witness allegedly approached for testimony
- March 29, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 39**: Defense witnesses testify
- March 30, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 40**: Witnesses submit evidence
- March 31, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 41**: Defense witnesses provide context
- April 3, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 42**: Former RUF members testify
- April 4, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 43**: Final day in Monrovia
- April 12, 2023 [Finland] **Day 44**: The Court returns to Finland
- April 13, 2023 [Finland] **Day 45**: Various evidence admitted
- April 14, 2023 [Finland] **Day 46**: Experts are heard
- May 4, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 47**: The Appeals Court returns to Monrovia
- May 5, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 48**: Defense witnesses from Sierra Leone
- May 8, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 49**: Former RUF commander takes the stand
- May 9, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 50**: Former RUF members heard
- May 10, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 51**: RUF members meeting with Massaquoi
- May 11, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 52**: A new defense witness is heard
- May 12, 2023 [Liberia] **Day 53**: Final Witness in Monrovia
- May 23, 2023 [Finland] **Day 54**: The Court returns to Turku, Finland

- May 24, 2023 [Finland] **Day 55**: Safe house security examined
- June 21, 2023 [Finland] **Day 56**: Last witness before summer break
- August 25, 2023 [Finland] **Day 57**: Final phase of the trial begins
- August 28, 2023 [Finland] **Day 58**: Gibril Massaquoi's final word
- September 4, 2023 [Finland] **Day 59**: The prosecution's closing arguments
- September 8, 2023 [Finland] **Day 60**: The defense's closing arguments

Disclaimer

Civitas Maxima believes that local populations, those who bear the consequences of the most serious international crimes and human rights violations committed in their countries, have the right to accessible and unbiased information about the trials of alleged perpetrators.

This is why we conduct trial monitoring, so that what is said in court is available to all, especially affected populations who cannot travel to the country where the trial is held or otherwise do not have access to the hearings.

Civitas Maxima does not provide official court transcripts.

As the proceedings were not conducted entirely in English, parts of this monitoring were translated into English using DeepL and may contain occasional inaccuracies.

The names of certain witnesses and civil parties are withheld for privacy and security reasons.

Verbatim notes taken by our trial monitors are available to journalists on request. Please contact **comms@civitas-maxima.org** to request access.

Trial Monitoring: Gibril Massaquoi's appeal proceedings

Gibril Massquoi, former Lieutenant-Colonel and spokesman of the Revolutionary United Front (RUF), was tried before the District Court of Tampere, Finland, from February 3, 2021, to January 2022. Throughout the year, hearings were held in Liberia, Sierra Leone and Finland. On April 29, 2022, the District Court dismissed all charges and found that there was reasonable doubt that the defendant committed the offences he was charged with. After that, the Prosecution appealed the Court's decision. The appeal proceedings began on January 10, 2023, at the Turku Court of Appeal, Finland, and lasted until September 8, 2023. On January 31, 2024, the Turku Court of Appeal issued its judgement and confirmed the acquittal of Gibril Massaquoi.

Art by **Leslie Lumeh**

Voiceover by: **Dounard Bondo**

Dounard is a Liberia-based journalist who usually covers stories on human rights, development and politics. He has reported on post-war justice in Liberia for many outlets. Dounard has a Bsc in International law and diplomacy and a master's in international maritime law. Additionally, he is currently a senior student at the Louis Arthur Grimes school of law where he is pursuing an LLB.

January 10, 2023 – Day 1: The Appeal Proceedings Begin

The President explained the history of the proceedings and the main points of the District Court's judgment and the parties' submissions. In April 2022, The District Court found that there was reasonable doubt that Gibril Massaquoi had committed the crimes he was accused of, and the Prosecutors later appealed this judgment.

Next, both parties took the floor for their opening statements. The Prosecution began by describing Liberia's Second Civil War, and presented the way that the Finnish authorities had begun their investigation and gathered information on the crimes in question. They then described to the Court how the Tampere Court had misunderstood the evidence and it had to be rectified.

The Defense focused on a chronological presentation of Gibril Massaquoi's journey with the RUF. It also presented its views about the witnesses' statements presented by the prosecution, and how, according to the defense, the Finnish investigation was biased.

After the opening statements, the Court moved on to discuss the written evidence presented by the Prosecution for the rest of the session.

January 10, 2023 [Finland] Day 1: The Appeal Proceedings Begin

10.01.2023

General aspects of the case reviewed by the Court of Appeals

The appeal proceedings in the case of Gibril Massaquoi began on January 10, 2023, before the Turku Court of Appeals in Turku, Finland. First, the Court went over the classified aspects of the case. It declared that the elements of the case that had been deemed classified in the lower court would remain classified in the appeal proceedings. For the rest of the hearings and material, everything in the case remains public.

Next, the Court laid out the general schedule for the hearings in Finland and Monrovia. It declared that the appeal relating to the defense's fees would be dealt with separately, in purely written form, outside of the oral hearings.

After laying out these practical matters, the Court went over the content of the case, referring to the indictment. The Prosecution is seeking a guilty verdict on four different crimes: murder, aggravated rape, aggravated war crimes and 'aggravated violation of human rights in exceptional conditions'. The defendant, Mr Massaquoi, claims that he is innocent of all the charges. He also refutes the jurisdiction of the Finnish courts over the alleged acts.

The President of the Court explained that the claims on jurisdiction had been decided in a separate decision that have been given just beforehand, in December 2022. Almost all the claims of the Court's lack of jurisdiction were rejected, except for that on aggravated rape, on which the Prosecution was to provide additional information at a later stage. The Prosecution had the opportunity to request for other court-related fees to be covered by Mr. Massaquoi, but they

replied that the amount was so high that they could not expect any individual to do so. Therefore, the Finnish government would cover all fees relating to witnesses and other evidence.

The Prosecution presents their case

The Prosecution was the first to present their case to the Court. They began by discussing the context surrounding events in question, such as the Second Liberian civil war, the civil war in Sierra Leone and the cooperation between Charles Taylor's government and the Sierra Leonean rebel group the Revolutionary United Front (RUF). According to the Prosecution, the RUF sent soldiers to Liberia to fight alongside Taylor's troops against LURD and various other rebel groups in Liberia. In Sierra Leone, Mr Massaquoi had joined the RUF in 1991 and managed to proceed to a high position within the organization, rising to the rank of spokesman.

The Prosecution also went over the indictment in more detail. They alleged that the acts took place in two time periods, the first between March 1 and September 30, 2001, and the second between May 1 and August 18, 2003. There is also a separate torture charge that allegedly took place on July 26, 2002. For the first time period, Mr Massaquoi is being charged with four counts of murder, three counts of aggravated rape and various acts forming the two separate counts of an aggravated war crime and an 'aggravated violation of human rights in exceptional conditions'. The Prosecution asserts that Mr Massaquoi was in Liberia during the time periods when the alleged acts took place and was commanding RUF troops who had been sent to support Charles Taylor.

The Prosecution also gave a presentation on the background of the case. They demonstrated how the Global Justice Research Project and Civitas Maxima provided initial information to Finnish authorities, which led to the Finnish police investigation in Liberia and the current trial. The Defense had made certain claims on an alleged corruption and bias throughout the investigation and trial. Therefore, the Prosecution also raised these points and stated that they had already been rejected by the lower court in this case, as well as by other courts in Europe who were dealing with similar cases. Next, the Prosecution presented their preliminary arguments on how the lower court had taken the evidence and witness testimonies into account. They disagreed with the level of uniformity that the lower court had required of the witness testimonies.

The Defense presents their case

After the Prosecution, it was the Defense's turn to present their case. They began by outlining Mr Massaquoi's time in the RUF from 1991 onwards and focused on his whereabouts in Sierra Leone and Liberia between 1999 and 2003. According to the Defense, from 1999, Mr Massaquoi had worked extensively within the RUF leadership for a peaceful resolution of the civil war in Sierra Leone. They asserted that he had participated in multiple diplomatic meetings in Liberia and other neighboring countries. The Defense maintains that from 1999, Mr Massaquoi did not participate in any fighting, as he worked in a solely diplomatic role within the RUF.

The Defense also focused on the police investigation conducted by the Finnish National Bureau of Investigation (NBI). They highlighted the fact that the police were not able to reach witnesses on their own but had to rely on a local facilitator hired from GJRP.

The Defense made some other claims. For example, they claimed that the number of witnesses who were able to identify Mr Massaquoi as the perpetrator of the acts rose as the case

progressed, allegedly due to new evidence. In addition, the Defense claimed that the changes that the Prosecution had made to the indictment during the lower court proceedings affected the testimonies of some witnesses. The Defense also raised the changes in witness testimonies throughout the proceedings. They particularly focused on the torture charge which is mostly based on the testimony of one person.

The Defense also presented an overview of their written evidence on Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts during the alleged acts in order to refute claims of his presence in Liberia.

Prosecution written evidence presented

After both parties had presented their cases, the Court began to review the Prosecution's written evidence. The Prosecution presented only a few written documents, such as parts of the police's pre-trial investigation report, as well a note that Mr Massaquoi had written, while he was in prison, to certain witnesses. The Prosecution claimed that this note contained instructions as to how to testify to support him. The Prosecution also provided some additional information in relation to the jurisdictional question that had not yet been resolved, but still had some research to do regarding Liberian criminal law.

January 12, 2023 – Day 2: Written evidence: Defense

The second day was dedicated to the presentation of the Defense's written evidence. Most of it had already been submitted during the first instance proceedings, but new additions and modifications were made.

The Defense described the context of both the Sierra Leonean and Liberian civil wars, as well as Gibril Massaquoi's role in the RUF. In particular, it focused on Massaquoi's location: through UN reports and newspapers, the Defense attempted to establish that between 1999 and 2001 – when the alleged crimes were committed – Massaquoi had been traveling, and despite a few trips in Liberia, the Defense stated that he had rarely been in the country. The Prosecution challenged some of the evidence presented.

January 12, 2023 [Finland] Day 2: Written evidence: Defense

Defense written evidence presented

The second day of the appeal proceedings was dedicated to the Defense's written evidence. The Defense first gave a picture of the larger context of the conflict in Liberia by presenting documents pertinent to the Liberian Truth and Reconciliation Commission's (TRC). They cited the TRC's final report and other similar documents linked to the Second Liberian Civil War. These documents were used to demonstrate the wide scope of the TRC's work. The Defense pointed out that the defendant's name was not mentioned anywhere in the TRC documents as among the suspected perpetrators of war crimes, and that there were actually multiple other persons named Massaquoi included in the reports.

The Defense also presented a document prepared by the Finnish police that conducted the pre-trial investigation, the NBI. This document demonstrated that the police had gone through the TRC's reports and the actual interview documents that the TRC had at its disposal when it drafted its report. According to the Defense, the police summary of the TRC's documents did not mention Mr Massaquoi, and rather seemed to point towards other individuals as perpetrators of some of the crimes in question. The Defense also presented a document relating to the NBI's trip to the United States, where they had accessed and photographed all available newspapers from the Liberia/Sierra Leone region from November 1, 1998, to December 31, 2004. Here again, not one newspaper article designated Mr Massaquoi as the alleged perpetrator of the acts.

In addition to documents discussing the context and historical events in more general terms, the Defense presented multiple other detailed written documents. They presented newspaper articles about the RUF, the civil wars in both Sierra Leone and Liberia, and persons related to Mr Massaquoi, interviews that Mr Massaquoi had given to various media outlets and letters that he had signed between 1999 and 2003.

January 13, 2023 – Day 3: Conclusion of written evidence

The third day was dedicated to the period of 2002 to 2003 when some of the alleged crimes were committed.

The Defense presented documents related to Gibril Massaquoi's cooperation with the Office of the Prosecutor of the Special Court for Sierra Leone. It also criticized how the Finnish police handled the collection of witnesses' statements before and after the trial. According to the Defense, the Finnish police and its Liberian partner did not deal with the witnesses correctly and did not report certain issues in a timely manner.

Finally, the Defense discussed how some evidence had been fabricated against the client: in particular, it referred to a picture which had evidently been manipulated to incriminate Mr Massaquoi.

The hearings will start again on Monday January 16.

January 13, 2023 [Finland] Day 3: Conclusion of written evidence

Defense written evidence is presented

On the third day of the trial, the Turku Court of Appeals continued with Defense's written evidence. The Defense presented additional written documents pertaining to Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts between 1999 and 2003, such as newspaper articles about the Sierra Leonean civil war, interviews that Mr Massaquoi had given to various media outlets and letters that he had allegedly signed.

Some specific themes were examined, such as a fishing project that Mr Massaquoi claimed he had worked on in 2002 and 2003 and the details of his co-operation with the Special Court for Sierra Leone (SCSL). The Defense also presented the witness protection agreement that Mr Massaquoi had signed with the Special Court. This agreement provided, for example, that he would not receive any protection or amnesty should he breach its terms, such as by committing war crimes or other atrocities in Sierra Leone.

Another theme examined in detail by the Defense was the way in which the NBI had come across the witnesses in the trial – the defense heavily criticized many aspects of the police investigation and its arrangements. The Defense raised the point that the NBI had not found the majority of the witnesses themselves: they had heavily relied on a local facilitator, who had been recruited from the Global Justice and Research Project (GJRP). The Defense pointed out various details about this arrangement by relying on the facilitator's personal notes from the investigation. They asserted that the NBI had falsely claimed to have found a lot of witnesses without outside help, while, in reality, these witnesses had been found by the facilitator. In addition, the Defense claimed that the notes demonstrated that the facilitator had acted in an unprofessional manner by disclosing prohibited details to the witnesses, such as the suspect's identity, and had otherwise affected the integrity of the witness testimonies. The Defense also raised that as the director of GJRP was one of the victims and complainants in the case, the use of his employee during the investigation, despite the fact that he was detached from the GJRP throughout the process, did not fulfil the requirements of a proper police investigation under Finnish law.

January 17, 2023 –Day 4: Expert statements

The first day of the second week of the trial was dedicated to statements of expert witnesses. Most of the statements discussed were those that had previously been examined during the first instance proceedings.

The court first read an expert testimony that dealt with the historical context of the Second Liberian Civil War. The remaining two testimonies focused on forensic psychology. One of the experts had been consulted during the first instance proceedings, whilst the other had been more recently requested by the Prosecution for the current proceedings. The findings of the two expert opinions go against eachother; for this reason, each party called for both experts to be heard at trial.

January 17, 2023 [Finland] Day 4: Expert statements

Expert witness Ilmari Käihkö's expert reports are presented

The Prosecution discusses the first expert report

The Turku Court of Appeal spent the fourth trial day by examining the two expert reports drafted by Mr Ilmari Käihkö during the lower court proceedings. Mr Käihkö is a Finnish expert on the Liberian civil wars, who had spent considerable time in Liberia talking to former fighters and people who had experienced the war. As both parties had named these reports as written evidence, both the Prosecution and Defense got to present their views on the content.

The prosecution began their presentation by focusing on the first expert opinion Mr Käihkö had drafted in May 2021, when the first instance proceedings were ongoing. The defense had asked Mr Käihkö questions relating to the fighting in Monrovia between the Liberian government troops and the rebel group LURD, such as the geographical locations and timing of the fighting. According to Mr Käihkö, LURD fought in Monrovia three times in the summer of 2003 and these separate battles are locally called World Wars I, II and III. World War III is sometimes referred to as the Siege of Monrovia, which led to the end of civil war, when President Charles Taylor left the country and relinquished his power. According to the prosecution, this matches multiple witness testimonies, where witnesses describe looting in Waterside, Monrovia due to the terrible food scarcity caused by the fighting.

The prosecution presented Mr Käihkö's answers to other questions by the defence in his expert opinion, that relate to events in Lofa county, Liberia. Mr Käihkö stated that despite the lack of historical sources available, he tried to explain to the best of his abilities the events that led to the fighting in Lofa county. According to Mr Käihkö, LURD initially attacked Liberia from the Guinean side of the border in 1999, with fighting ensuing in Lofa county for a few years. Government forces, supported by the RUF from Sierra Leone, managed to occasionally push LURD back to the Guinean border. However, LURD eventually made its way south towards Monrovia in 2003.

During the first instance proceedings – and presented again at the Court of Appeal -, Mr Käihkö was asked by the prosecution if he was aware of any written historical sources of looting in Waterside during the three World Wars, to which Käihkö had answered negatively. He provided

his guess that these looting events might have increased in 2003 due to the fighting, as LURD had captured Freeport in Monrovia and the food storages located in the port. Mr Käihkö also noted that the historical accounts on the conflict are generally very poor, and that violence directed at the civilian population remains largely unrecorded. According to him, the current written historical accounts lack a large number of battles and violent incidents that might have taken place during the conflict all over the country.

The defense offers their view on the first expert report

After the prosecution, it was defense's turn to offer their understanding of Mr Käihkö's first expert report. It was originally the defense who had originally located the expert and drafted the main questions presented to him.

Much like the prosecution, the defense also focused on the timing of the battles in Monrovia as described by Mr Käihkö. According to the defense, before the expert was consulted, the prosecution had introduced the idea that LURD would have been fighting in Monrovia prior to 2003; however, the expert report clearly stated that these battles only took place in 2003. Mr. Käihkö also clarified that there were no anti-government troops fighting in Monrovia between 1999 and 2003 other than LURD. The defense also stated that witnesses changed the timing of the events in Monrovia in their testimonies after the expert report had been provided to the Court.

Both the prosecution and the defense presented similar aspects when it came to the expert report of the events in Lofa.

Defense presents Mr Käihkö's second expert report

After discussing Mr Käihkö's first expert report, the defense presented the second expert report and their thoughts on its content. According to the defense, a claim was made during the lower court proceedings that Mr Massaquoi could have travelled back and forth between Sierra Leone and Liberia during spring or summer 2003 with a governmental motorcade. Because of this claim, the defense decided to pose additional questions to Mr. Käihkö, who provided his answers in his second expert report. Mr Käihkö stated that it would have been highly unlikely that a governmental motorcade could have made it from Lofa (border with Sierra Leone) to Monrovia.

Prosecution discusses Käihkö's second expert report

According to the prosecution, the second report was requested because of some witnesses testified that they had travelled from Sierra Leone to Monrovia on cars in 2003. The prosecution noted that Mr Käihkö had not considered the possibility of using secondary routes in his report: he had only referred to the main roads going from Lofa county to Monrovia.

Expert witness Julia Korkman's expert report is presented

Prosecution presents their views of Korkman's report

After Mr Käihkö's report, the Court turned to Julia Korkman's expert report on the credibility of memories and witness testimonies, which had also been submitted during the lower court

proceedings. As both parties again wanted to refer to the report in their evidence, the prosecution began with their findings. According to the prosecution, the report was requested from Ms. Korkman when some of the witness testimonies had changed considerably if compared to what those witnesses had told the NBI during the pre-trial investigation.

The prosecution also explained that in addition to this report, dated May 2021, it had also requested a new report by an additional expert in the field of forensic psychology to be submitted during the Appeal proceedings, as Ms Korkman's report does not discuss in length the effects trauma has on memory.

In the report from 2021, Ms Korkman stated that when a person cannot remember everything, they are likely to supplement their memory with interpretations and additions. While discussions with others might disturb or alter one's personal memories, they can also refresh these memories in a manner that allows to remember things we had not previously remembered. According to the prosecution, this begs the question whether the new memories are true or false. Ms Korkman also mentioned that changes in witness testimony are often associated with dishonesty or unreliability, despite the many possible explanations for changes, such as forgetting certain things, the mixing of memories together and increased understanding of the events after they have happened. Also, external reasons might affect witness testimonies, such as stress, the way interrogations and interviews are conducted as well as the witness' personal understanding as to which aspects of the testimony are crucial and which are not.

Ms Korkman also raised the issue of different cultures and how they manage information. Individualistic cultures, such as Western cultures, perceive information and experiences in a more detailed and individual manner, while communal cultures, such as African cultures, might view experiences from the community's more general point-of-view.

Defence presents their views of Ms Korkman's report

The defense focused first on Ms Korkman's mention of witnesses discussing with others about the events under examination in court: the possibility of such discussions affecting witness' memories has to always be taken into account during court proceedings. Ms Korkman also mentioned that recalling a particular memory is always an interpretative action: according to the defence, this does not mean that a person would always intentionally lie or disrupt their memories, but it is a factor that has to be taken into account when evaluating the credibility of witnesses' memories. The defence mentioned that they do not wish to claim that the witnesses in the case would have been gathered together to intentionally lie in court, but they rather caution that memories might have been strongly affected throughout the years since the events took place.

The defence also emphasized the fact that Ms Korkman had mentioned the effect media coverage may have on witnesses: after the lower court's first trip to Liberia, the proceedings had been mentioned in international and Liberian press.

Expert witness Helinä Häkkänen's expert report is presented

The Prosecution presents Ms Häkkänen's expert report

According to the prosecution, the reason for requesting an additional expert report was that Ms Häkkänen had published an op-ed after the lower court's judgment, strongly criticising how the lower court handled the complex issue of witness memory and credibility – she was therefore contacted by the NBI in order to deliver a report. While both Ms Häkkänen and Ms Korkman are experts in forensic psychology, the prosecution stated that they did not intend to place the two reports in conflict with each other: rather, the prosecution saw these reports as complementary, as they both emphasize different aspects.

Ms Häkkänen's report states that Ms Korkman does not give a correct and sufficient picture of the aspects that need to be considered when evaluating oral evidence received by the Court. Ms Häkkänen for example criticised multiple scientific studies Ms Korkman had relied on for their lack of practical applicability or their lack of resemblance to the circumstances at hand in this trial. Ms Häkkänen also cited research that seemed to lead to completely opposite conclusions than those made by Ms Korkman on certain aspects.

In her report, Ms Häkkänen had also criticized the lower court's manner of evaluating witness testimonies and the changes that had occurred between the pre-trial investigation and lower court hearings. According to Ms Häkkänen, for example, international criminal proceedings at the International Criminal Court and in other international tribunals had demonstrated that changes in witness testimonies should not be considered as decreasing the credibility of the witnesses.

Ms Häkkänen also criticized a precedent set by the Finnish Supreme Court, which guides the evaluation of oral evidence in Finnish courts from a scientific perspective: according to her, this requires the witnesses to conform to a standard of uniformity in their testimonies which is close to impossible to achieve from the point-of-view of forensic psychology.

Defence discusses Ms Häkkänen's report

The defense began by saying that lawyers could not answer the claims made in the report, and therefore it had asked Ms Korkman to answer the claims made about her previous report. However, the defense also pointed out that Ms Häkkänen had conducted an evaluation of the evidence presented in lower court, despite not being in any position to do so, and that the lower court had not required the witnesses to be "perfect" as the prosecution had claimed in presenting Ms Häkkänen's report.

The defense criticised the fact that Ms Häkkänen had used her own professional clinical experience with strongly traumatized patients to draw conclusions about the effects of trauma in general, without giving the parties of the trial any chance to evaluate how strong her clinical experience might be. The defence also pointed out that some of the conclusions made by Ms Häkkänen were not supported by the actual witnesses in the case: for example, she had spent some time discussing the effects of sexual violence on witnesses, while according to the defence there is only one witness of such crimes in the present case, who additionally had not behaved the way Ms Häkkänen described. The defence also went over the specific claims Ms Häkkänen had made in her report witness by witness: it concluded by saying that both Ms Häkkänen and Ms Korkman should appear before the court, so that the parties may ask them both questions about their reports.

January 18, 2023 – Day 5: Gibril Massaquoi is heard

Day two of the second week of trial marked the first day of the hearing of the accused, Gibril Massaquoi.

The Defense was invited to question Massaquoi first. Its questioning followed a similar approach as that previously before the District Court. Massaquoi was first asked about his personal background and the origins of his membership in the RUF. He then went on to explain his activities in the RUF, first as a regular member, and later as the movement's spokesman and assistant to its leader, Foday Sankoh.

As the acts allegedly took place between 1999 and 2003, this period was covered extensively throughout Massaquoi's hearing. He was asked about different trips that he took to Liberia and other neighboring countries as the head of the RUF external delegation, as well as his activities in Sierra Leone after the end of the Civil War and the arrests of former RUF members. Questions relating to the SCSL safe house, in which Massaquoi was located, also played a large role.

January 18, 2023 [Finland] Day 5: Gibril Massaquoi is heard

The defendant Gibril Massaquoi is heard

The defense questions Gibril Massaquoi

Mr Massaquoi began by talking about his background, such as place and date of birth, his education and language skills. He was a teacher in Pujehun when the rebels arrived. He had managed to escape the area, but the RUF arrested him and forced him to work for them. Mr Massaquoi escaped again, but according to him, RUF arrested his mother and threatened to kill her, so he had to go back. Upon his return, Mr Massaquoi was arrested and put in a RUF prison, where he was tortured and beaten.

According to Mr Massaquoi, after his release from prison, he was taken to a RUF training centre in 1991 in Zimmi, Pujehun district, southern Sierra Leone. He spent a few weeks there and was then assigned to a unit. The RUF was pushed towards the Liberian border by the government in 1992, but the rebel group managed to come back to Sierra Leone. By that time, Mr Massaquoi had been assigned to unit, or a "target" as they were called within the RUF, called Alligator Forces. He worked as a target secretary, and then was made commander of the Alligator Forces by the end of 1993 and stayed there until early 1994, until he was transferred to Northern Sierra Leone to serve as a junior commander to one of Mr Foday's assistants. Mr Massaquoi stated that the Alligator unit participated in combat, but his role within that unit ended in 1994, and someone else replaced him.

Mr Massaquoi stayed in Northern Sierra Leone until late 1995, when he became ill. Mr Massaquoi was sent to Côte d'Ivoire for treatment in 1996, and stayed there until 1997. When the AFRC coup took place, Mr Massaquoi was in Nigeria with the leader of the RUF, Foday Sankoh. Mr Sankoh had appointed Mr Massaquoi as the RUF spokesman in early 1997. This role meant that he was in contact with the press, giving out RUF's opinion on various issues.

By the time he had become the RUF spokesman, he did not act as a commander of any troop or unit within the RUF, as he had become a part of the RUF's political division. He did not participate in combat after being assigned the position of a spokesman. According to Mr Massaquoi, he returned from Nigeria in August 1997 to deliver letters from Sankoh to various AFRC and RUF leaders. He was arrested by the AFRC in October 1997 for trying to overthrow the military government and remained in prison on Pademba Road until January 1999, when Freetown was attacked, and the prisoners were freed. After that, Mr Massaquoi went to Lunsar in Northern Sierra Leone, where his friend Superman was in control of the area. He also described the chain of command the RUF had when he was released, including the roles of Denis Mingo (aka Superman), Moris Kallon, Issa Sesay, and Sam Bockarie.

After going to to Lomé (prior that the peace agreement had been signed), Foday Sankoh sent him to Lunsar as a AFRC group – called the West Side Boys – had breached a ceasefire in force at the time. Here Mr Massaquoi was arrested again for some time, and the group did not disarm. After the signing of the Lomé peace accord, Foday Sankoh went to Freetown to serve as a vice president of Sierra Leone. He appointed Mr Massaquoi as his special assistant in late 1999, so he moved from Lunsar to Freetown to work for Sankoh. After listing people who were appointed at the National Unity team, he specified that after the ceasefire, people stopped fighting and dedicated themselves to politics. He was also Mr Massaquoi also described the people participating in the RUF's political and military wings at the time. In 1995, he had heard that the RUF had founded a political "wing", also called the RUF's external delegation. The wing continued to work until 1999, up to the signing of the Lomé peace accord. Mr Massaquoi also stated that he did not go to Liberia during the time leading up to the signing of the Lomé peace accord, as the internal fighting within the RUF prevented him from moving away from Makeni. He stated that he was close to Superman, and reiterated

Mr Massaquoi was asked to describe the effects the Lomé agreement had on the RUF. He stated that it changed the RUF's position, as they had agreed to disarm all fighters in exchange for political status in Sierra Leone. Foday Sankoh was appointed as a vice president in charge of development and minerals. Mr Massaquoi was asked to work as Sankoh's special assistant in Freetown. He participated in various meetings, such as those discussing disarmament, demobilisation of RUF troops and their rehabilitation. Mr Massaquoi worked in Sankoh's home office on Spur Road almost daily, from Monday to Saturday every week. Mr Massaquoi stated that sometimes Sankoh sent him to disarm some fighters in the field. He would bring them food to keep them calm. He repeated that he never went to Liberia in 1999. He also described his family at the time.

Mr Massaquoi was asked about the RUF's political and military wing and the internal conflict within the RUF. He said that the internal conflict was due to the disarmament. Sam Bockarie, who led the military wing, told his troops that they should not disarm and not listen to Sankoh's orders. Mr Massaquoi described that when he went to Eastern Sierra Leone to disarm some of the RUF troops, Sam Bockarie's did not want to be disarmed, so they could not get them all to lay down their weapons. He described his relationship with Sam Bockarie as very bad. He said that Sam Bockarie and others were responsible for his arrest in October 1997. Once out of the prison, Sam Bockarie demanded him to report to him, but Mr Massaquoi said that he could not do that. Since October 1999, Mr Bockarie had openly rebelled against Mr Sankoh and in December 1999, he publicly stated that Mr Sankoh's orders should not be followed. This led to Mr Sankoh sending Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon after him, so Mr Bockarie escaped to Liberia. After that, and until some talks in 2000, there was no cooperation between each internal faction and that some of

this friction caused the death of some RUF soldiers. Mr Massaquoi himself had told the BBC that if Bockarie wanted to return, he should apply to become a member of RUF again and start his career from scratch. Mr Massaquoi explained that Superman and himself were on one side of the internal division, and that Issa Sesay supported Mr Bockarie. He also added that Mr Bockarie had gone to Liberia in December 1999, and when asked again if he had gone with him, Mr Massaquoi replied "I didn't go, I couldn't have gone when we didn't get on."

In early 2000 he was still working as Mr Sankoh's special assistant. He went to meetings, took food to the countryside, and received diamonds from Issa Sesay that he took to Mr Sankoh in Freetown. In February 2000, Mr Sankoh, Mr Massaquoi and other people travelled to South Africa through Abidjan for two weeks. They went there to meet people and gain support for the RUF. Mr Massaquoi stated that did not participate in any military action at that time, he participated in disarmament meetings and tried to get the RUF military to lay down their weapons. In late 1999, early 2000 the RUF had begun to disarm, and that process continued into 2000.

Mr Massaquoi was asked about a TRC report which detailed the abduction of UN peacekeepers, which had been admitted into written evidence in the case.

Mr Massaquoi explained that they had learned that a group under Morris Kallon's command attacked UN peacekeepers who were establishing a DDR camp. Issa Sesay was sent by Mr Sankoh to "get the situation under control. But the situation was certainly not under control." A delegation – led by Isaac Mongo – was sent via a UN helicopter to see what had happed – they produced a report, but the defendant did not know what it said. This was not the only incident between UN peacekeeping troops and the RUF, there had been two or three other issues in different locations as well, which led to some of the peacekeepers to withdrew from the provinces and relocate to Freetown. Some had been taken hostage, and their equipment sieged. The situation had gotten worse since early May that year and "the situation got completely out of hand" – the government had then sent militia groups and civilian groups to attack Mr Sankoh's home on May 8, 2000 – Mr Massaquoi witnessed it himself.

He had witnessed that the peacekeepers were trying to keep the crowd form coming to Mr Sankoh's home – and whilst at the beginning they managed to keep things under control, they started shooting in the air when the crowd started tearing up phone lines and attacking farms. This only made the situation worse, and some armed men, which had been behind the civilians, started shooting at the house. Mr Sankoh's bodyguards also started shooting. Mr Massaquoi, Mr Sankoh, and a few others that were present managed to leave the property. They run into the Peninsula Mountains, as they were being shot at. They were trying to get back to RUF-held areas, and himself, Superman, Kenneth Macauley, and Ray managed to escape – but they could not find Foday Sankoh anymore. They had sent a team then to look for him but could not find him. The defendant ended up spending days in the jungle before going to Lunsar, and then Makeni.

He then spent June and July there, until he was summoned to a meeting in Kono. Mr Sankoh had been arrested and jailed until he was handed over to the Special Court for Sierra Leone, he had then died in prison in 2003. Because of Sankoh's arrest, Issa Sesay called up the meeting in Kono. All of the RUF commanders were called to the meeting, including Mr Massaquoi. Some of them were called commanders, but they did not have any military responsibilities. According to Mr Massaquoi, during this meeting Issa Sesay wanted to discuss the future of the peace process and the leadership of the RUF, since ECOMOG did not know, after Mr Sankoh's arrest, who to

communicate with for the peace process. Because of Mr Sesay's seniority, they had all agreed that he would act as an interim leader of the RUF. They also agreed on the creation of an external delegation, that would negotiate with ECOWAS on returning the peace process back on track. Mr Massaquoi was appointed as the head of the delegation. Moreover, Mr Sesay communicated to them that the abducted peacekeepers had been released.

The delegation was based into Monrovia. They could not travel immediately after the Kono meeting, as there were issues with the security en route in Lofa county, Liberia. The route was from Foya to Voinjama and there were rebels from Guinea in that area, threatening the RUF's travel. Issa Sesay arranged a troop to secure the route to Monrovia, where the delegation had a meeting with ECOWAS' officials in August. According to Mr Massaquoi, the reason why the delegation was placed in Monrovia was because Charles Taylor was acting as a guarantor of the peace arrangement with ECOWAS. The delegation met with Charles Taylor many times, as Mr Taylor was acting as a middle man between the RUF delegation and ECOWAS. Mr Massaquoi described the personal relations him and other RUF leaders had with Charles Taylor, saying that he never had any issues with him. He was once at a meeting where Mr Taylor returned some diamonds that belonged to Mr Bockarie to the RUF. According to Mr Massaquoi, other RUF members were staying in Liberia prior to the delegation's arrival to deal diamonds between Issa Sesay and Charles Taylor. Mr Massaquoi stated that there had been a "guest house" acting as a RUF base in Monrovia since 1999 kept by Defense 09. The relationship between Mr Sesay and Mr Taylor was cordial, and Mr Sesay would report to Mr Taylor whenever he asked.

During one meeting, Charles Taylor cautioned Mr Massaquoi to be careful when talking with the press and gave him a satellite phone for him to use during interviews. The satellite phone had a functionality that allowed the user to hide his true location from the other person.

The delegation travelled from Kono, Sierra Leone to Kailahun. Then they crossed the border to Liberia. They went to Foya and took the main route to Voinjama, where they met with RUF soldiers. Mr Massaquoi stated that he is not aware of any other roads, besides the "main road" that leads to Monrovia. He stated that the trip from Kailahun to Monrovia took two days in total, travelling nonstop, swapping drivers. When asked about the route, why it was chosen, Mr Massaquoi stated that Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon had taken the route previously and deemed it the safest route to Monrovia. Mr Massaquoi also stated that he always took this route when travelling between Sierra Leone and Monrovia. Occasionally they took a helicopter from Monrovia to Lofa and a car from Lofa to Sierra Leone.

Mr Massaquoi mentioned that the RUF guest house was in Sinkor, at the edge of Congo Town. It was generally known as the RUF guest house, it did not have a specific name. He was away from Sierra Leone until November 10, 2000, when the cease fire agreement was signed. He had not stayed in Liberia all of the time, he flew – alongside the delegation – to Mali for a few days, where he met the President of ECOWAS. This Mali trip took place in late September or early October 2000. Mr Massaquoi also participated in the Abuja peace negotiations with Defense 14, Abdul Razack and Jonathan Kposowa, who led the delegation. After the Abuja negotiations, the delegation returned to Monrovia and moved away from the RUF guest house to another apartment in Congo Town. After a few days, the delegation returned to Sierra Leone. They took the same land route as on their way in, from Monrovia to Voinjama and Kailahun. They stopped in Voinjama and spoke with the RUF commanders, such as Defense 7. Mr Massaquoi stated he did not witness any fighting in Lofa county at that time. The RUF was present in Lofa, as Issa Sesay had sent them to secure the route for the peace delegation's travels.

Mr Massaquoi also told that he spent some time in Sierra Leone and returned then to Monrovia to continue the peace process. When asked if these trips also had other purposes other than peace negotiations, Gibril Massaquoi stated that in general the peace process was the main topic – however, there were also other discussions, such as diamonds, meetings between Mr Sesay and Mr Taylor, and other political activities. Mr Massaquoi denied having personally carried diamonds but mentioned that he had been present when Issa Sesay had given diamonds to Ibrahim Balde, who in turn gave them to Charles Taylor. Mr Massaquoi also mentioned that he was once present when Issa Sesay handed some diamonds to a Lebanese group in exchange of some items, such as computers and office supplies.

Mr Massaquoi returned to Monrovia in December 2000, to discuss the future of the peace process. When asked if diamonds were involved in this trip, Gibril Massaquoi answered "yes, of course."

Going back to the satellite phone given to him by President Taylor in December 2000 Mr Massaquoi stated that neither him nor anyone else in the RUF had one prior to that – he had even written to the Nigerian President Olusegun Obasanjo asking for one, in order to properly communicate with ECOWAS. The phone that Mr Taylor gave to him was different than the ones he had used before, as you could "mute" your location by pressing an orange button. Mr Taylor had giving him instructions on how to use it, as he had not liked the way Mr Massaquoi had been giving interviews to the press. The reason for that was because "Liberia had problems with the RUF", and Mr Massaquoi giving daily interviews would create issues for Mr Taylor and his people, hence why he was given that satellite phone. Mr Massaquoi explained that the phone masked the location it was in. According to him, he was instructed only to use it in Liberia, so when he went to Sierra Leone, he didn't take it with him.

Mr Massaquoi returned to Sierra Leone before Christmas in 2000 and after a few days in Makeni, he made another trip to Monrovia in January 2001. He left Monrovia between January and February 2001 to return to Sierra Leone. The reason for his return was that General Opande, the commander of the UNAMSIL peacekeeping contingent in Sierra Leone, had become aware that Mr Massaquoi had not been disclosing his location: during a BBC interview, he had stated he was in Makeni, however, General Opande had been in Makeni at that time, and he knew that Mr Massaquoi was not there. He returned the satellite phone to Mr Taylor via Benjamin Yeaten.

Mr Massaquoi stated that he still returned to Monrovia with Issa Sesay and others to meet President Taylor. They discussed the political situation in Sierra Leone, and Issa Sesay also brought diamonds to President Taylor. After a while, Mr Massaquoi returned to Sierra Leone for meetings with the UN. He added that the language they used to communicate with Liberians was English.

He did not remember how long he stayed in Monrovia, but there wasn't much to do there: he then returned to Sierra Leone to have meetings with the UN. He knew that General Opande did not like the fact that Mr Massaquoi was in Liberia, even though he had said he was in Makeni. This trip to Liberia was meant to be his final one, but the RUF delegation returned to Monrovia in May 2001 for the Abuja II negotiations. Mr Massaquoi was part of this delegation and they travelled to Nigeria via Monrovia. The Abuja II agreement affected the RUF's situation in Sierra Leone, as the agreement stipulated that the RUF was allowed to participate in Sierra Leone's politics. The delegation returned from Abuja straight to Freetown and on the next day, they began negotiations between the UN, Sierra Leonean government and RUF on disarmament.

Mr Massaquoi stated that after the Abuja II negotiations in May, he visited Liberia only once in June 2001 to recover his personal belongings and a vehicle Issa Sesay had purchased for the delegation. This trip took two days at the very end of June, he returned during the first days of July to Sierra Leone. Mr Massaquoi stated that he was afraid for his own security, as Superman had been killed because President Taylor had learned that Superman went to the US embassy, plotting against him. As Superman had been Mr Massaquoi's friend in the RUF, Mr Massaquoi did not want to be associated with the alleged plan against President Taylor, especially since Superman had been his ally in the RUF internal fight between Issa Sesay and Sam Bockarie. Mr Massaquoi stated that he did not return to Monrovia after this June/July trip.

After his return in July 2001, Mr Massaquoi attended tripartite meetings with various UN organizations around Sierra Leone. According to him, he participated in all monthly tripartite meetings except for the last one, that was about the disarmament of fighters in Kailahun. He represented the RUF in these discussions with the Sierra Leone government and the UN. Mr Massaquoi stated that he lived in Makeni with his family during summer 2001: these included his girlfriend at the time Elizabeth Mansaray, his cousin Defense 10, his son, and various other family members.

Mr Massaquoi was asked about an interview he had given on 13 August 2001 about the release of RUF prisoners. He stated that he remembered the occasion, where the government had promised in a tripartite meeting in July to release many RUF prisoners who had been mostly detained in connection with the May 8 events in Freetown. The RUF was seeking the release of these prisoners, as they formed the RUF's "political core". According to Mr Massaquoi, the government gave the RUF a list of the released prisoners the day prior. Upon inspection of the list, they noticed that one third of the released prisoners were common criminals, not RUF members. BBC called Mr Massaquoi and he gave a statement on the issue. Mr Massaquoi stated that he gave the statement from Makeni via satellite phone. He also gave an interview to another program, he could not remember exactly, either Focus on Africa or Network Africa.

Mr Massaquoi was further asked about a piece of written evidence that claims he went to report a fraud to the police in July 2001. He had done so because some people had scammed money from Issa Sesay and Mr Massaquoi's car. Mr Massaquoi tracked them down and managed to retrieve his car, but not the money. He reported the matter to the police in Freetown and the police came to Makeni to interview him and some additional witnesses.

He also had to go to a police station in August 2001, as a police officer had approached him and others in Freetown looking for foreign currency and minerals and talking about bribes.

In Summer 2001, the RUF was proceeding with the disarmament and coming up with ways to enhance their political presence in Sierra Leone. Mr Massaquoi had issues with Issa Sesay, as the latter claimed that Mr Massaquoi had gone to Tongo Field's diamond mines and encouraged the workers to rebel against Issa Sesay. Mr Massaquoi stated that this was not true, as he had been there in a tripartite meeting, as they had agreed on the disarmament of the mines area. This circumstance, plus the scamming incident, led Mr Sesay to arrest him. Mr Massaquoi stated that he spent one night at Issa Sesay's place and on the next day, the UN came and released him and airlifted him to Freetown towards the end of October 2001.

After his evacuation to Freetown, Mr Massaquoi moved to eastern Freetown, his partner Elizabeth, his children, Defense 10, Kallon, and a month or two later (in 2002) they were joined

by Michael Bona, who came to study in the capital. Mr Massaquoi also explained that Elizabeth Mansaray and Defense 13 were two different persons: Defense 13 was his girlfriend in Monrovia, but that he then met later in Freetown. Elizabeth was "with him" since Makeni and came to live with him in Freetown. Mr Massaquoi told the court that he met with Defense 13 often after she had arrived in Freetown.

Before the evacuation, Mr Massaquoi was in Makeni working as the RUF's spokesman, giving statements to the media and writing letters – however, after the evacuation, he did not perform these tasks anymore. The RUF was becoming a political party.

The disarmament ended in December 2001, and in January 2002, the president of Sierra Leone declared that the war had ended. Mr Massaquoi also writing his book around that time and prepared a project with the National Council on Disarmament, the NCDDR [National Committee for Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration]. He had begun writing the book in 1999 in Lunsar and continued with the work in Freetown. He began writing the project for the NCDDR in 2002, around July.

The RUF was being transformed into a political party: they were registering and recruiting candidates for parliamentary or municipal elections. Mr Massaquoi himself even registered as a parliamentary candidate for the RUF party, called RUFP [Revolutionary United Front Party]. He also described the internal disagreements they had regarding the financing of the activities of the party: many people, including the defendant, got angry when they were told they needed money – "what happened to our mineral reserves"? Gibril Massaquoi "kicked a chair and walked out". Alongside him, Mike Lamin, Omrie Golley, and others left too. He could not remember exactly when this happened, around March or April – he withdrew his candidacy after that meeting and gave a copy of the letter he wrote to the Electoral Commission to the press. Before this, from late 2001 to 2002, he had been campaigning for a relative of his, Defense 18, in the paramount chief elections of the Gallinas chiefdom. He had assisted the campaign in various ways, such as holding meetings and acting as a secretary for the campaign.

When asked about his relationship with the "old" RUF leadership, the defense mentioned a car attack, which is part of the written evidence. Mr Massaquoi explained that the meeting stated earlier was the reason why he parted ways with RUFP, and that when he left the meeting, his vehicle got attacked by one of Mr Sesay's bodyguards. He reported it to the police.

Mr Massaquoi was asked about the NCDDR project. He stated that it was a fishing project he had pitched to the NCDDR in 2002, and it had been approved. The project consisted of the training of 100 former fighters, so that they could provide for themselves. Despite the approval in late 2002, the money had not arrived. He had been informed in early 2003 that he needed to open an account for the money to be transferred. He stated he opened the account and gave the NCDDR all the necessary details for the transfer to take place.

When asked, Mr Massaquoi reiterated his place of residence in summer 2002, and who he lived with. He specified that he also lived with his adopted daughter, who had been born in Liberia. He had sent Defense 21 to fetch her from Liberia when the situation there had worsened, in summer 2002. Mr Massaquoi also mentioned that Defense 13 came to Freetown in 2001 and that they have a son together, born in July 2001. Mr Massaquoi visited Defense 13 and their son frequently in Freetown. He also got engaged and married with Elizabeth Mansaray. He could not remember the exact date but stated that it was in July 2002. Mr Massaquoi also described the interviews he

gave to the Sierra Leonean Truth and Reconciliation Commission in July and the interviews he gave to the Special Court's Office of the Prosecutor (OTP). He stated that his co-operation with the OTP began via the Human Rights Watch and this organization's head for West Africa, Corinne Dufka. They met multiple times in 2001 and 2002. After a while, Mr Massaquoi agreed to meet with the Special Court's prosecutor and various other people, such as the Head Investigator Dr Alan White, and the Chief Prosecutor, David Crane.

Mr Massaquoi stated that his cooperation with the OTP worked well, and they signed a "conservation agreement" in October 2002. After the first meeting in July 2002, he gave them statements and notes throughout the year 2002 and into 2003: some of them written prior to the meetings, other he wrote in the meetings at the request of the OTP. According to Mr Massaquoi, he was always available when the OTP called him. After the agreement was signed, they would sometimes call him regularly to make sure "he was ok" and sometimes they "would take me out for a couple of drinks." The defense asked Mr Massaquoi to provide more information on the witness protection agreement that was submitted into written evidence. According to Mr Massaquoi's point of view, the agreement stated that he was to work for them – and if at any point he wanted to quit, he would have withdrawn from the contract. It also stated that as he was involved with this arrangement, he could not engage in any criminal activity. Additionally, he also received protection for his family: "Me and my family would be protected if I testified in court about RUFs […] I got that protection because I had spoken for the RUF, I had been a spokesperson for the RUF. I had been involved in the transportation of those diamonds."

Mr Massaquoi then described the manner in which he was taken into the Special Court's safe house. There had been a previous incident involving the money meant to purchase the RUFP's party house and there was uncertainty between him and Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon as to whether they would get the money back. Mr Massaquoi had agreed to meet with Mr Sesay and Mr Kallon and passed the information about the meeting to the OTP. As Mr Massaquoi went to the meeting to discuss the situation with the money, the OTP entered the building and arrested everyone there. Mr Massaquoi was taken to another room and released, while Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon were detained by the Special Court. The next night, Mr Massaquoi and his family were taken to the safe house handled by the Witness and Victim Support Unit (WVS), in Pipeline.

Mr Massaquoi stated that he entered the safe house on March 10, 2003, and stayed there until 2004 when they changed the location of the safe house. All of the security guards, with the exception of one, were staying overnight: one would be inside, and two were posted outside. Every evening and every morning they would take new shifts, the building was under constant surveillance. It was also was surrounded by a fence with barbed wire. For additional safety, so that the people at the safe house didn't have to leave to buy food, they also provided them with a cook, who bought groceries.

Mr Massaquoi stated that he could not leave the house freely: there was one entry way, which was always guarded, and he could only leave the house when the OTP would inform the WVS that they wanted to see him: these were the only times he went outside. According to Mr Massaquoi, the guards were keeping a logbook where they marked his presence at every shift. Mr Massaquoi stated that the security measures were so strict because of the safety of himself and his family: they were constantly threatened by former RUF fighters and AFRC members due to Mr Massaquoi's cooperation with the Special Court.

When asked whether this threat to him and his family's security ever materialised while they were in the safe house, Mr Massaquoi mentioned that in 2005, when they were at the third safe house, the building got attacked. As he was praying at night, his brother came to say that something was going on at the main door. As they entered the living room, they saw a glass door had been broken and they could hear two men fighting. The whole family went to a room and Mr Massaquoi called the head of WVS, Saleem Vahidy. After a while one of the security guards came to the backyard and called for the family. He entered the room and said that men with knives had attacked the house. They piled some furniture against the fence and escaped to the neighbouring property before the police arrived. After the attack, there were armed policemen at the safe house around the clock until they were relocated into another safe house.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked to describe how his co-operation with the OTP looked like while he was in the safe house. He said that the co-operation continued similarly to the previous one: the OTP would call the WVS and tell them that they needed to meet Mr Massaquoi. Then a guard was sent to the safe house to pick Mr Massaquoi up. OTP would also call Mr Massaquoi's personal cell phone and let him know that they would like to see him. Usually this was about an hour before the meeting was supposed to take place. One day Mr Massaquoi was also asked to identify the picture of Sam Bockarie's body from a computer, which he confirmed. Mr Massaquoi also stated that he was not allowed to travel, except for his daughter's funeral in Bo in 2005, which he did alongside security guards. When asked about 2003, Mr Massaquoi reiterated that besides going to the OTP and to the WVS office, neither him nor the security guards left the safe house.

Mr Massaquoi stated that he testified in the AFRC trial in 2005. He left the safe house for good in 2008 when himself and his family were relocated to Finland. Between 2003 and 2005 nobody was allowed to visit them in the safe house, but after his testimony in 2005, Mr Massaquoi agreed with Saleem Vahidy that his family members and relatives could visit them in the safe house, but the visits had to be approved by the WVS beforehand.

Mr Massaquoi also described how he sent various press releases to media in Sierra Leone when he was the RUF's spokesman. He was also asked to clarify some details about some of the press releases admitted as written evidence by the defense and to describe the number of interviews he gave on the phone, and if he had given an incorrect location to the journalists. Mr Massaquoi stated that only once he gave the incorrect location, which was to BBC, when General Opande found out that he was not in Sierra Leone. Mr Massaquoi was also asked about the letter he had written to the Nigerian President Obasanjo about satellite phones to the RUF. Mr Massaquoi explained that President Obasanjo had promised to deliver satellite phones to the RUF as they had had issues communicating: the satellite phones were meant for the RUF's use in Sierra Leone, as they only had one satellite phone in their headquarters in Makeni.

Mr Massaquoi stated that his radio name was Gaffa. After the Lomé peace process, Sankoh assigned new code names and Mr Massaquoi was called Wildfire. In addition to that, he had nicknames: "Gibou" was the main one, but also Major Wahid also called him "Postmaster" – however, he denied ever having a war name, just radio names: "My only name is Gibril Massaquoi".

He never witnesses violence in Liberia. The roads in Lofa were peaceful when the delegation was driving through the county. Mr Massaquoi never witnessed any violence or looting in Monrovia. He stated that he had no motive to fight in Liberia as he was in the country for peace: "When you're negotiating for peace, you can't be fighting in another country." He also stated that while

some individuals in the RUF might have opposed the peace process, they were reported to the UN.

Mr Massaquoi also explained a paper note found from the Vantaa prison where had been detained. He mentioned that he had written the note. He stated that he had written it because he was under the impression that his lawyer could not gather all the evidence to support his case. Everything in the note was true, it did not contain any lies. When asked why he had to refresh the witness' memory on certain things, Mr Massaquoi stated that it could have been possible that his lawyers at the time could not have been able to gather the evidence presented in the trial so far: he was under the impression that his lawyers were not up to the task. The Finnish head of investigation, Mr Thomas Elfgren, come to meet him in the prison and asked him why he had fired his lawyer and hired the current defense attorney. The head of investigation also said that the current defense lawyer had never won a case like this, and that Paula Sallinen is a "recent graduate, and does not know what she is doing."

The prosecution will question Mr Massaquoi the following day.

January 19, 2023 – Day 6: The prosecution questions Gibril Massaquoi

On the second day of the defendant's hearing, it was the Prosecution's turn to question Massaquoi. As a basic chronology of events had been mapped out the previous day by the Defence, the Prosecution focused a lot on the statements that Massaquoi that had given to his defence lawyers.

The Prosecutors sought to establish contradictions between these recent statements, and those that he gave earlier in 2002 and 2003 to the Special Court for Sierra Leone. In addition, these were contrasted to a version of events that Massaquoi described in the draft of his book, where he recounts a series of events occurring in both Sierra Leone and Liberia.

For example, the Prosecution questioned Massaquoi on the end of his involvement with RUF armed activities, his role in the RUF diamond trade, and the role of Charles Taylor during the Sierra Leone peace process. The details of the RUF external delegation and its travels to Liberia and other countries were also discussed at length.

In addition to these questions, the Court also watched a videotape of a statement of a witness who had since passed away. The last day of the second week, on Friday 20th, will mark the beginning of witness statements given in Finland, before the Court heads to Monrovia.

January 19, 2023 [Finland] Day 6: The prosecution questions Gibril Massaquoi

The defendant Gibril Massaquoi is heard

Prosecution questions Gibril Massaquoi

The prosecution began by asking whether it was true that he had not participated in combat within the RUF after his release from prison. Mr Massaquoi stated that this was partially correct, as, after his release from prison, there were a few internal fights within the RUF in which he had participated. He clarified that there were armed battles between the fighting parties within the RUF right before the ceasefire in May 1999, and that the attacks happened in March or April prior to that.

When asked if he took part of armed combat after that period, the defendant answered with "not really" and explained that the internal battles also involved fights with ECOMOG. He mentioned one incident near Lunsar, before the [Lomé] ceasefire [in May 1999] where ECOMOG attacked the RUF's positions with fighter jets and infantry. During an ambush, one journalist accompanying the ECOMOG forces died, and RUF troops picked up his equipment and brought it to Superman. Mr Massaquoi clarified that the ambush took place near Lunsar just before the ceasefire, and that this was the last time he participated in combat. The prosecution then asked about a statement that Mr Massaquoi had given to the OTP of the SCSL, whereby he had mentioned similar events in Lunsar and stated that they took place in 2000. Mr Massaquoi responded that it could not have taken place in 2000 as he was in Freetown working as Mr Sankoh's assistant at that time, and that area had been disarmed in December 2019. Mr Massaquoi stated that he was shooting the fighter jets in the air and the actual ambush took place elsewhere. When asked about the fact that in his statement to the OTP he does not mention the fighter jets, Mr Massaquoi stated that he was still talking about the same event. He

confirmed that he was armed and using arms during the ambush but that this was the last time he participated in armed combat, and he did so to defend himself. At another point in the hearing, the prosecution again asked Mr Massaquoi whether he was certain that this was the last time. He responded affirmatively, saying that the internal fights in 1999 were the last time that he took up arms.

The prosecution then turned to another portion of the OTP statement, where Mr Massaquoi had said that there was another attack in Lunsar in July 2000. Mr Massaquoi stated that he remembers the events, but they could not have taken place in 2000 as the area had already been disarmed by December 1999. He stated that the events might have actually taken place in 1999, before the ceasefire. The prosecution also asked about the part of the OTP statement where Mr Massaquoi stated that he was himself armed and leading a group of soldiers during that particular attack. Mr Massaquoi confirmed this, saying that this in fact took place during the internal RUF conflict. When asked, he specified that by "infight" he meant that it was "RUF versus RUF and then a group that was fighting the RUF, they had split from the AFRC. They called themselves the West Side Boys" and that this group also experienced infighting.

The prosecution pointed out to the fact that these last statements went against what Mr Massaquoi had previously claimed, which was that after he was released from prison, he no longer engaged in fighting. It further asked if after the second battle near Lunsar, Mr Massaquoi participated to any other fighting – or fighting plans. Mr Massaquoi explained that the infighting reached all the way to Makeni, and that he participated. He recalled how Mr Sankoh had sent him and Superman to check on Mr Sesay, as Mr Sankoh had been unable to reach him via radio for two days. As they were trying to reach Makeni, the car they were travelling on was attacked.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked about an operation in the Gola Forest. He stated that this was planned by President Taylor with some of the RUF members present in Liberia as an attempt to sabotage the peace process in Sierra Leone. Mr Massaquoi stated that he immediately informed the UN about the plans and disclosed this to the OTP. When asked about his role in the operation, Mr Massaquoi stated that he attended a meeting where it was disclosed that should the RUF fail in its objectives, another front should be opened into northeastern Sierra Leone, Gola Forest [from Liberia].

The prosecution raised that on one of his statements to the OTP he mentioned that he "told these code names to Issa", and asked whether he had participated in the concrete planning and information sharing about the operation. Mr Massaquoi stated that he did not participate in the planning, but was trying to have these code names applied. He also stated that the operation was being planned while the peace process was ongoing, and that he did not know why such an operation was being planned at the same time with the peace process as it was Charles Taylor's idea. According to Mr Massaquoi, the plan was to form a new rebel group in Sierra Leone to replace the RUF, as the RUF was in the middle of disarmament. He stated that the planning took place in 2000 or 2001, and that it must have originated from Charles Taylor and RUF members who, alongside Sam Bockarie, had escaped to Liberia in December 1999. Mr Massaquoi added "I can't tell you why they were there."

Mr Massaquoi was asked about the statement he had given the OTP about RUF soldiers in Liberia. He explained that these troops were not the ones who were meant to be in Gola Forest, but those who were sent by Issa Sesay (who oversaw the RUF's armed wing) to Liberia, in Lofa and Voinjama, to secure the road for the delegation in 2000. According to Mr Massaquoi, the

troops meant for the Gola Forest operation were meant to come from Monrovia, and they were a separate team from the ones sent to secure the roads in Lofa county in August/September 2000. When asked if this was the first time that Mr Sesay or RUF went to fight in Liberia, the defendant explained that to his knowledge, RUF had gone to Lofa in 1998, when he had been in prison. He mentioned that Karmo Kanneh, aka Eagle, had disclosed in his testimony the dates of 1998, 1999, and 2000. Mr Massaquoi could not say who had invited the RUF to Liberia on these previous occasions, but he guessed it could have been either President Taylor or Benjamin Yeaten.

Next, Mr Massaquoi was asked about his tasks as Foday Sankoh's assistant. He had told the defense that most of his tasks consisted of politics and participation in peace negotiations. He added that he was occasionally sent to the field to bring soldiers food, and to meet Issa Sesay to present reports to him.

Mr Massaquoi was questioned about whether he had ever carried diamonds. The prosecution wanted some clarifications as Mr Massaquoi had stated both that he had transported diamonds between Issa Sesay and Mr Sankoh, and then that he did not transport them personally himself. The defendant explained that he had not personally carried diamonds, but had been in a group that brought diamonds to Sankoh. When Sankoh was the vice president in charge of development and mineral resources, he was sent twice to Issa Sesay to bring diamonds to Mr Sankoh. The prosecution asked if he did, then, transport personally diamonds, Mr Massaquoi responded "yes, this was in Sierra Leone" and that the question he was asked about it the day prior, when questioned by the defense counsel was about Liberia and Charles Taylor. He then specified that on the two occasion he was sent to Mr Sesay, he used Mr Sankoh's commission car to go to Kono and back, but that he also had food and mining supplies with him.

Mr Massaquoi stated that he did not know what Sankoh did with the diamonds, and that there were some agreements with Sierra Leone's President Kabbah. Sometimes he was also sent to pick up Lebanese businessmen and take them to Sankoh's house to buy them, and when they were there they were "discussing buying diamonds, mining, things like that", and that these businessmen paid in cash – he reiterated that the then President of Sierra Leone was aware of these "deals with Lebanese and other foreigners". Mr Massaquoi also remembered bringing mining equipment and food supplies from the Lebanese men and bring them to Issa Sesay in Kono. He stated that he was not aware of what the RUF or Mr Sankoh were doing with the money obtained from the diamonds. Mr Massaquoi also mentioned that he and Sankoh went to South Africa in 2000 to discuss diamond mining with the Kramer Group company, who had also sent an agent to discuss plans with them prior to their arrival. Once in South Africa, Mr Sankoh, then vice President of Sierra Leone and in charge of development and mineral reserves, discussed mining and selling diamonds with them. The prosecution presented a statement that he had made to the OTP, where he seemed to discuss the RUF trading diamonds for ammunition in Liberia. He responded that the statement referred to a time when Sankoh was in prison, and that Sankoh did not purchase any ammunition once he had settled in Freetown.

Mr Massaquoi then spoke of discussions in Liberia between the RUF delegation and President Taylor regarding diamonds. He stated that the discussions between him and Mr Taylor had already been ongoing before the delegation arrived in Monrovia and continued while they were stationed there. According to him, before the peace process began, the RUF used diamonds to purchase arms and ammunition from Liberia. During the peace process, when Mr Massaquoi himself was in Liberia, the purchases related to "political supplies" such as computers, vehicles and satellite phones. Mr Massaquoi stated that he had been himself in a vehicle which, loaded

with arms and ammunition, was driven from Lofa county to Sierra Leone for Issa Sesay. He said to have not been aware of how these arms and ammunition had been paid for as this was between Issa Sesay and either President Taylor or Benjamin Yeaten: Mr Massaquoi had seen Issa Sesay give diamonds to Benjamin Yeaten, who took them to Charles Taylor. He stated to have not been aware of how Issa Sesay used the money he had received from the diamonds. The prosecution then cited a statement Mr Massaquoi had given to the OTP, where he had stated that Taylor gave the RUF arms and ammunition, possibly in exchange of diamonds. Mr Massaquoi stated that it was indeed possible that diamonds were exchanged for arms and ammunition, but such an arrangement would have been between Samil Ossailly, a Lebanese businessman, Ibrahim Bah and Issa Sesay. When he was asked how he could have become aware of such an arrangement, Mr Massaquoi stated that he met Ibrahim Bah at Hotel Boulevard after becoming the leader of the RUF delegation. Ibrahim Bah was not a part of the peace delegation, and Mr Massaquoi stated that he had informed the Special Court on all that he knew about him because he had nothing to hide.

Next, the prosecution asked Mr Massaquoi whether the discussions with President Taylor about the arms and ammunition took place at the same time as the peace process. Mr Massaquoi stated that he had not seen Charles Taylor giving arms and ammunition to Issa Sesay, but he had seen Benjamin Yeaten doing it did as the leader of the Special Security Service (SSS).

The prosecution then started questioning Mr Massaquoi on the external delegation he led – which he confirmed went to Monrovia in August 2000. He reiterated that before reaching Monrovia, the road had to be secured on the border between Sierra Leone and Lofa county. He stated that he was not sure if the road-clearing battles took place in July 2000, but that discussions that the road was blocked were held in July. Mr Massaquoi confirmed that he himself had travelled in August 2000. Prior to Mr Massaquoi's delegation arrival to Monrovia, Issa Sesay had already been talking to ECOWAS from Liberia.

Mr Massaquoi and the prosecution then discussed, in detail, the route that the delegation took on their first trip to Monrovia. Mr Massaquoi stated that this was the first time that he had travelled in Liberia, so he was not aware of all the towns and villages that they passed on the way. On the way to Monrovia, Mr Massaquoi saw RUF soldiers in Voinjama, but did not speak with them. On the way back he met with Defence 7 in Voinjama and spoke with him.

The prosecution referred to Ilmari Käihkö's expert report on the battles in Lofa county. In his report, Mr Käihkö describes how the last of LURD's three attacks took place in July 2000, with LURD occupying Voinjama from July to October 2000. Based on this, the prosecution asked Mr Massaquoi how it could have been possible for the delegation to travel via Voinjama to Monrovia in August 2000, as the city was under LURD occupation. Mr Massaquoi stated that he cannot speak for Mr Käihkö and repeated that he travelled to Monrovia via Voinjama, returning the same way after a few weeks.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked about a town called Vahun, in Liberia. He stated that he knows the place but that he could not remember whether he had visited nearby villages Yandehun or Kamatahun Hassala. He was asked whether it could have been possible that the delegation took another route southwards from Kailahun instead of taking the northern route through Voinjama. Mr Massaquoi repeated that they drove from Foya to Voinjama and he later became aware of these towns' names. To return to Sierra Leone, they took the same road back, and had met RUF

soldiers and Defense 7 in Voinjama. Sometime in 2001, he traveled by helicopter from Vahun to Monrovia.

According to Mr Massaquoi, he had met with Benjamin Yeaten in Lofa when the delegation was travelling by helicopter. He could not remember the first time he met with Benjamin Yeaten, but the meeting took place either in Kolahun, Vahun or some other village next to them. The prosecution referred to Mr Massaquoi's statement to the OTP, where he had mentioned having met with Yeaten in August 2000 in Vahun. He responded that he could not remember having met with Yeaten during the first delegation trip. Mr Massaquoi also repeated that he could not remember all the villages in Lofa county that he went through during the delegation trips.

According to Mr Massaquoi, when the delegation got to Monrovia, they discussed the peace process, diamonds, and Guinea. They discussed the fact that Guinea was used to attack Liberia by LURD, and Charles Taylor's idea that both RUF and Taylor's troops should pursue these attackers from Lofa. When asked how this fit together with the fact that President Taylor was supposed to be the guarantor of Sierra Leone's peace process, he stated that during the Lomé agreement, Taylor was truly trying to achieve peace in Sierra Leone, but that his actions during Abuja I and II seemed to have been aimed at sabotaging the peace process in Liberia. Mr Massaquoi stated that he had reported this to the UN at the time, and peace negotiations continued outside Liberia, in Mali, and both Abuja agreements were signed in Nigeria, but President Taylor did not sign them.

According to Mr Massaquoi, the RUF's road clearing operation in Lofa county was a success, as the delegation was able to get to Monrovia. Mr Massaquoi also mentioned the RUF's previous external delegation, which was in place before the one that he was leading, also required a road clearing operation.

Mr Massaquoi was asked about the last time he visited Liberia. He repeated his statement from the previous day, maintaining that he visited Liberia in June 2001 and arrived back in Sierra Leone in early July 2001. The prosecution referred to a statement that he had given to the OTP, where he seems to discuss being in Monrovia much later, on July 28, 2001. Mr Massaquoi stated that the statement relates to completely different events around the time he was in prison, in 1997.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked about his fishing project. In the draft of his book, he mentions that he never implemented any project with the NCDDR, but he had spoken of the fishing project before the court. He maintained what he had said the previous day, that the project had been approved, but it was never implemented as he could not receive the funding when he was placed in the Special Court safe house. He explained that the project had been approved by the NCDDR in late 2002 and that in early 2003, they had asked him to open an account to transfer the funds. However, once he had opened the account, the transfer could not be carried out, as his personal signature was required for the transfer. Due to him being in the safe house, he could not go to sign the documents necessary for the transfer.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked about the satellite phone that Charles Taylor had given him which had the ability to hide the user's location. He had written in his book that he used the functionality during "most interviews" in late 2000 and early 2001. Mr Massaquoi stated that the timing is correct and that he had potentially used this function during multiple interviews. He stated that he only remembers the one with the BBC, where General Opande found out that he was faking his location. Mr Massaquoi stated that the RUF acquired satellite phones from Samil Ossailly and various other businessmen via Issa Sesay and Ibrahim Bah. Mr Massaquoi was asked

about a statement to the OTP, where he mentions having received satellite phones and computers meant for the RUF paid for in diamonds. He confirmed that this indeed took place, that these supplies were bought from businessmen from the same group as Samil Ossailly.

Mr Massaquoi also stated that Defense 13 arrived in Freetown a few weeks or months after he had left her in Monrovia. He could not remember the exact month, but he stated that their son was born in July 2001. Mr Massaquoi stated that he believed that their son was born in Liberia, but Defense 13 had said in the lower court that she gave birth in Freetown.

Mr Massaquoi was also asked about written notes found in the prison guest room in Finland. He stated that he had not asked anyone to defend him in any other way than by testifying truthfully about the events that had taken place.

Mr Massaquoi also explained that the RUF was present in Foya, but he was not sure whether there was a building or separate headquarters for RUF use in Liberia. He also stated that he met Charles Taylor for the first time in Nigeria, most likely in 1997, and had seen him in 1991 at the Liberian border, when the RUF was pushed there by the government troops. He also stated that when Sam Bockarie left the RUF in December 1999, he immediately lost contact with all other RUF members. Mr Massaquoi said that when the delegation went to Liberia, some RUF members were in contact with Sam Bockarie and even Mr Massaquoi saw Bockarie once or twice in Liberia. When asked about a statement to the OTP, where he had mentioned that the RUF was in constant contact with Sam Bockarie, Mr Massaquoi stated that some members were in contact with Bockarie, but this was not in an official capacity.

The defense questions Mr Massaquoi

After the prosecution had completed their questions, the defense was invited to ask follow-up questions. Mr Massaquoi described a meeting the RUF delegation had with various ECOWAS leaders on the Monrovia Roberts International Airport. He also stated that he was well-known not only in Sierra Leone but also globally after becoming the RUF's spokesman and press secretary. He could not estimate how well-known he was in Liberia at the time, but he knew that his statements were reported in Liberian media. Mr Massaquoi also stated that when he was writing the notes found in the prison guest room, he was aware that there is a lot of video material available online.

Fayah Williams' recording is viewed

After Mr Massaquoi's hearing, the Court of Appeals watched the recording of Fayah Williams' testimony from the lower court, as the witness had died between the two trials. After the recording, the parties discussed a piece of written evidence relating to this witness's testimony.

January 20, 2023 – Day 7: The first witnesses heard

The final day of the January proceedings in Turku, Finland marked the beginning of witness statements.

The Court first heard an expert witness, who had provided two expert testimonies on the historical context of the Second Liberian Civil War during the District Court proceedings. After, it heard a Finnish policeman, who had been part of the investigation since the very beginning in 2018. This witness was asked about the details of the investigation in Liberia and the role of the GJRP and its employees. The Defense has strongly criticized the police investigation in this regard.

After these witness statements, the Court watched another videotape of a statement given to the District Court by a witness who had since passed away. On Monday 23, a similar videotape will also be watched, with the parties viewing it remotely online and the while the judges remain present in Turku.

The following week, the Court and the Parties will depart for Monrovia, Liberia for two months of witness statements. The first session in Monrovia is scheduled to begin on Monday, February 6.

January 20, 2023 [Finland] Day 7: The first witnesses heard

Expert witness Ilmari Käihkö is heard

The defense questions Ilmari Käihkö, associate professor of War Studies (Swedish Defence University)

The expert witness Ilmari Käihkö was heard remotely before the Turku Court of Appeals. The defense had named him as a witness, so they questioned him first. The defense began by asking Mr Käihkö to describe his expertise. Mr Käihkö stated that his expertise is mostly based on field research that he conducted between 2012 and 2016 on the Second Liberian Civil War. He spent 15 months in Liberia conducting ethnographic research with people who had participated in the war. Mr Käihkö stated that he focused on three organizations: Liberian government troops, LURD and one other rebel group fighting against Charles Taylor from the Ivory Coast. According to the witness, he is one of the top scholars on Liberia.

The defense pointed out that when the statement was requested from Mr Käihkö, most of the questions concerned events Monrovia in 2003, and asked if he had anything else to add. The witness answered in the negative and pointed out that not a lot of research had been done on the subject. The defense informed the expert that since his statement was issued, a few things had developed during the trial, and therefore they had to go through certain details again.

Mr Käihkö testified that the first battle in Monrovia took place in 1998. Three so-called World Wars – terms used to describe these fights – took place in 2003, from June to August. LURD attacked from the northern parts of the country and government troops defended Monrovia. According to Mr Käihkö, no other group attacked Monrovia between 1999 and 2003. He also testified that the “Siege of Monrovia” is a term used when discussing the World War III in 2003.

Mr Käihkö testified that he first arrived in Monrovia in 2012, and he was living very close to Waterside, visited the area almost daily and spoke regularly with local residents for many months. The starting point for his research was the textual sources available on the Second Liberian Civil War, namely a few NGO reports and news articles. He stated that the main part of his research was based on interviews, as he had interviewed hundreds of people throughout Liberia. About half of them were interviewed in Monrovia. He pointed out that there were challenges, as many people didn't remember dates.

Mr Käihkö was asked whether certain names were brought up by the interviewees. He mentioned that former soldiers tended to "have a very narrow perspective" and may only know their own commander. However, Benjamin Yeaten, Roland Duo, and various other senior commanders' names were mentioned by those he interviewed in Monrovia. He stated that the names Gibril Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel were not brought up by the people he interviewed. Mr Käihkö confirmed that in the areas adjacent to Waterside, such as Old Bridge and Iron Gate, there was no fighting before the LURD attack in 2003. He stated that LURD had fought their way to Monrovia during previous years, but in summer 2003 they had been able to reach the capital for the first time. The term "Siege of Monrovia" referring to the third attack, World War III, lasted for about a month. He stated that many people from Monrovia spoke of famine and lack of food related to this attack, as well as of LURD shelling the city with mortars. Food security was deteriorating, as LURD had managed to capture Freeport and was keeping food stored there. The government-controlled area started to run out of food, so people started to search for it outside their homes. Mr Käihkö stated that both sides responded to looters with violence. He mentioned one incident that he had heard about, where Benjamin Yeaten came to Waterside and ordered a heavy machine gun to shoot into a store. The store was close to Ecobank's office and the former Swedish Embassy. Mr Käihkö testified that this was not necessarily the only incident, but it had occurred where he was staying. He explained that this incident was probably related to the conflict, as the inhabitants of the city would not have been that likely to loot food during previous years.

According to Mr Käihkö, there are not many written sources available on battles in Lofa after 1999. Nobody has written down the events in smaller villages, and he estimated that many things occurred there that have not been recorded. Mr Käihkö reiterated his statements from the expert report: LURD attacked in 1999, and in 2000 or 2001 "Guinea pushed LURD into Liberia". For a long time, Foya was occupied by government troops that were supported by the RUF from Sierra Leone. Government forces resupplied their troops in Lofa with helicopters. Mr Käihkö was asked about LURD's occupation of Voinjama. He testified that ex-fighters used a term "three-month occupation" and that it was also widely reported in Liberia.

On RUF's activities in the region, Mr Käihkö testified that Charles Taylor tried to use the RUF as much as possible, especially in Lofa. From the 1990s, there was a trade route between the RUF and Charles Taylor. There were Sierra Leoneans living in Waterside, and some Sierra Leoneans participated in the attack in Ivory Coast. The largest number of Sierra Leoneans and RUF members fighting on Taylor's side were found in Lofa county. Mr Käihkö was under the impression that the RUF was fighting as an independent force, as there had been some incidents between the Liberians and the RUF. He mentioned that, for the most part, the names of Liberian commanders, such as Zigzag and Benjamin Yeaten, came up in his research.

Mr Käihkö was not aware of a particular RUF road-clearing operation in Lofa, but he said that a lot of battles were fought over the control of roads. During the World Wars, Lofa was under LURD

control. In his second expert report, Mr Käihkö had been asked about the possibility of a government convoy travelling through Lofa, from Monrovia to Kolahun, in the summer of 2003. He testified in court that this would have been highly unlikely, as the main roads and larger towns were under LURD control. However, he mentioned that other routes might have been possible, but this would have been considerably slower than taking the main roads. According to Käihkö, the situational awareness government troops had in 2003 must have been very poor. While they were using radios and satellite phones, outside these means, acquiring reconnaissance information would have been extremely difficult. On Bo Waterside, Mr Käihkö testified that the area was under constant fighting between April and May 2003. The town changed ownership multiple times during this time. LURD was in control of the city in August 2003 until the end of the war.

The prosecution questions Ilmari Käihkö

The prosecution began their questions by asking Mr Käihkö why people in Liberia may have difficulty in remembering dates and timing events. He answered that based on his personal speculation, the most important reason was the level of education. This is also affected by the fact that a difference in the perception of history. He described that in the West, history is perceived in a chronological manner, while in Liberia, especially in the countryside, history is perceived in a more cyclical manner. He noted, for example, that many people were able to remember the day of the week, but not the year that an event took place. Mr Käihkö also mentioned that war is a highly traumatic event and had lasted for a long time in Liberia. He stated that timing war events had not been a priority: none of the wartime events were ever handled or discussed in public so that everyone could participate in the discussion. Mr Käihkö described the Liberian Truth and Reconciliation Commission (TRC) as a “missed opportunity” and stated that it did not benefit ordinary Liberians or the international research community.

Mr Käihkö further testified that he visited Lofa county a few times in 2012 and 2013 for interviews. He also met people from Lofa in Monrovia. Most of his interviews were conducted in Voinjama and surrounding villages and he had done one trip to Kolahun. He explained that he mainly focused on LURD fighters, who had knowledge of their own activities but did not know of Sierra Leonean fighters. He also explained the term ‘convoy’, which he had used in his expert report, as “multiple vehicles moving as a cohesive unit”. As the roads and main towns were under LURD control, he deemed it highly unlikely that an enemy convoy could travel all the way via main roads. However, he could not rule this out for smaller roads.

Käihkö then went on to describe the vehicles used by Taylor’s forces. He explained that people of higher status may have had Jeeps or Range Rovers at their disposal. Support elements included “technicals”, *i.e.,* pickup trucks with anti-air machine guns mounted on them. Such vehicles could, in theory, use roads in worse condition than the main roads. He deduced this from the fact that regular cars would not be able to use such roads but that it was a known fact that Taylor’s forces used cars to get around. Taylor also used helicopters to fly to Foya, and used aerial weapons to bomb rebel positions.

Finally, the prosecution asked Mr Käihkö about the cell phone network in Liberia. He described “black spots” in network coverage, as cell phones mostly worked in and around Monrovia, and not in rural areas. He recalled that in 2003, most people did not use cell phones, and only higher-ranking fighters such as commanders used radios and satellite phones. He estimated that that the first cell phones arrived in Liberia after the year 2000.

The defense's final questions to Ilmari Käihkö

The defense had a few extra questions for Mr Käihkö. In his report, he had mentioned that his most important discussions had been with around 40 ex-fighters. Mr Käihkö testified that his main goal was to understand what had happened to them. He mentioned that not too many Liberians were keen on speaking about these issues, stating that "they themselves have committed war crimes and experienced trauma" and that he had to work on gaining their trust. He had mainly spoken to the ex-fighters about what they had done during the war. The defense asked what kind of ex-fighters he had interviewed, and he explained that he did not speak to the most senior commanders, but mostly held mid-level fighters, such as battalion commanders. Mr Käihkö recalled the names Zigzag or Benjamin Yeaten coming up but said that he would have to check his notes to see if any other names did. He confirmed, however, that the names Gibril Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel did not come up.

According to Mr Käihkö, war names were commonly used during the second civil war. He suggested that they were partially used for ritual purposes and partially for security reasons, to hide one's identity, and to obscure a person's role in the fighting. He also explained that fighters may resort to code names as they lived among civilians and may have fought within or against their own communities. According to Mr Käihkö, telling people both one's real name and war name was not too exceptional, as Benjamin Yeaten went by both his real name, and his code name '50'. The defense asked Mr Käihkö how this would apply to Sierra Leonean fighters in Liberia. He suggested that the fact that they have less ties to Liberia may impact the use of war names but stated that he would prefer not to speculate. Finally, Mr Käihkö suggested that more senior commanders would use their real names more than more lower level fighters.

Witness Mikael Vairio is heard

The defense questions Mikael Vairio

As a defense witness, Mr Vairio was questioned by the defense first. He first confirmed that he was the only person in the Finnish police (NBI) who had been involved in the investigation from the very beginning.

Next, he described the steps that led to the Finnish police investigating the case. He testified that firstly, the case came from Civitas Maxima via a Finnish law firm. When the head of investigation, Thomas Elfgren and another policeman received the case, they began the preliminary enquiry. Mr Vairio joined the investigation in 2018 and Gibril Massaquoi was named as a suspect. The acts to be investigated were based on material received from Civitas Maxima, who had conducted interviews in Liberia. Civitas Maxima sent the NBI seven interviews and relayed information about Mr Massaquoi's residence in Finland.

Next, Mr Vairio spoke of the police's first trip to Liberia in 2019. The objective of the first trip was not to search for and interview witnesses, but to see whether a preliminary investigation could take place. Therefore, the police went to various villages and introduced themselves as policemen from Finland interested in wartime events. People spoke about the war, but no official interviews were conducted. Mr Vairio could not say whether Mr Massaquoi's name came up on this first trip. Their visits to villages were based on the material sent by Civitas Maxima. On their second trip, the police re-interviewed all the persons previously interviewed by Civitas Maxima. These interviews made it clear to the police that they needed to conduct their own additional

investigations, as there were some contradictions between the original interviews conducted by Civitas Maxima and the following interviews conducted by Finnish police. The NBI also looked for written evidence. They went to the United States to find newspapers from the years of the civil war, and accessed the Liberian TRC report from there. Mr Vairio stated that Mr Massaquoi's name did not come up in the newspaper articles in a way that "supported the suspicion" against him.

Mr Vairio was asked about the fact that the statements from the TRC's report relating to Kamatahun Hassala often mention names Zigzag Marzah and Stanley. He testified that this did not change the investigation, as Zigzag Marzah lives in Liberia. The NBI had met with him, but he had demanded large sums of money, so was this was not pursued further. Mr Vairio stated that he understood that the NBI did not have the jurisdiction to investigate the acts of people living in Liberia and there was no specific agreement between them and the Liberian authorities that nobody besides Massaquoi would be investigated.

According to Mr Vairio, the NBI found out, through the material received from Civitas Maxima, that Hassan Bility had a claim as a victim in the case. However, the head of investigations decided not to re-interview Background 1, as the NBI thought that he may have a conflict of interest in the case. The NBI met with Background 1, who also said that it would be best if he was not heard as a witness due to his role in the organization connected to the case. Mr Vairio explained that when the police went through material from the Special Court case of Charles Taylor in 2009, they discovered that Background 1 was the first person to connect the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel. He could not recall whether they had got this information from the material provided by Civitas Maxima. When asked if the investigation team had discussed how the defense counsel would have reacted about the fact that Hassan Bility was the first person to connect Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel, and if he was personally surprised that the name Angel Gabriel did not appear on any official documents before Bility's testimony, the witness answered that they had not discussed it, but they were mostly questioning whether Mr Bility should be heard at all during the investigation, and that many things had been considered at the time. Mr Vairio was asked whether the police worked in co-operation with Civitas Maxima and the GJRP. He said that they did, and that they had also been in contact with the authorities of different countries, such as Homeland Security in the US.

Next, Mr Vairio was asked about Employee 1, and how he had come to be chosen as the main facilitator for the Finnish police in Liberia. Mr Vairio explained that during the first trip, GJRP offered one of their other employees to help with the practical arrangements, as it quickly became clear that "the operation would not work without on-site helpers". However, the first person seemed too inexperienced to them. Later, in Lofa, the NBI met with Employee 1, who was there with another investigative team. The NBI asked for Employee 1's help as well. Mr Vairio described the arrangements made between Civitas Maxima, GJRP and the facilitators: he would contact Civitas Maxima and ask for the time period for which the NBI would need Employee 1's help. During this time, Employee 1 would not be on GJRP's payroll. Then, Civitas Maxima would pass this request on to GJRP. When employed with the NBI, Employee 1 would have a contract with the Finnish police and would sign a non-disclosure agreement. He could not work for GJRP at the same time as he worked for the NBI.

Mr Vairio was then asked about the co-operation between the GJRP and the Finnish police. He explained that the main co-operation was the fact that Employee 1, and previously, the other facilitator, were working with them. Employee 1 had been sent to find Zigzag Marzah.

The defense asked about Employee 1's role during the second police trip to Liberia. According to Mr Vairio, Employee 1 had been on the ground conducting investigations before the police had done their first interviews. Therefore, he arranged contact with the seven people whose interviews Civitas Maxima had passed on to the police. In addition, when the Finnish police went to the villages to look for witnesses, Employee 1 came with them. Mr Vairio provided an example of when Employee 1's expertise helped the NBI: based on stories about a house being burned with people inside in Kamatahun, they had gone to Kamatahun Tahamba. However, it quickly became clear that they had gone to the wrong place. Once they realized that there was a village called Kamatahun Hassala nearby, they sent Employee 1 there to confirm that this was in fact the place that the witnesses had been speaking of. This allowed the NBI then to conduct their own visit to the village and to find witnesses there. In Kamatahun Hassala, Employee 1 was given instructions to find out whether people had been burned in a house in that village and to write down what people said about it. He passed this information, with names and contact details, written on paper, to the police. Mr Vairio could not remember whether the name Gibril Massaquoi was mentioned. At this point, Employee 1 was not instructed to ask about RUF soldiers, the clothing of the perpetrator or the commanders present on scene. According to Mr Vairio, Employee 1 must have been instructed to ask about these things at some point during the investigation. Mr Vairio repeated that when they went to villages to introduce themselves, they didn't tell people what they were there for. He stated that they "just said in general that we were interested in the events of the war".

Next, there was a discussion as to the timings of the different missions conducted by Employee 1 and the NBI. Mr Vairio stated between the NBI's first and second trip, they had not sent Employee 1 on any missions. The NBI only found out after their April trip in 2019 about Kamatahun Hassala, and then sent Employee 1 there. He stated that Employee 1 went to Kamatahun Hassala before the NBI's third trip. However, the defense raised that Employee 1 had written that he had visited some villages in Lofa on the same dates of the NBI's April trip, to which Mr Vairio responded that he may have remembered the dates wrong. He then stated that Employee 1 might have had instructions on what to ask the people being interviewed, as the NBI was only interested in Sierra Leoneans and the RUF. The Court examined Employee 1's notebook, where he had written instructions mentioning things such as burnings in houses, killings, diamonds, mass graves, churches, generals and "Kamatahun house". There was also a list of the witnesses who had answered these questions and mentioned "Kamatahun Hassala". Mr Vairio confirmed that it was possible that these kinds of instructions were given to Employee 1. Here, the defense pointed out that the NBI had written, in the pre-trial investigation report, that they themselves had interviewed all the witnesses, which would counter the fact that the questions had already been asked by Employee 1 before the police.

Mr Vairio was also asked about a village called Kiantahun. He testified that during the third trip, the police were around Kamatahun. He couldn't remember where the information came from, but they went to Kiantahun with the lead investigator Elfgren. They went to the village and said that they were interested in "wartime issues". They were told to return a few days later, and were then able to speak to the villagers. Mr Vairio stated that he did not know whether Employee 1 had been to Kiantahun. Then the defense referred to the pre-trial investigation report and Employee 1's notebook. These documents suggested that Employee 1 had in fact contacted these witnesses before the NBI. There was a lengthy discussion as to whether this was so, and the notebook was displayed to the court. Finally, the defense pointed out that Employee 1 had told the lower court on his own accord that he went to the village, which Mr Vairio could not explain.

According to Mr Vairio, the NBI did not notice that the witnesses became aware of who or what was being investigated until the end part of the investigation, when it had become public. He could not say whether they had noticed this earlier during the investigation. However, he stated that a lot of the ex-fighters who were interviewed were found through other ex-fighters, so they might have known between them. He testified that a few witnesses might have said that Employee 1 told them that the investigation was about Gibril Massaquoi, despite him having been instructed not to mention the name. However, Mr Vairio stated that this did not lead to any action by the NBI.

Next, the images that were used for photo identification were discussed. According to Mr Vairio, the NBI did not deem it necessary to include photos of Zigzag Marzah or Stanley. Vairio was under the impression that the rest of the photographs used were of random people. The NBI did not pay attention to the change in the rate of correct photo identifications.

The court then discussed Employee 1's work in Monrovia. Mr Vairio testified that his main task was to contact the witnesses, arrange their transportation and guide them to their accommodation. The defense raised that there were days recorded where Employee 1 was working with for the Finnish police, but he was not being paid by the NBI, to which Mr Vairio responded that there may have been days when the police were back in Finland and asked Employee 1 to do something for them. He also stated that it was agreed that during his employment with the NBI, he would not work for or be in contact with the GJRP in any way. His salary was the same as that of his regular employment. The lower court had increased the salary at some point, but Mr Vairio was not aware of who had authorized this.

The prosecution questions Mikael Vairio

The prosecution began by asking about Employee 1's notebook. Mr Vairio was not aware of where he had received the actual notebook from, but the NBI did provide him with office supplies. Mr Vairio stated that Employee 1 might not have wanted to have his notebook displayed before the court. He explained that he understood why, as it came about suddenly. According to Mr Vairio, they were never any doubts as to the integrity of Employee 1 or GJRP. The details of the investigation were never discussed with Hassan Bility, but Mr Vairio stated that they may have discussed the investigation on a general level. He confirmed that the NBI never told Employee 1 what the witnesses had said in their interviews, and that he never knew about the contents of the interviews. According to Mr Vairio, Employee 1 was never given the pre-trial investigation report and to his knowledge, Employee 1 had never requested these documents from the NBI registrar. He could not say how Employee 1 could have come to know what the witnesses had said. According to Mr Vairio, the police had a good impression of Employee 1. They were able to communicate with him easily and had received training in The Hague. According to Mr Vairio, Employee 1 never asked about the results of the investigation, and he "understood his role". Mr Vairio was under the impression that Employee 1 did not find out which witnesses were for the defense and which ones were for the prosecution. Employee 1 had never asked, and Mr Vairio was under the impression that he had handled all the witnesses in a similar manner.

The defense's final questions to Mikael Vairio

After the prosecution, the defense had a few more questions about Employee 1's notebook, and the fact that he had not wanted to disclose it. Mr Vairio stated that he could not remember when this was but recalled that Employee 1 believed that there were things in the notebook not related

to the case with the Finnish police. Mr Vairio could not explain why all the witnesses contacted by Employee 1 spoke of Gibril Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel, he speculated that he may have selected only those that talked about the RUF and Sierra Leoneans. Mr Vairio was not aware whether Civitas Maxima had requested the investigation documents from the NBI registrar.

Civilian 24's recording is viewed

For the final part of the hearing, the court watched the recording of Civilian 24's testimony before the lower court, as the witness had passed away before the appeals proceedings.

February 6, 2023 – Day 8: The proceedings begin in Monrovia

The eighth day of the trial marked the beginning of the appeal proceedings in Monrovia, Liberia. The previous week, the Appeals Court and the parties had visited some locations relevant for the case in Lofa County and Monrovia.

The day was supposed to be dedicated to a particular witness statement, but the witness had informed the Court that they were not able to come to Monrovia to testify. This led to a discussion between the Court and the parties on how to deal with such situations in the future. They discussed whether to view a videotape of the statement previously given by this witness during the District Court phase in February 2021. The Court decided that in this case, there was no obstacle under Finnish law to examine this particular witness statement from the videotape recorded during their previous testimony.

The rest of the day was used to view the videotape in question.

February 6, 2023 [Liberia] Day 8: The proceedings begin in Monrovia

The eighth day of the appeals hearings marked the beginning of the hearings in Monrovia, Liberia. The previous week, the Appeals Court had examined some geographical locations in Lofa County and Monrovia, Liberia.

Witness Civilian 7's recorded testimony is viewed

The first witness scheduled for the hearings in Monrovia was Civilian 7. However, the witness notified the Court that they were not willing to attend the session as they were in Cote d'Ivoire at the time of the hearing and not able to travel to Monrovia.

This sparked a discussion in Court on using Civilian 7's recorded witness testimony from the District Court as a replacement. Under Finnish law, the use of earlier recorded testimonies in appeals proceedings is only provided for when a witness is clearly unable, not just unwilling, to appear before the court. In Finland, if the witness is unwilling to attend, the police would escort them to court. However, this was not an option here, as Finnish authorities have no jurisdiction in Liberia or Cote d'Ivoire.

The prosecution and defense provided their views on such situations from both legal and practical points of view. The prosecution's opinion was that the Court could not use the recordings from District Court, as Finnish law did not provide for such an option. The defense agreed with the prosecution on the legal point, but all parties involved discussed at length the practical implications of unforeseen changes to the schedule and how it might affect the evidence received in the case in general.

In the end, the prosecution and defense indicated that they wished the Court of Appeal to decide how the proceedings should react to similar situations in the future. After a brief deliberation, the Court delivered a decision, whereby it allowed the use of previously recorded witness testimonies in situations where it was deemed practically impossible to have the witness appear before the Court of Appeal in Liberia within the specified schedule. This decision was justified by the special circumstances present of this case in Liberia and the fact that Mr Massaquoi's trial

had already lasted multiple years. According to the Court of Appeal, the probability of Civilian 7's attendance was taken into account, and it was held that the procedure could not be delayed just to attempt to get every single witness to appear personally before the Court.

After the decision was announced to the parties, the Court proceeded to watch the recording of Civilian 7's previous testimony before the District Court.

February 7, 2023 – Day 9: The first witness is heard

The second day of the proceedings in Monrovia saw the Turku Appeals Court hear its first witness in person. The witness testified about his wartime experiences during the Second Liberian Civil War in Waterside, Monrovia.

As with the District Court proceedings, identifying the precise timing of the events proved difficult for both the witness and the Court to establish. The Defense of Mr Massaquoi cited the witness' previous statements during the pre-trial investigation as well as the District Court proceedings, where he seemed to have placed the events at different years each time. The witness stated that the passing of time has made this difficult to remember and maintained that he always tried to remember the specific date of the events to his best ability.

Tomorrow, the Court of Appeals is scheduled to hear three more witnesses.

February 7, 2023 [Liberia] Day 9: The first witness is heard

Civilian 31 is heard

The Prosecution questions Civilian 31

Civilian 31 testified about some events during the war in Monrovia, where he was living. In 2002, he and his wife heard that a biscuit store had been broken into in Waterside, so they went there to get food. Once there. Civilian 31, his wife and other people were arrested by soldiers, who took them to a base under a bridge. Civilian 31 testified seeing a man named Gabriel Massaquoi, who shot two young men with a pistol. Civilian 31 mentioned that another person had shouted out that the soldiers had killed "T", but he didn't know the names of the young men.

According to Civilian 31, after Gabriel Massaquoi had killed the men, he said that he was Angel Gabriel, and told them to tell God about his name. Gabriel Massaquoi also gave an order to shoot anybody trying to escape. According to Civilian 31, the bodyguards of Gabriel Massaquoi took some women to a house. Then Gabriel Massaquoi repeated the order to shoot anyone trying to escape and his bodyguards shot four persons.

Civilian 31 told the Court that the troops of Charles Taylor arrived at the scene and started shouting, asking why the soldiers were killing civilians. As the Liberian troops were approaching, Civilian 31 and others managed to run away; however, one of the bodyguards opened fire and Civilian 31's wife fell to the ground. He later explained that he saw his wife being hit in the back while running away. Civilian 31 left her there and escaped the scene.

Civilian 31 further explained that the bridge under which they were taken was the Old Bridge in Waterside. The biscuit store was on the left side when coming from the American embassy, not far from the bridge. The base under the bridge, where Civilian 31 and the others were taken to was on the right side of the bridge when coming from the American embassy. According to Civilian 31, the location of the base is currently being developed, but the location is still there.

Civilian 31 described Gabriel Massaquoi having a Sierra Leonean accent, while his soldiers were speaking Krio. They were all fighting on Charles Taylor's side in the war. Civilian 31 explained that

the reason why Gabriel Massaquoi killed the young men under the bridge was that he was saying they were spies carrying information for ULIMO. He also mentioned that the war that was ongoing in Monrovia during the events was called World War I, which lasted 3 to 4 weeks. After 1 or 2 months, it would start again and it was called World War II, and after one final break the fighting resumed, and it was called World War III. According to Civilian 31, Charles Taylor left the country and was removed from power not long after the end of World War III.

Civilian 31 also mentioned seeing a person in Waterside being stabbed in their leg with a bayonet by the bodyguards. He then mentioned he later saw the wound in this person's right foot.

Defense questions Civilian 31

The defense began questioning Civilian 31 by asking about the base he had described. Civilian 31 explained that the base was not a large building, it was a makeshift building with corrugated iron walls.

When asked about the biscuit store, he said that there is another store located in the same place now, but he could not remember its current name. He also mentioned that he went there in a group to pick up some biscuits with his wife and some other people, whom he did not know personally.

Civilian 31 was further asked if he remembers what he had told to the lower court in 2021 about the biscuit store. He had told them that he went there with his wife, and that they were arrested. According to lower court's judgment, however, Civilian 31 had stated that his wife had gone to the biscuit store without Civilian 31, looking for food. The witness answered that per his own understanding, he had described the event the same way in both instances. The Defense cited the pre-trial investigation report, which confirmed the version of lower court's judgement. Civilian 31 explained that his brain is not a computer and that he might have remembered additional things after having discussed the events with the Finnish police. Civilian 31 reiterated that he went to the biscuit store with his wife and some other people after having heard that the store was open.

Civilian 31 was also asked about the names of the two young men he had mentioned being killed by Gabriel Massaquoi and why he had not mentioned the name of "T" to the Finnish police. Civilian 31 stated that he was not asked about that by the police, and he had remembered "T's" name only after the initial interview. The defense cited the pre-trial investigation report, where the Finnish police had written that Civilian 31 was asked "Do you know the two boys" and he had answered: "No, I do not know anybody". Civilian 31 answered this by saying that he did not know the names of these boys when the events took place.

When asked about the commander present and his war name, Civilian 31 said he did not know anybody else's name at the scene: the commander was the only one who presented himself. According to Civilian 31, the commander stood up and told everyone that his name was Angel Gabriel Massaquoi, and that people should tell his name to God. He had camouflage trousers, a white t-shirt, and a pistol.

Civilian 31 was also asked about the timing of the events in Waterside, and he said that these took place in 2002. The Defense asked about his previous statements, as he had told in the lower court that the year was 2000. Civilian 31 answered that the events took place either in 2001 or

early 2002. The Defense asked him if he remembers what he told the police about the same matter and Civilian 31 said he had told them 2000. His pre-trial investigation was cited, where he had been recorded saying that the year was 2003. The Defense also pointed out that during his testimony in lower court, where he had been asked about the different dates, he had explained that whilst he mentioned 2003 to the police, the actual date was 2000. Civilian 31 explained to the Court that his brain is not a computer and that he might remember additional things only after the initial interview. He said that after every instance when he had been asked about dates, he has had time to think about the events and he has remembered more and more.

Finally, the defense asked Civilian 31 how the Finnish police had found out he might have relevant information for the case. Civilian 31 mentioned that he had met his friends after the war, and they had discussed the events in Waterside. A man asked them what they were talking about and said that people were coming to Liberia to discuss these issues. This man took Civilian 31's phone number and he was later called by the Finnish police. Civilian 31 also mentioned that he had not discussed these events with anyone prior to meeting his friends. When prompted, Civilian 31 shared that he had also discussed these events with the man he had seen wounded in Waterside, as they were from the same area. The man was also there when Civilian 31 was discussing the events with his friends, and he was asked for his phone number. Civilian 31 never found out the identity of the person that asked for his number, but he had told the lower court that his name was [Employee 2]. According to Civilian 31, the others present revealed his name after [Employee 2] had left.

Defense asked if Civilian 31 had given his number to [Employee 2], which Civilian 31 confirmed. The Finnish police had, however, written down that Civilian 31 was reached via someone else. and Civilian 31 said that this would be possible.

Civilian 31 also confirmed that the events where his wife died took place during World War II.

February 8, 2023 – Day 10: Three more witnesses heard

The third day of the proceedings in Monrovia saw the Court hear three witnesses recounting their wartime experiences in Waterside, Monrovia, where Gibril Massaquoi allegedly committed some of the crimes he is being charged with.

The incident discussed by the witnesses relates to the difficult food situation in Monrovia during the war and the looting of a biscuit store in Waterside. The witnesses told the Court that they met a man calling himself Angel Gabriel, or Gabriel Massaquoi, who was commanding the government forces. They stated that man ordered the killings of civilians in Waterside and near the Old Bridge in Monrovia. The Prosecution maintains that this man is the defendant, Gibril Massaquoi, whilst the Defense rejects any such claims.

The Court will not be in session tomorrow and will resume the hearings on Friday, February 10.

February 8, 2023 [Liberia] Day 10: Three more witnesses heard

Civilian 37 is heard

Prosecution questions Civilian 37

Civilian 37 testified that she lived in Monrovia during the war, between 2001 and 2003. The prosecution asked her to describe the situation in Monrovia, and when she was arrested by soldiers. Civilian 37 explained that fighting was going on in Monrovia, but she was still doing business. She and her friends used to sell biscuits, and then they saw a biscuit store that had been broken into. When they went there, soldiers came and arrested Civilian 37, her friends and some other people present. They were taken under a bridge, where they were beaten. A soldier tried to rape Civilian 37's sister, who resisted: the witness saw this herself. Gabriel Massaquoi ordered that Civilian 37's sister should be killed, and she was shot. A group of soldiers arrived on the scene and started shooting, that's when everyone managed to escape.

She located the store on the Old Bridge towards West point, on the right side of the road. Soldiers were selling biscuits from the store, when some other soldiers, Massaquoi's group, came. Civilian 37 confirmed that she saw Massaquoi at the store and mentioned that she had seen this Massaquoi person before, as she had been doing business near the area where the soldiers were located.

The people arrested, including Civilian 37 and her friends, were taken under the bridge to a building the soldiers called their office. Massaquoi was also there. She heard the name from his soldiers, who called him Angel Chief Massaquoi. He was the leader of the soldiers. According to Civilian 37, he had a Sierra Leonean accent, a white t-shirt and a beret. He said that he was an angel and that he could send people to God.

Civilian 37 also mentioned that she still has bruises from the beating, which were photographed by the Finnish police were viewed in Court by the judges and lawyers.

When asked about the general situation in Monrovia, Civilian 37 explained that the food situation was dire at the time, and that it was difficult to get food. Civilian 37 also mentioned that after these events she described, the fighting did not last for a long time.

Defense questions Civilian 37

Asked by the defense whether there still is a store in the same location, Civilian 37 said that there is a shop indeed, but they do not sell biscuits – rather sandals and footwear. The biscuit store was 5 to 10 minutes' walk away from the bridge. The soldiers present at the store were Liberian, but Massaquoi had a Sierra Leonean accent. According to her, Massaquoi said that his name was Angel Gabriel and that he could send people to God, but his soldiers called him Chief Massaquoi.

Citing the lower court's judgment, the defense reminded that Civilian 37 had said that the commander introduced himself by saying that people call him Gabriel Massaquoi, but his name is Angel and that he could send people to God, whereas in this instance, she had said that she heard the name from his soldiers, not from him personally. Civilian 37 explained that she had said the same thing every time. There was a brief discussion about the various ways her testimony had been recorded in the lower court.

Civilian 37 further testified that it was difficult for her to remember, but that there was some shooting at the biscuit store when the soldiers arrived. She also said that she could not remember whether somebody died at the store. The defense cited Civilian 37's testimony from the pre-trial investigation report, where she had been recorded saying that those who did not want to leave with the soldiers, were shot inside the store. She answered that she had indeed mentioned in Appeals Court that there was shooting going on, but she was not sure whether somebody had died.

Civilian 37 explained that she had met Massaquoi once before the events at the biscuit store. This was at New Bridge not too long before her sister was killed; she saw him in a vehicle. Defense cited Civilian 37's police interview again, where she had been recorded saying that the meeting at the biscuit store was the only time she had met Massaquoi. Civilian 37 said that this is true, as she only *saw* him in a vehicle the first time, and she *met* him for the first time at the biscuit store.

Defense also asked whether Civilian 37 had spoken about Massaquoi with anyone before she met with Finnish police in December 2019. She said that she had told people about her scars. She also mentioned that other people had spoken about Massaquoi, as he had a particular stigma. According to Civilian 37, she had spoken about Massaquoi in the past, but not recently.

Finally, Civilian 37 confirmed that she saw her sister being shot. The defense asked her about it because during her testimony at the lower court, she had said that she had not seen the shooting herself, but only heard a gunshot.

After the defense's questions, the prosecution asked Civilian 37 one more question about the timing of the events. Civilian 37 said that these events took place during World War I.

Civilian 46 is heard

Prosecution questions Civilian 46

Civilian 46 described being in Monrovia in 2001 during World Wars I and II, selling plastic bags in Waterside with his brother. They saw a store that had been broken into and people were stealing biscuits, so they went there to look for food as the food situation was dire in Monrovia. According to Civilian 46, a group of soldiers arrived at scene, began shooting and then arrested a lot of people present at the store. The arrested were taken under a bridge. According to the witness, the soldiers had a leader who called himself Gabriel Massaquoi. This man picked two people from the group and shot them with a pistol; one of them was Civilian 46's brother. According to Civilian 46, Gabriel Massaquoi called himself Angel Gabriel and told people that he "sends people to God" and the people should tell God he sent them. Then he gave an order to shoot the remaining group of people, and everyone started running for their lives. While running away, Civilian 46 met a lady called Civilian 28 whom he knew from Waterside. Civilian 28 was crying with blood coming from her right foot. Civilian 46 passed her and managed to escape the scene.

Civilian 46 was also asked about the timing of the events. He said they took place during World War I in 2001, with World War II being in 2002. After World War III, it took 3 to 4 years for Charles Taylor not to be in power anymore. According to Civilian 46, the bridge they were taken to was the Old Bridge in Waterside, now called New Bridge. The people were taken on the right side of the bridge when looking from Waterside. The biscuit store was not far from the bridge on the other side of the road, the right side when looking at Waterside from the bridge.

Civilian 46 testified that he saw the person called Gabriel Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel for the first time at the biscuit store. He came there and gave an order to take the people to the bridge. He was speaking English like a Sierra Leonean, like "Krio". According to Civilian 46, he was wearing a white round neck t-shirt and "soldier trousers". To justify shooting him, Gabriel Massaquoi had said that Civilian 46's brother was a rebel on a reconnaissance mission. Civilian 46 told the prosecution he saw the shooting with his own eyes. Whilst he knew his brother's name, he did not know the name of the other man shot by Gabriel Massaquoi.

Civilian 46 also told the Prosecution that he saw an unfinished building next to the place where they were taken by the bridge. He could not remember a lot of details about the building, but said that it hadn't been painted at the time.

Defense questions Civilian 46

Civilian 46 testified that he had been to the biscuit store's location recently and that there is a new store in the same location but he did not know what kind of a store it is. He testified that people were shot at the biscuit store when he was there; however, he had not heard about similar events taking place at other shops in Waterside. Civilian 46 stated that he only remembers the name of Gabriel Massaquoi, he had not heard the names of any of the other soldiers. This Angel was also the only person who introduced himself at the scene.

Civilian 46 was asked to describe the building near the bridge, where they were taken to from the biscuit store. He said that it was an unfinished building and it looked like it had a second floor to it. He could not remember if the building had a roof. Civilian 46 was not sure whether he saw Liberian soldiers at the scene. He said that they might have been there when everybody were running away from the bridge. The defense asked him if he remembered any of the factions that were fighting in Waterside at the time, to which Civilian 46 replied that he could not remember them. He was asked about ATU, as he had mentioned in the pre-trial investigation that this unit

was part of the government forces fighting the rebels at the time. Civilian 46 said that he might have said it, but he could not remember it at this moment. Civilian 46 also said that Angel Gabriel's soldiers were mostly young men aged between 20 and 25 years old, some of them older than that. He was kept at the bridge for less than an hour before he managed to escape.

When asked if he was aware how the Finnish police had gotten in contact with him, Civilian 46 explained that Civilian 28 had helped the police to reach him. Civilian 46 had seen Civilian 28 bleeding by the bridge when he was escaping the scene. After the war, they both met at Red Light market, where they did not discuss the events of Waterside, but only exchanged phone numbers. Civilian 28 then called Civilian 46 as someone wanted to talk to him, Employee 1. Civilian 46 spoke with him on the phone and then came to Monrovia to be heard by the Finnish police. Civilian 46 was not aware of any other witnesses in the case, except for Civilian 28, who had called him. Civilian 46 had not spoken with anyone about the events in Waterside after being interviewed by the Finnish police and before he was heard in lower court.

The defense asked Civilian 46 about the timing of the events. In the pre-trial investigation, Civilian 46 had mentioned that the events took place in 2003. The witness responded that he had forgotten the timing, as people used to call the events World Wars I, II and III, with World War I being in 2001. Asked about the fact that he – alongside other witnesses – had changed the timing from 2003 to a preceding year during the proceedings, Civilian 46 stated that he had only made a mistake in timing the incident.

The prosecution asked if him and his brother, who have the same surname, are biologically related. Civilian 46 confirmed this.

Civilian 80 is heard

Prosecution questions Civilian 80

The prosecution began their questioning by asking Civilian 80 to describe an incident where they were captured by soldiers. According to Civilian 80 this was in 2002, 2003. World War I took place in 2001. Civilian 80 was living in Monrovia with his brothers [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. The situation at the time was not normal and soldiers from the government's ATU were staying in the area. ATU soldiers were harassing civilians at the ELWA junction, and it was hard to find food. One morning Civilian 80 and one of his brothers decided to go to Waterside to look for food or goods to sell. They saw a biscuit shop that had been broken into and people were looking for food inside. His brother decided to go inside the store. A man came with a group of soldiers and gave an order, he claimed that the people at the store were not civilians, but enemy spies and they should be shot. Civilian 80 testified that the soldiers started firing, killing several people, including his brother. Civilian 80's other brother was also killed by the soldiers at the store in Waterside, Civilian 80 witnessed this personally.

According to Civilian 80 the shop was in Waterside, just after the bridge, on the left side of the road coming from the bridge. Civilian 80 told the prosecution that the commander who gave the order at the shop was called by the soldiers Chief Gabriel Massaquoi. Civilian 80 was taken from the store to under the bridge; there were a lot of people tied up there. According to Civilian 80, a lot of people were executed there by the commander, Gabriel Massaquoi. Civilian 80 saw him execute people, he also said he was "Angel Gabriel and he was sending the people to God".

Civilian 80 told that Gabriel Massaquoi was not Liberian, but Sierra Leonean based on his manner of speaking, as he was speaking differently. He had a .45 caliber pistol that he used to kill people.

Near the place where people were executed, Civilian 80 also described a building where the soldier stayed: it was a concrete building, but it did not have many floors. Civilian 80 could not remember the color of the building at the time.

Civilian 80 testified that he did not stay for long under the bridge, maybe for an hour. Civilian 80 further confirmed that the events took place in 2002 or 2003, World War II was in 2002 and World War III in 2003. He did not count the days between the incident to when Charles Taylor left. According to Civilian 80, President Taylo left the country in 2004.

Civilian 80 also testified that he had seen news about Mr Massaquoi's arrest on BBC. He also saw Massaquoi's picture in a newspaper.

Defense questions Civilian 80

The Defense began questioning Civilian 80 asking about the newspaper articles. Civilian 80 testified that he went to the Ministry of Education and bought a paper there. He discussed the news with others. Civilian 80 said he knows Civilian 61, his sister, who also testified in the case, but he does not know anyone else who would've testified in the case. Civilian 80 was also asked about how the Finnish police managed to contact him. He testified that Employee 1 was the contact between him and the Finnish police, but he could not remember when he had met with Employee 1, only that it was long before he met with Finnish police.

Civilian 80 was also asked about the group of witnesses interviewed between November and December 2020. He said he had not been in contact with them, he only remembered his sister. Civilian 80 also testified that he lived in ELWA Junction between 2002 and 2003 and that the incident happened while he was living there. The defense asked him about the timing, since the lower court's judgment had recorded that Civilian 80 lived in ELWA junction between 2000 and 2001: Civilian 80 answered that in 2001, during World War I, he lived in Monrovia and that the incident with Massaquoi took place between 2002 and 2003. The defense referred to the pre-trial investigation report, where it had been recorded that Civilian 80 had said that the incident took place in 2001 and asked him for clarification. Civilian 80 answered that he did not want his mind being changed by external factors.

Finally, the witness testified that he did not see the soldiers looting, but that the soldiers began shooting once Massaquoi gave the order. Civilian 80 was standing right next to Massaquoi when he gave the order. Civilian 80 heard the commander say that his name in Sierra Leone was Gibril Massaquoi and Gabriel Massaquoi in Liberia and that his "killer name" was Angel Massaquoi. Civilian 80 did not remember talking about Sam Bockarie. When his pre-trial investigation recording was played, in which he is heard mentioning Sam Bockarie present in Waterside, he responded that he does not know about him: the person in Waterside was Gabriel Massaquoi.

The prosecution asked Civilian 80 about a relative named [REDACTED]. According to police interviews, this relative was with him at Waterside during the incident; however, now the witness could not recall whether she was with him or not. He confirmed having a relative that was called like that, and that she might have been there, but that his mind "has not been on this thing". He

said he had no contacts with this relative as “we all went our way since the crisis.” Civilian 80 confirmed that both his brothers were killed at the biscuit store.

February 10, 2023 – Day 11: Three more witnesses are heard

On the final day of the first week of proceedings in Monrovia, the Court heard three more witnesses. One of the witness' identity is classified, so and this witness was in a private hearing.

The Court resumed public hearings at 1 pm and heard two more witnesses about events relating to a biscuit store and the Old Bridge in Waterside, Monrovia. The witnesses talked about a commander calling himself Angel Gabriel ordering the killing of civilians next to a base, or checkpoint, at Old Bridge.

The next hearing is scheduled to take place next Monday, February 13.

February 10, 2023 [Liberia] Day 11: Three more witnesses are heard

Witness Civilian 75 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 75

The prosecution began their questioning by asking Civilian 75 about where and when she had lived in Monrovia and asked her to describe an incident where soldiers detained her. She testified that in 2001, she was living with her late aunt near the Police Academy. They used to sell goods in Waterside together. One morning, the stores were all closed but Civilian 75 saw one that was open. She saw people going inside the store and coming back out with biscuits in their hands. According to Civilian 75, somebody began to fire and they ran way. Her friend was hit and could not run anymore. Civilian 75 testified that she was running towards a bridge when she was detained. Civilian 65 was also detained. Civilian 75 was dragged to a checkpoint, where people were being beaten. The witness stated that she still has scars from the incident.

Civilian 75 stated that she saw dead bodies at the checkpoint. Soldiers picked some women from the crowd and they were taken away to the commander. At the checkpoint, she heard the soldiers saying the names Michael and Angel Michael. The soldiers were wearing Liberian uniforms. The commander was wearing a white t-shirt, a hat and "uniform trousers." The commander gave an order to put people in line and said to them that he would kill them, saying "when you meet God, tell him that I, Angel Gabriel, sent you".

According to Civilian 75, a vehicle appeared. A woman in the vehicle knew Civilian 75's late aunt and asked her what they were doing there. The woman told the soldiers that they were not rebels and took Civilian 75 and Civilian 65 to a junction and they escaped from there.

Civilian 75 continued, saying that the people shooting at the store were soldiers, who all had Liberian uniforms. She explained that she saw her friend being hit and has not seen this friend ever since.

According to Civilian 75, the checkpoint she had referred to had an "upstairs building" and was not painted. They were located in Waterside, near the Old Bridge "repaired by Ma Ellen". The store was located in Waterside near the bridge: "When you passed, the first and the second store, that's where it is". According to Civilian 75, Civilian 65 was also taken to the checkpoint.

Civilian 75 stated that the commander had a "funny way of speaking", and didn't speak like a Liberian, but rather spoke Krio, which she said resembles Temne. The first time Civilian 75 heard the name of the commander was at the checkpoint, it was said out loud by the soldiers who were with him. They called him Gabriel, Angel Gabriel. She described how the commander arrived at the checkpoint and gave an order to shoot the people as they were rebels. People were lined up, and then soldiers began to shoot them. Civilian 75 testified that she saw this with her own eyes. She could not estimate how many people were shot. Civilian 75 and Civilian 65 spent about an hour at the checkpoint before they managed to escape. This all happened in 2001. Then, the witness showed her scars to the Court.

Civilian 75 stated that she remembered when she spoke with the Finnish for the first time about these events. She testified that she had heard about the arrest of a Liberian in Finland. She had gone to buy goods and met with Civilian 65 and they spoke about the events. Civilian 65 gave her his phone number and told her that there are people in Liberia [interested in these events].

Finally, the witness testified that her aunt died during the war. She stated that they were in Waterside together, and that her aunt had given her money to buy goods and that was the last time Civilian 75 saw her.

The defense questions Civilian 75

The defense began by asking Civilian 75 whether she had heard that somebody had been arrested in connection with the events in Waterside before talking to the Finnish police, to which she replied that she had not.

She testified that Civilian 65 had told her about the person being arrested. She described that there was a boy named Gabriel living within her community, and somebody had joked that they hoped he wasn't Gabriel Massaquoi. Civilian 75 did not know when the news came out, as and they don't listen to the radio where she was inland. After the joke about the boy named Gabriel, Civilian 75 discussed the 'issue' with Civilian 65, who had said Gabriel is a bad person. Civilian 75 could not remember Civilian 80.

Next, the defense asked about the witness's late aunt. Civilian 75 testified that she left her aunt in Waterside as the shooting began and hadn't seen her since.

The witness was asked why she had provided two different names that the soldiers had called the commander: both Gabriel and Michael. Civilian 75 responded that she had made a mistake, the commander was called Gabriel Massaquoi, and that she heard the name Massaquoi from the soldiers. The defense pointed out that in her police interview, Civilian 75 did not mention the name Massaquoi, she only spoke of Angel Gabriel. Civilian 75 replied that at the time she had forgotten his last name, and could only remember the name Gabriel, but that as she had conversations later, she could remember the name Massaquoi. The defense then pointed out that Civilian 75 had not mentioned the name Massaquoi in the lower court either. Civilian 75 repeated that she had discussed the events with Civilian 65 and some other people who had also used the name.

Next, Civilian 75 explained that she cannot distinguish between Temne and Mende, but that the commander did not sound like a Liberian. She could not remember any other battles going in Monrovia except for the events in Waterside because she was not in Monrovia. She was asked

about her police interview, as she had said that the Waterside events occurred during World War I, in 2001. She explained that she left Monrovia after the incident and when she returned in 2008, she learned about World Wars I, II and III from her friends and relatives. The defense pointed out to Civilian 75 that she is among a group of witnesses that all incorrectly placed World War I in 2001. Civilian 75 responded that she left Monrovia 2001, after the incident. She explained that although she had discussed what had happened at Waterside with Civilian 65, they did not discuss the date.

Next, there was some confusion between the defense, the witness, and the court, as to whether and how witnesses Civilian 65, 75 and 80 knew each other. The matter was therefore dropped.

Finally, Civilian 75 testified that people were shot inside the store. She did not hear the names of any soldiers other than "Angel". According to Civilian 75, the building at the checkpoint might have also had rooms upstairs, but she could not remember whether the building had a roof. She repeated that Angel Gabriel was wearing Liberian police trousers, a white t-shirt and a hat. The defense pointed out that the witness had not recalled the clothes during the police interview. She replied that she has been thinking about it and remembered the clothing later and confirmed that she had not discussed Angel Gabriel's clothing with anyone. Civilian 75 said that she had not experienced similar events of store looting or people being shot in Waterside and she had not been told about similar events. The defense pointed out that she had mentioned during the police investigation that people had spoken about similar events in Waterside, but this was the only one that she herself had experienced. Civilian 75 repeated that this was the only event she experienced herself and that she had not heard about similar events.

Witness Civilian 65 is heard

Before Civilian 65 began his testimony, he expressed concerns regarding his safety to the Court. The Court reassured him that no photographs were taken of witnesses, and that the media had agreed not to publish their names. They also reminded the witness that the Finnish police would remain present in Liberia throughout the hearings and that they had set up a special number that witnesses could use to contact them if they experienced any threats to their security.

The prosecution questions Civilian 65

The prosecution asked Civilian 65 to speak about a particular incident in Waterside that he remembers. Civilian 65 testified that he sold goods in Waterside and that one morning, all the stores were closed except for one. This store had people going in and carrying biscuits out and there were soldiers, some wearing Liberian uniforms. Civilian 65 and others decided to go to the store when some people inside the store were shot and killed. The witness explained that he and the others tried to move away but were told to stay where they were. They were arrested and told that they would be taken to the soldiers' checkpoint. Civilian 65 noted that some of the soldiers were Liberian and some Sierra Leonean.

The witness described how people were beaten at the checkpoint and that he got to know a man called Angel Gabriel: "He was the commander at the time that was giving the orders, he said 'kill them, tell them that I Angel Gibril sent them to God'". According to Civilian 65, the soldiers' checkpoint was at New Bridge in Waterside. The soldiers took some women into a building, Civilian 65 could hear them being raped. Angel Gabriel then gave an order and said that he would be sending the people to God. Civilian 65 recalled that he was wearing a white t-shirt, a cap and

"Liberian army trousers". Then, the witness explained that a pickup with soldiers came onto the scene.

Civilian 65 also explained that he had been arrested at the store with a girl that he knew, Civilian 75. He described how a friend of Civilian 75's aunt recognized her from the pickup, shouted Civilian 75's name and asked what the people were doing there. When they said that they had been arrested, the woman from the pickup took them away and "saved their lives".

The witness located the store by saying that taking the road from the Liberia Electricity Company, it was the third store. Looking from the bridge where the checkpoint was, the store is on the right side of the road. He was not sure how far the store was from the bridge, but said that maybe it was the third one. The bridge where the checkpoint was located was called Old Bridge during the war. However, he could not remember the names of the people that were with him when he was going to the store. He could not remember how many people were shot inside the store as the situation was "crazy", but estimated that it was more than 10 people. He further elaborated on the checkpoint: when going from Waterside towards the bridge, the witness said that the checkpoint was located by the bridge and that there was a small, unfinished "upstairs building". The women were taken inside this particular building and Civilian 65 could hear them being raped inside. According to Civilian 65, when Angel Gabriel ordered to kill people, he meant the civilians as they were allegedly bringing food to the enemy. He was speaking English, but in a different manner. Civilian 65 explained: "we Africans know when a Ghanaian and Sierra Leonean man is talking". Angel Gabriel was speaking like a Sierra Leonean.

Civilian 65 was asked if he knew the name of anyone who may have been killed at the biscuit store or at the checkpoint. He mentioned the name of one "big brother" called [REDACTED]. The pickup that arrived with the woman who knew Civilian 75's aunt was full of soldiers. Civilian 65 could not identify any of the soldiers or commanders. He stated: "The name I know is Gibril Massaquoi. He will knock his chest and say I Angel Gabriel sent you". Civilian 65 also testified that the crisis in Liberia was called World Wars I, II and III. The incident in Waterside happened during World War I, in 2001. He stated that when he met with the Finnish police for the first time, he had not heard or read any news that Angel Gabriel had been detained in Finland.

The defense questions Civilian 65

The defense began by asking whether Civilian 65 had heard about Gibril Massaquoi's arrest and detention, as it took place over six months before Civilian 65 met with the Finnish police and was widely reported. Civilian 65 confirmed that he had not.

Next, the defense pointed out that Civilian 65 was part of a group of witnesses who had placed the events in the years 2000 to 2002 and a lot of them incorrectly claimed that World War I was in 2001, World War II in 2002 and World War III in 2003. They asked if he could explain why this was so, and Civilian 65 stated that he cannot speak for others and that it's not easy to remember things when you are seeing corpses.

Civilian 65 testified that he heard the commander use both names, Angel Gabriel and Gabriel Massaquoi at the same time during the events. The defense pointed out that Civilian 65 had not used the name Gabriel Massaquoi in the police interview or in lower court. Civilian 65 answered that he had not "matured" by then and the name was not something that's easy to recall. Civilian 65 denied that he heard the name Gibril Massaquoi only later. Civilian 65 described Angel

Gabriel's clothes as camouflage trousers, a white shirt, and a cap. He stated that the trousers were the same that the Liberian army used, but that the shirt was not. When the defense pointed out that Civilian 65 had told the police that the man had a Liberian uniform, he repeated that the trousers were from the Liberian uniform.

Next, Civilian 65 repeated that he had not heard the names of any other soldiers and only heard the name of the commander giving orders, Angel Gabriel. He had a pistol, which according to Civilian 65 describes how wicked he is. Civilian 65 knew one person who was killed at the scene, the big brother called [REDACTED]. He did not know any other name for him. When asked if he knew of a man called [REDACTED], he responded that they had not been in contact after the event in Waterside.

The witness explained the Sierra Leonean accent that Angel Gabriel spoke with. The defense pointed out that in the lower court, Civilian 65 had mentioned that the man spoke with a British accent and sounded like a Sierra Leonean. The witness agreed, saying that since Sierra Leone was a British colony, they speak in a similar way. Civilian 65 had heard of similar incidents, where people had been shot in Waterside, but he had not witnessed them. He stated that such events were talked about after the war, but he could not say that everybody in the country would have known about them.

Finally, the court asked Civilian 65 to clarify what happened when Angel Gabriel gave the order to kill people at the checkpoint. Civilian 65 responded that the soldiers shot people, and he saw bodies, and that [REDACTED] was killed there. He clarified that the shooting began before the pickup arrived and continued after it got to the scene. According to Civilian 65, World War I took place in 2001, World War II in 2002 and World War III in 2003.

February 13, 2023 – Day 12: Three witnesses and a biscuit store

The first day of the second week of proceedings in Monrovia began with the Court hearing three witnesses about events that occurred near a biscuit store and around the Old Bridge area in Waterside, Monrovia. The three witnesses spoke about the killing, harassment and rape of civilians in Monrovia and the role of Angel Gabriel, the commander of the soldiers committing these acts.

The Court will continue tomorrow with three more witnesses.

February 13, 2023 [Liberia] Day 12: Three witnesses and a biscuit store

Witness Civilian 05 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 05

The prosecution began their questioning by asking Civilian 05 about an incident where soldiers captured him in Monrovia. Civilian 05 was living at ELWA junction, Monrovia and he was 14 or 15 years old at the time. The incident happened in 2001 and Civilian 5 is now 34 years old. He sold biscuits, candy, and fruit for a living, but it was difficult to retrieve the goods to sell, and his friends told him they were going to show him where they got their stock. They all went to the market in Waterside. They saw a lot of people standing, the stores were closed so they were waiting for them to open. There were both civilians and people with guns present. Civilian 05's friends told him that they would usually put their money together and give it to the soldiers to open the shop. As they did, the soldiers said to hurry, as their boss could come at any time and "it wasn't the right what they were doing."

As they came out of the shop, after they grabbed what they could find, they heard a gunshot. They saw a pickup parked outside, Civilian 05's friends were shot and lying on the ground. As the soldiers' superiors had arrived, the soldiers started arresting the civilians for breaking into the shop, as to not be involved in the entering. The witness was arrested as well, and they were all forced to sit on the ground. A man asked why these people were allowed to enter and, according to Civilian 05, a soldier said that while they were on the other side of the road, they saw the people entering the store. Civilian 05 noticed that the man who asked the question was called a "boss man". He ordered to bring him a stone, which had a "bruise mark" and blood on it. The commander took one girl from the crowd and ordered to put her head on the stone. He told Civilian 05 and others to watch what he was doing. According to Civilian 05, "it was the first time for me to see someone being killed in front of my eyes. […] I wasn't myself when the blood was spurting out." He cut the girl's throat with a knife, and he said: "when you go to Heaven, tell God, I, Angel Gabriel sent you."

Civilian 05 testified that right after the girl got murdered, a group of men arrived on a vehicle. They asked after the people that had been detained and told the soldiers that they had to be released, so they were accompanied towards Twelve Houses at ELWA junction. They were taken through a gate to a building and were put in a room. There were other people already there when they arrived. There was no way out: there was a guard who came inside the room to check on them. Civilian 05 recognised the guard and got his attention. The guard asked Civilian 05 what he was doing there and said that "this is not a good place to be." Civilian 05 explained what had

happened and asked him for help. The guard opened the gate and told them to leave, to get away and instructed them not to go to ELWA junction.

Asked by the prosecution, Civilian 05 described both the location of the building and its structure. He specified that it was where the "boss man" Angel Gabriel, operated from. According to Civilian 05, people were killed during the shooting at the store. Civilian 05 could not remember the names of his friends who were killed that day. The girl's throat was cut at the place where they had been arrested, adjacent to the store, right next to the yellow building. It was "the boss man himself, Angel Gabriel", who took the girl from the crowd, and who personally cut the girl's throat with the knife – Civilian 05 saw it himself. Civilian 05 reiterated that the soldiers who had opened the shop pretended they hadn't and started shooting when they saw "their boss coming". Civilian 05 testified that he heard the name Angel Gabriel in Waterside as Angel Gabriel introduced himself when they got arrested and right before the girl was picked from the crowd. The witness specified that Angel Gabriel was a part of the Liberian troops, but he was not himself Liberian and that he spoke like a Sierra Leonean person. Civilian 05 only saw Angel Gabriel in Waterside.

When asked who the man on the pick-up track was, which arrived just after the girl's murder, the witness said that it was "Chief 50", a Liberian commander whose name was Benjamin Yeaten, but was commonly known as 50.

At the time of these events, there were battles ongoing in Monrovia. They were called World Wars I, II and III. Civilian 05 testified that after he had been captured at the store, the battles were still ongoing for a long time. According to the witness, this incident took place during World War I, which took place in 2001. World War II was in 2002 and World War III in 2003. The events took place outside the holiday season, but a holiday, such as the Independence Day on 26 July, was approaching. Civilian 05 described the building they were taken to on Twelve Houses Road as a large building with a fence. He could not tell if the building had a particular name, it was in the Twelve Houses Road community.

The defense questions Civilian 05

Asked by the defense, Civilian 05 explained that the store where the incident took place is still in operation, as people sell various goods, such as biscuits and slippers, and that what he had only been there that once, as he usually bought goods somewhere else.. The whole incident lasted one day. The defense pointed out that in the pre-trial investigation report, Civilian 05 is recorded as saying that there were a group of people at the store, with some in uniform and others without. Because of this they did not go to the store and returned after two days. Civilian 05 said that there had been some misunderstanding: the information about the uniforms was correct, but he could not remember going back only after two days. Civilian 05 testified that he was taken to a building from the store. There was a checkpoint at Waterside that had been marked with a rope. Civilian 05 confirmed that he heard Angel Gabriel's name from the man himself, who said it before killing the girl. Nobody else used the name Angel Gabriel at the scene, the soldiers called him their boss.

The defense pointed out that in the lower court's judgment it had been recorded that Civilian 05 had said that he had been under a bridge, when a man guarding them had felt sorry for them and said the name Angel Gabriel. Civilian 05 responded that maybe he had been misunderstood: Angel Gabriel had said his name out loud himself when they were under the bridge, they used to

throw bodies there. Civilian 05 also testified that the girl being killed was the only time he saw Angel Gabriel kill someone.

The defense referred to the lower court's judgement, where Civilian 05 had been recorded saying that there was a man next to him, who was taken from the crowd by soldiers. This was the first time he had seen a person being taken from next to him. Soldiers took this man and laid his head on the stone and said to the people that they are going to do the same to them. Civilian 05 had closed his eyes for being too scared and when he opened his eyes, he saw that the man was "shaking". Civilian 05 confirmed this had in fact taken place and the man had died. Civilian 05 however confirmed that he had seen two people being killed, a man and a woman. He added that he also saw other people being killed during the shooting as well, but he had not seen Angel Gabriel slit anyone else's throat besides the incident in Waterside. He confirmed that these two people, the man and the woman were the only ones he saw being killed by Angel Gabriel personally. The defense then pointed to the police interview, where Civilian 05 had said that Angel was using something like a chair as a cutting board, he slit the throats of two men and let their blood flow into a bowl. Civilian 05 confirmed this, saying that the defense attorney was reminding him as the events had happened a long time ago. Civilian 05 testified that he saw two persons' throats being slit, they were a man and a woman. He did not see two men being killed by Angel Gabriel, and he added that the murders of the man and the woman "happened at the same time, so you can't count it as two times."

Civilian 05 testified further that he could not remember the nicknames of his friends that were killed at the store or the names of people who were arrested together with him. The defense referred to the police investigation, where Civilian 05 had told that he stayed in the area for one day and night. His friend, whose brother was a soldier, arrived there and asked to see Civilian 05, who was brought outside. The name of Civilian 05's friend was [redacted]. Civilian 05 confirmed this. Civilian 05 was not aware what had happened to his friend as everyone went on their own way after the events.

Asked by the defense, the witness described how the Finnish police knew he had information on the events. He had been talking about sports with a group of people in a tea shop when someone started talking about the war and Waterside. The witness said "oh my gosh, I was there and I was hurt there" and after discussing with the others and leaving the place, someone approached him and asked him for his phone number as people would want to talk to him. The next day he received a phone call and told him that people would be interested in what he had said regarding the incident. The same person who had called him took him to the Finnish police. Civilian 05 had not discussed the year of the incident with anyone before talking to the Finnish police.

The defense referred to the lower court's judgment, where it had been recorded that when Civilian 05 was discussing the events in the tea shop, someone had mentioned the year 2003, to which Civilian 05 had responded that what had happened to him took place in 2001. The witness explained that he could not remember what exactly had being discussed, but he rememebers that what happened to him took place in 2001, which is what he told to the Finnish police. The defense referred to the police interview, where Civilian 05 had mentioned that the events took place in 2003. Civilian 05 testified that he had told the police the same thing as in court today, i.e., World War I was in 2001, World War II in 2002 and World War III in 2003 and that what happened to him happened in 2001. In explaining the confusion about the year, Civilian 05 said that: "like in your life, a major occasion in your life you can forget, but after people can remind you and you can remember."

There was some additional discussion going back and forth about the timing of the events and what Civilian 05 had told the Finnish police in the two different interviews. He insisted that the wars took place in 2001, 2002 and 2003 respectively and that the events in Waterside took place in 2001. The defense mentioned that an expert witness had said that the events took place in 2003, but Civilian 05 reiterated that what happened to him took place in 2001. Civilian 05 confirmed that he did not know what happened to [REDACTED] in Waterside and he was not aware of his fate. The defense referred to the recording of Civilian 05's police investigation interview, where he had said "[REDACTED] did not survive and I have not seen [him] since then." The witness answered that "if the man doesn't survive, how can you see him afterwards? I haven't seen him I don't know where he is."

The police had also written in their report that Civilian 05's friend had given his contact information to Employee 1. Civilian 05 testified that someone took his number, but he did not know this person's name as they did not introduce themselves.

Civilian 05 testified that he does not know any other witnesses in the case and had not given the Finnish police anyone else's contact information. However, the police investigation report stated that Civilian 05 had been told by the police that multiple witnesses had told them that Civilian 05 had called them. Civilian 05 denied this, saying that he would tell the court if this was true, and that he had not contacted anyone. if something would come back to him, but this one was not true. The defense further pointed out to the police investigation report, where Civilian 62 and Civilian 72 were mentioned as having been found via Civilian 05. Civilian 05 confirmed this, saying that they were from the meeting at the tea shop [gathering mentioned earlier]. He had not told them the name of the suspect.

Asked if he had known of similar looting events, Civilian 05 stated that he had heard about looting incidents at Red Light and Waterside – but he personally only witnessed to the one in Waterside. Civilian 05 testified that he had moved away from Monrovia in 2005, and that before that he had lived at ELWA Junction. According to him, peace in Liberia took place either in 2003 or 2004.

Witness Civilian 73 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 73

The prosecution began their questioning by asking Civilian 73 about an incident, where soldiers captured her in Monrovia. She was either 15 or 16 years old at the time and was living in Monrovia. She used to buy and sell fish with a friend, and had gone to Waterside to look for produce. There, they heard noise and a group of people started shouting and running everywhere. The whole Waterside was "upside down", they heard gunshots and wanted to get away. As they were trying to find a vehicle to escape with, they saw armed soldiers on a pickup truck. These soldiers then descended the truck and started putting people in the pickup, including Civilian 73 and her friend, saying "you people are LURD rebels." There were both elderly and young people, everyone was crying. They were brought under the Waterside bridge, and other people were taken towards West Point.

Under the bridge, there were people, also crying. She asked the people why they were crying and was told to shut up. An older man was sitting next to Civilian 73, and a soldier hit him in the eye with the butt of his gun. The man started bleeding, so the witness and others started crying and

they were told that "if we messed with them, they would kill us all". Civilian 73 testified that one man stood up and he had guards around him. The only thing Civilian 73 heard him say was "I am Angel Gabriel. I'm the one who people pass through to go to God." According to Civilian 73, it was difficult to look at him, as soldiers would hit you in the face if you did so and told you to keep your head down. Civilian 73 testified further that at the bridge there was a "long house." If a person was unlucky, they would be taken into this house to be raped – the witness could hear crying and calls for help coming from the house. Civilian 73 started crying and calling for help as she was being beaten. A man arrived – he appeared to be higher ranking than the other soldiers present – and started asking what those people were doing there. Angel Gabriel started apologizing to this new higher ranking soldier and ordered to release the captured people. As his attention was on the superior officer, the witness' friend took her hand and they fled the scene.

The prosecution followed up with a few questions, and Civilian 73 specified that her friend was Civilian 61. They were close to the biscuit store when they were arrested, in Waterside. Civilian 73 confirmed that when they heard gunshots, soldiers were shooting around, both in the air and around them. She had not seen anyone being hit personally, besides the older man wounded under the bridge. The witness said the soldier's leader called himself Angel Gabriel, and was also called that by his men, as well as chief, and boss. According to Civilian 73, he was speaking English with a Sierra Leonean accent. He was wearing cap and camouflage trousers and had a gun.

Civilian 73 did not know who the higher ranking man who arrived later was, but she understood he was the most senior, and that he was angry. She did not pay attention what accent he had.

According to Civilian 73, battles, "real war" was ongoing in Monrovia at the time of the incident, but she could not remember how long after that peace came.

The defense questions Civilian 73

The defense began their questioning by asking Civilian 73 to repeat her friend's name. According to Civilian 73, she went to Waterside that day with Civilian 61 only. The defense asked her if she knew anyone by the name [REDACTED], and the witness responded in the negative. The defense then referred to the lower court's judgment, where Civilian 73 had said that Civilian 61 was not with her that day and in fact the only person with her was her business partner [REDACTED]. Civilian 73 answered that maybe she had forgotten something, one cannot remember everything, but she confirmed that Civilian 61 was with her under the bridge. They took the same car to Waterside and once there they were all put in the same car and taken under the bridge. The defense pointed out that according to the lower court's judgment, Civilian 73 could not remember Civilian 61 being with her under the bridge. She had told the police that Civilian 61 was there, but in lower court she said that she could not remember such a thing. Civilian 73 said that "even the wisest of us are capable of forgetting things."

Asked further about [REDACTED], the witness said she might have mentioned her in the police interview. Civilian 73 said that she remembers such a name: "When we were under the bridge when they caught us, we all were crying, I can remember that name. Not everything you can recall." Civilian 73 mentioned that a girl next to her under the bridge mentioned this name as people were taken to be raped inside the building. The girl next to Civilian 73 was calling [REDACTED], so according to Civilian 73, [REDACTED] was taken to be raped.

The defense referred to the police interview, where Civilian 73 had said that the man was called by the soldiers chief and boss man, but she had not mentioned that the man was called Angel Gabriel. Civilian 73 explained that the soldiers called him boss and said "yes, chief" and the man was calling himself Angel Gabriel. She also said that the soldiers were using the name Angel Gabriel. "For instance, I'm doing something and boasting, and the bodyguards will say Chief, chef chief, Angel Gabriel!" Civilian 73 did not hear the names of other soldiers.

Civilian 73 said that she did not see Angel Gabriel's face, as soldiers were preventing it. She saw that Angel Gabriel was wearing a cap when she first saw him when they were captured and taken from the pickup under the bridge. Civilian 73 was not aware of similar events in Waterside.

Civilian 73 was asked about how the Finnish police managed to get in contact with her. According to the witness she was at the market one day and she was talking about family with her godmother, who told her that there were people interested in hearing about her experiences. Civilian 73 also called her "play mom." Civilian 73 said that this person was not Civilian 61. The defense referred to the lower court's judgment, where it was recorded that Civilian 73 was contacted via Civilian 61, who was like a godmother to Civilian 61. Civilian 73 said that she cannot remember all the details. According to Civilian 73, she did not discuss details with this person, she only told her that people would be interested in her experiences. After that, the play mom told her that people would come to speak to her. Civilian 73 gave her number and after a few months, the this lady called her saying that some men would call her. The defense pointed to the police report, which says that the police received Civilian 73's contact information from Civilian 61. Civilian 73 answered by saying: "I just said she took my number." Civilian 73 had not heard any news about somebody being arrested before going to the interview with Finnish police.

Witness Civilian 64 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 64

Civilian 64 began his testimony by stating that he had been a soap maker, and he moved to Monrovia to look for ingredients, as they were hard to come by during the war. He went to Waterside to see if he could find caustic soda, and there "Gabriel Massaquoi was ringing his name, they were firing, serious firing at Waterside." When he was spotted with the caustic soda and other things, he was arrested, and they told him that he was a spy. All his ingredients were taken from him, and he was accused of being there on a reconnaissance mission. As Civilian 64 was trying to leave, he [Gabriel Massaquoi] gave an order and one of his soldiers hit Civilian 64 in his left eye. This eye is blind to this day. Civilian 64 was ordered to sit on the ground with blood pouring from his eye.

While Civilian 64 was sitting on the ground, he recognised two men from Charles Taylor's special forces, who knew him as a soap maker, they used to buy soap from him. These men, John Walker and Peter Doe, told Massaquoi's soldiers that Civilian 64 was not involved in anything as he was a soap maker and that's how Civilian 64 was released. Civilian 64 also testified about his wife's death in Waterside. She had gone to look for food and Civilian 64 never saw her again "I was wounded twice. I lost my eye and my wife in the war."

The witness said there were War I, War II and War III. The incident Civilian 64 described happened during World Wars I and II. According to Civilian 64, Waterside was the only way to survive at that time, as it was the only place where one could find food such as rice or biscuits, so

people went there to be able to get their families food. Peace arrived shortly after the World Wars. LURD was fighting on the other side, in and around Duala and they were coming that direction and there was also RUF troops. Civilian 64 was arrested by a store in Waterside, not far from the bridge. According to Civilian 64, the bridge did not have a name at the time, but after Ellen Johnson Sirleaf fixed it, it was called Old Ma Bridge. The store was on the right side of the road when looking from Old Ma Bridge, it was not far from the bridge. Civilian 64 went to Waterside alone, his wife had gone to a different place. Civilian 64 was not aware of what had happened to his wife.

When Civilian 64 was arrested at the store, there was shooting going on, people were killed there "Waterside was a mad house" said the witness. From the store, Civilian 64 was taken to a checkpoint that was located by a large store. That's where you go under the bridge, the bridge was the Old Bridge that Old Ma [Ellen Sirleaf Johnson] promised to fix. Civilian 64 saw Gabriel Massaquoi for the first time by the store. Him and his men were "moving all over." He said "I am Angel Gabriel Massaquoi, I am the one that can send people to heaven." According to Civilian 64, he spoke Krio. He was wearing military camouflage clothes. He was giving orders to the soldiers, "he said there are people around all here, you have to be very careful, so they should search among them." When Civilian 64 was taken under the Old Ma Bridge, he saw Gabriel Massaquoi there. Civilian 64 testified that his condition was bad, so he could not see exactly what Gabriel Massaquoi was doing there, but he said that there were a lot of women. According to Civilian 64, he was hit in his eye right after he had been arrested by the store. Gabriel Massaquoi gave the order, saying that this man is trying to leave, do not let him leave. The soldier hit Civilian 64 with something in his hand.

Civilian 64 testified that when he went to speak with the Finnish police for the first time, he had heard news about someone being arrested in Finland in relation to the Waterside events. He had heard the news from a local radio station, TrueFM and ELBC. It had not been a long time since he had heard the news when he went to meet with the police.

The witness wanted to state to the court that when he had heard that Massaquoi had been arrested, he had been "delighted", but he had not been happy with the last information he had received [*the acquittal*] regarding the fact that there had not been enough evidence. "*How is it possible that someone who has committed atrocities and mass murders, how can such a person be released?*"

The defense questions Civilian 64

The defense began their questioning by asking Civilian 64 about the news he had heard about Mr Massaquoi's arrest. Civilian 64 repeated that he had heard about the news on the radio. He had also seen his picture on a newspaper, as local newspapers had published Mr Massaquoi's photograph. Civilian 64 said he did not know a man called [REDACTED], but he said that he has a stepfather who has a similar name. According to Civilian 64, neither John Walker nor Peter Dough, the two soldiers he recognised at the store, are alive anymore. They helped him get away from the situation, as they told Gabriel Massaquoi that Civilian 64 was a famous soap maker in Liberia and Gabriel Massaquoi then gave an order to release him.

Civilian 64 was asked how the Finnish police managed to get his contact information. After the incident, Employee 1 came to meet Civilian 64 in Gbarnga, as he was one of Civilian 64's customers. Employee 1 asked how Civilian 64 had been, as they had not met in a long time and

Civilian 64 told him about his experiences in Waterside. Employee 1 said that he was on his way to Lofa and took Civilian 64's number. After returning from Lofa, Employee 1 called Civilian 64 and said that "Global Justice" [GJRP] would manage it. He asked Civilian 64, if Civilian 64 could tell his story also in a courtroom, and Civilian 64 answered yes. Civilian 64 could not remember when he met with Employee 1 in Gbarnga. He estimated that it was probably two years ago. After Civilian 64 gave his number to Employee 1, it did not take long until the Finnish police interviewed him. Civilian 64 did not discuss anything else related to Waterside with Employee 1 in Gbarnga, as Employee 1 was soon departing to go to Lofa. Civilian 64 had not heard Gabriel Massaquoi's name from anyone before the police interview, he said it was generally known in Waterside: "His name was not a hidden something, it was ringing in Waterside."

The defense referred to the lower court's judgment, where it was recorded that Civilian 64 had learned Angel Gabriel Massaquoi's name from Employee 1. Civilian 64 answered that this was not true. He categorically denied having learned the name from Employee 1. The defense referred to another section in the judgment, but Civilian 64 kept saying that he did not hear the name from Employee 1. According to Civilian 64, the only discussion he had with Employee 1 was the fact that Employee 1 was on his way to Lofa. Civilian 64 had discussed the incident with others, as his wound was visible, and the topic came up often. Civilian 64 also knew about similar incidents in Waterside, as according to him young people were fighting for their survival and breaking into stores. He was not aware of incidents similar to his own, as people had their personal problems back then. According to Civilian 64, the events in Waterside took place in 2001 to 2002.

February 14, 2023 – Day 13: Civilians detained in Waterside

The Court heard three more witnesses about events in Waterside, Monrovia today.

The first witness described how they were detained by soldiers in Waterside and taken to the Old Bridge area, where they saw civilians killed and raped by soldiers. The leader of the soldiers also killed a young girl himself. The second witness described a shooting that took place at a particular biscuit store in Waterside, where his friend was killed. Civilians were also taken to the Old Bridge, where they were executed. The third witness spoke about being detained in a store by soldiers in Waterside. The soldiers picked up civilians from the store and executed them outside.

The Court will continue to hear witnesses tomorrow.

February 14, 2023 [Liberia] Day 13: Civilians detained in Waterside

Witness Civilian 66 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 66

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 66 about an incident where she was captured by soldiers in Monrovia. The witness testified that she lived in Monrovia and was about 20 years old at the time. She and her mother lived in Vai Town and sold raw fish. One day, she heard that there were riots in Waterside. When she got home, she did not see her mother, so went to look for her in Waterside. As she got to Waterside, she saw people running, so began to run as well. While running, Civilian 66 and others were arrested and put in a car. They were brought down to Waterside bridge, where they were tied up and told that they would be killed. The capturers began to beat and rape people. A man came over and gave orders to rape and kill. According to Civilian 66, this man gave an order to kill a girl who was taken and slaughtered. The witness gestured her throat being slit to demonstrate what happened. The man who had given the orders was spoke 'in Sierra Leonean'. Then, a man speaking Liberian English came, the people were released from the ropes and were able to get away.

Alongside Civilian 66, her friend [REDACTED] and mother [REDACTED] were also arrested. She described how soldiers put them in a vehicle and took them under the bridge next to a store which was near a body of water. According to Civilian 66, the man who gave the orders for the girl to be killed under the bridge said that his name was Angel Gabriel, and said "go and tell God I sent you". The witness repeated that the girl was 'slaughtered' with a knife and made the same gesture. She testified that she saw this happen with her own eyes, and that she heard this man speak, but that she did not see him anywhere else. According to Civilian 66, the other man who arrived on scene was a high-ranking Liberian. She didn't know who he was, but one of the other people who had been captured said he knew him. The witness was not aware of fighting going on at the time, and testified that she only knew about the events in Waterside.

According to Civilian 66, she was arrested just before Old Bridge. The store under the bridge was not painted at the time. She could not remember if it had multiple floors. According to Civilian 66, Angel Gabriel was wearing "army clothes and a green shirt".

The defense questions Civilian 66

The defense began by asking Civilian 66 about the people that were with her when she went to Waterside. During this line of questioning, the witness's young child became restless. The hearing was suspended so that the witness could breastfeed. Civilian 66 testified that she was in Waterside with her mother and friend. Her mother was also taken under the bridge. She mentioned that at the initial location in Waterside, where she began to run away, a person she knew was killed. There was some discussion as to the relation of this person to the witness, whether it was her mother or her aunt, as she had said different things during her police interview and at the lower court. The witness finally asserted that it was her mother who had been killed, stating that "we are human beings and we can forget things. This happened a long time ago".

Civilian 66 was then asked about the girl that was "slaughtered" by Angel Gabriel. The defense pointed out that in the lower court, she had said that Angel Gabriel shot the girl, but at her police interview, she had said that her throat had been cut. Civilian 66 then responded "If I have made some mistakes in some of my explanation(s), you people should consider it, because I am a human".

According to the witness, the man who ordered their release was wearing "ordinary" clothes. She did not know which group or faction he belonged to, but heard from others under the bridge that he was a high-ranking soldier. She stated that the soldiers that were shooting in Waterside were Angel Gabriel's bodyguards. The defense asked for the name of the group, pointing out that she had mentioned at the lower court that they referred to themselves as ATU. The witness responded that this could be true, but she could not remember. She could not remember the names of any other soldiers present in the area.

Next, Civilian 66 was asked about how the Finnish police had gotten in touch with her. A boy, whose name she couldn't remember, asked her if she was present in Waterside and said that some people from Finland would like to talk to her. The defense referred to the police interview, where Civilian 66 had said that [REDACTED] gave her phone number to Employee 1. Civilian 66 said she could not remember this, but it was possible. There was also discussion about any contact that she may have had with Civilian 80.

Finally, Civilian 66 testified that she only knows about World Wars I and II. The defense raised that she had told the Finnish police that the events took place during World War I, which was in 2001. She answered that she has forgotten. At this point, the witness's child became agitated and the defense decided to end their questioning.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

Witness Civilian 77 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 77

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 77 about his experience in Monrovia during the war. Civilian 77 testified that was he living on Old Road, and used to sell food and clothes that he bought from Waterside. One day, he was shopping with his friend when there was a "serious incident that caused some problems". This was around 2002 and there wasn't fighting every day. Rebels had attacked government troops all the way to Vai Town and retreated. Civilian 77

explained that these attacks took place three times, and they named the events World War I, II and III, with the third World War ending the war.

The incident in question took place during World War II. Civilian 77 left Old Road to go to Waterside with his friend. They were in a car and saw other cars turning back from Waterside. Their car also turned back, but Civilian 77 and his friend got out and continued on foot. They left Crown Hill, and walked towards New Bridge and Waterside, when they saw some vendors packing their things, while others were still selling. Civilian 77 and his friend decided to continue to Waterside to look for food, as at the time, it was "in high demand". They saw people with biscuits, and as they approached them, they found out that there was a biscuit store that had been broken into by soldiers. The witness explained that the store was in the market in Johanssen district coming from the direction of the LEC (Liberia Electricity Corporation). Civilian 77 and his friend decided not to go into the store, as sometimes looters were shot, so instead decided to buy biscuits from the people that were leaving the store. His friend went to buy a pack of biscuits and came back.

Soon after, a group of soldiers arrived and started arresting and firing random shots. Civilian 77 described seeing people falling to the ground wounded or dead, including a friend of his who was hit two or three times from behind and died. The witness turned to look behind him and was hit on his left shoulder. He was captured by the soldiers, and taken, along with other people that had been captured, to the bridge going to Vai Town, which was called Old Bridge at the time and is called New Bridge today. The witness described a checkpoint at a crossroad where one road led to Waterside. The soldiers began threatening the people that had been captured that they would be killed because they were all looters. According to Civilian 77, they were all sitting on their "bare butts on the ground", and his hand was bleeding. The soldiers were shooting over them. Some people were taken into an office, two men sitting next to him were put into a car and taken towards West Point. The witness stated that the commander said that these men must be killed.

According to Civilian 77, the commander called himself Angel Gabriel, others were calling him Gibril and other names. He did not understand what they were saying as they all were speaking in 'Sierra Leonean'. The witness explained that he knew that Taylor had some Sierra Leonean men, because he knew some of them, but he didn't know any of the men there. He described that the commander ordered for the two men to be put in the pickup and they left towards West Point. The pickup returned empty.

Civilian 77 testified that one person was executed right in front of him and the other people that had been captured, right next to the water. He described that "the tension started getting high, and we all started crying". Then, government troops came from the Monrovia city center, saying that Benjamin Yeaten had ordered them to check out what was happening in Waterside. The witness recognized one of the soldiers, as he used to buy things from him, he was from the ATU. This soldier ordered for him to be put into a car and for all the other captured people to be released. There was a fight between the two groups of soldiers, "they even wanted to shoot". While this was happening, some of the people that had been captured began to run away and the soldier that Civilian 77 knew took him to JFK hospital and contacted his friends.

The witness then explained the location of the store in detail. It was located on the right side of the road when looking from Old Bridge. It was not too far away from the bridge. The name of his friend who died at the shop was [REDACTED]. He did not hear any orders being given, he just saw when the shooting began at the store and a commander on the scene. The witness repeated that

some people called the commander Gibril, and some called him Angel Gabriel, and some said that "only he can choose who to die and send them to God". Civilian 77 saw him both at the checkpoint and the store, he was wearing camouflage trousers and a t-shirt. The witness stated that he still has a scar from his gunshot wound and showed it to the court.

The witness explained that he was taken to a checkpoint by the Old Bridge. The checkpoint was on the road, and he was in an empty area where you could see under the bridge, but they were not under the bridge. There was an office building, which he thought had a downstairs, an upstairs and a staircase. He did not know whether the building still exists today.

Civilian 77 testified that the man that was executed in front of him by the water was killed by the Gibril or Gabriel himself, who shot him. He stated that the man was behind them, he heard a gunshot and when he turned around, he saw what had happened. Angel Gabriel had taken the man away from the rest of the group. The witness stated that the soldiers were speaking Sierra Leonean English, and Angel Gabriel was speaking the same way.

The witness had not heard any news about an arrest in Finland before his police interview. The commander was called Chief Gibril and Chief Angel Gabriel by his soldiers.

The defense questions Civilian 77

The defense began by asking Civilian 77 about the names of other soldiers or commanders present. The witness could not remember the names of anyone else other than Angel Gabriel. The defense referred to the police investigation, where the witness had used the names Chief Gibril and Angel Michael. He responded, saying that he remembered saying this but that he had made a mistake as the commander's name was Gabriel and not Michael. He explained that the commander called himself Angel Gabriel and said "tell God I sent you" when he killed the man by the river. He further stated that he might have mixed up the names Gabriel and Michael as they are both angels. According to Civilian 77, the men who arrived to release the captured people were from the ATU and one of them was called [REDACTED].

The defense pointed out that at his police interview, he had said that the bridge at the time was called New Bridge and is now called Old Bridge. He clarified that it was called Old Bridge at the time and is now called New Bridge. He did not remember if the building next to it had a roof. He had not gone inside, but he knew that there was an office inside as the soldiers went in and came back out saying that they were going inside to take statements. The witness did not know from whom the statements were taken or what they were about.

Civilian 77 then testified about how the Finnish police contacted him. His friend called one day and said that he knew what had happened to him at Waterside, and that there were people that wanted to talk to victims about the events. This friend had met someone at a teashop talking about the matter. He was frightened at first, but his friend managed to convince him to meet with the person that he had met in the teashop. The witness then travelled into the city to meet with this man, who asked whether he would like to talk about his experiences. This man was Employee 1, who asked Civilian 77 for his phone number and whether he would be willing to meet with the people who "followed the story" about Waterside. After that, Employee 1 took Civilian 77 to meet the Finnish police. The witness did not know any of the other people that were interviewed by the police around the same time as him.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Civilian 69 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 69

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 69 about an incident where soldiers captured him in Monrovia. The witness explained that he was 15 or 16 years old at the time and was living in Paynesville with his grandmother. One day, he went to the center to buy goods for their business. When he arrived in Waterside, the whole place was "upside down" and shop owners were closing their stores. He was captured and put into an empty store with a lot of people. Among them, there were soldiers in uniform, some of them were not Liberians, which he could tell from the way they spoke. People were called from the store, he heard gunshots, and these people did not return. The soldiers doing the killing were not Liberian, the witness could tell this from the way that they spoke.

As more and more people were taken out of the store, a man who knew the witness's grandmother recognized him. He made space for the witness and some other young people in the store, looking for a way to help them escape. The man took them to the bridge. They stayed there until late, but the shooting just went on. Later, they all ran away.

Civilian 69 was captured in Waterside, by the store they used to buy biscuits and other things from and they were put inside. They were captured by soldiers who were arresting everyone outside by the store. He saw a person giving orders and deduced that he was the commander. The leader gave an order to call out people from the store and kill them. When giving orders, the commander used the name Angel and said: "Tell God I sent you." Civilian 69 did not know if that was his only name or what his full name was. According to the witness, the commander was not Liberian, because the English that he spoke was different to Liberian English.

The witness further explained that the man who recognized him helped him escape and he then ran to the bridge. The bridge was not far as they could still hear gunfire. It was called Old Bridge. He confirmed that he went to Waterside alone that day. He explained that there was fighting ongoing in Liberia as schools were closed, but there was no fighting in that area at the time. He did not know if any of the battles had a specific name. He did not know the names of any of the people that were ordered to go out of the store to the front and never returned. He had not heard about a person being arrested in Finland before his police interview.

The defense questions Civilian 69

The defense began by asking about Civilian 69's age, as he had testified in the lower court that he was 10 or 11 at the time of the events. The witness explained that when you are born in rural areas, you don't know your real age, but after the court hearing, he had gone to his grandmother and she had told him. He could not provide the exact location of the store that he went to that day, as different people are now doing business there. The witness testified that people were looting the store when he arrived, but he did not participate in it. The defense referred to the police interview, where he had said that he had gone to a store with no one selling and took goods from there. Civilian 69 answered that he did not remember saying that. Next, the defense pointed out that he had said that soldiers had come and captured people and were putting them

all in one place. He confirmed this, saying that people were captured and put in another store nearby.

Civilian 69 explained that the store that they were taken to wasn't far away from the store that they were captured from. The part of the store that he saw was empty. The defense referred to the police interview, where he had said that the store was selling used clothes and slippers. The witness explained that he used to buy clothes and slippers from that store, but at the time it was empty. He also testified that the commander said "go tell God that I, sent you". After the people who had escaped left the store, all they could hear was noise.

Next, the witness specified that the hole at the back of the store was a back door. He could not remember the name of the person who had helped him. The defense raised that he had mentioned two different names for this person at his police interview and at the lower court. He answered that he did not know the person and sometimes people might call one person with different names. According to Civilian 69 this is common, as for example someone might have one name in the city, and another one if they move out of the city. He testified that the only name he could remember was Angel. Some people were talking about Gabriel: "They were calling names, only now I can remember, but other people were calling Angel Gabriel, but only Angel I could remember".

Next, there was discussion as to the year in which the events took place, and whether the police had told the witness the year during his interview. The witness recalled and confirmed that it took place in World War II. He could not remember or confirm the month or whether it took place in 2001 or 2002. He was certain that the incident did not happen in 2003, as in 2003 he and his mother moved back to the village.

Civilian 69 was also asked how the Finnish police contacted him. He testified that he was at a video club where he places bets and someone was talking. He does not know who this person was. The defense raised that he had told the Finnish police that he had the same first name as Civilian 62. Civilian 69 responded that he was chatting at the video club and that's how he got in contact with this person. After placing their bets, this person said that there were some people who wanted to meet him. He stated that he could not remember whether they had spoken about Angel at the video club.

The witness testified that after meeting this person at the video club, he met with Employee 1, who told him about the Finnish people interested in the matter, at the video club. The defense referred to Employee 1's notebook that had been admitted as written evidence. The notebook contained a note that seems to be about Civilian 69. He had written the year 2003 under his name and names of various people involved in the Second Liberian civil war. Civilian 69 testified that these names were high-ranking, famous people such as Chief Fifty. He confirmed that he had spoken about such names with Employee 1, as they were "ringing at the time". He also mentioned that he did not "spell out the names to him". The witness testified that he spoke to Employee 1 about the names that were making headlines during the war. He told these names to Employee 1, who wrote them down. Regarding the year 2003, Civilian 69 could only think of the fact that he had returned to the village that year. He testified that "it took time" after meeting with Employee 1 before he was interviewed by the Finnish police.

Finally, Civilian 69 repeated that the man who had saved him that day was called by different names but stated that he called him [REDACTED]. He did not know what happened to him

afterwards, he was alive when they last saw each other. The defense referred to the police interview, where he had said that someone with that same name had been shot in the back. Civilian 69 testified that he cannot remember all the events from Waterside and he could not remember whether he had said so in the police interview.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

February 15, 2023 – Day 14: Shooting in a store

The Court heard three more witnesses today in relation to events in Waterside, Monrovia. The first witness described seeing civilians being detained in the Waterside market area and taken under the Old Bridge. Here, the witness added that civilians were killed and raped by soldiers. The witness testified to being assaulted and robbed by a child soldier belonging to the same group.

The second witness explained how they had gone to Waterside market, to buy rice. They described being in an unattended shop with other civilians who were also looking for food, soldiers fired into the store. The soldiers detained the survivors, including the witness, in a building by the Old Bridge. The witness added that the soldiers' commander killed children and allowed his troops to rape women.

In the final testimony of the day, the third witness described a similar chain of events.

The Court will not be in session tomorrow, and is scheduled to continue hearings on Friday, 17 February.

February 15, 2023 [Liberia] Day 14: Shooting in a store

[*editor's note: for the sake of clarity, some details about the testimonies are explained in brackets*]

Witness Civilian 68 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 68

The prosecution began by asking about Civilian 68's wartime experiences in Monrovia. Civilian 68 testified that she used to come to Monrovia to buy used clothes from Waterside during World Wars I and II. The witness testified that she had gone to Waterside to buy clothes. She went to her usual store and saw some people going towards the bridge and other people under the bridge. She saw a "group of soldier boys" and another man standing to the side of the area under the bridge. As she entered the store, she saw soldiers taking girls and bringing them to a building. She was very scared and began to turn back, when soldiers came, grabbed two boys and took them under the bridge. There was a man standing there wearing army trousers and a white shirt. This man shot one of the boys, raised his gun and shot the air saying: "I am Angel Gabriel, when you go to God, tell God I sent you". He then killed the other boy.

According to Civilian 68, this man was not Liberian as he spoke like a Sierra Leonean. She explained that as she turned around, a man come towards her, saying that his name was Small Soldier. He hit her on the head with his gun, she fell to the ground and he demanded she give him her money. After she had fallen, some other boys took her to a pharmacy on Coleman Hill, where she was treated. According to the witness, "the soldier boys said they will come back for us." She managed to escape, and saw soldiers putting people on pickup trucks and taking them away. She didn't know where they were being taken. Civilian 68 left Monrovia after this incident and didn't return until after the war.

The witness could not estimate how long it took after World War II for peace to arrive. The bridge she had described with people underneath it was called Old Bridge and went towards Slipway. There was a biscuit store near the bridge. Civilian 68 explained that she was not captured by the soldiers but they captured others who they raped and did horrible things to. The soldier who confronted her only wanted her money.

Civilian 68 was asked to describe where the biscuit store was located. She stated that it was located on the right when looking from Old Bridge towards Waterside. It was "not that far" from the bridge. When she saw people being taken under the bridge, she had just gotten out of the car coming from Sinkor. She was quite far from the biscuit store, but was near the bridge and could see under it.

The witness confirmed that she had seen Angel Gabriel shoot one of the boys with her own eyes. As Angel Gabriel shot, he said that he would send the people to God and turned around to look at the group of people behind him. Civilian 68 did not know the name of the boy who was shot. Angel Gabriel killed both of the boys by shooting them with a pistol and had said that he sent them to God.

She also described the wound she had gotten from the soldier who hit her in the head and showed it to the court. According to the witness, the boys who took her to the pharmacy were the ones from the store where she was going to do her shopping. She did not know their names. She was shopping that day with her friend. Her friend also fell but otherwise did not suffer any injuries.

Civilian 68 had not heard any news about someone being arrested in Finland in relation to the events in Waterside. She had only discussed the events in a car. She was in a car on her way back from Waterside with a man who was discussing what happened there in 2002 and 2003, who said that people were coming to Liberia because of these events. He then asked the other passengers if they knew anything about them. The witness showed him her scar and told him that she was there. This man then gave Civilian 68's phone number to Employee 1. Two days later, Employee 1 called her and asked if she was present in Waterside during these events. Employee 1 came to meet her. She tried to ask what this all was about, but he would not tell her. He only asked if she could tell her experience to others who might want to ask her but wouldn't give her any more details than that.

The defense questions Civilian 68

The defense began by asking Civilian 68 how long after meeting Employee 1 she met with the Finnish police. She estimated that it took 1 or 2 months before he called her again to say that the people were coming. She could not tell where exactly the two boys that were killed under the bridge had been shot, she only saw Angel Gabriel kill them. She estimated that she was quite close to the boys when they were shot, she was on a hill by the checkpoint, and could see directly under the bridge.

Civilian 68 had heard different names for soldiers in addition to Angel Gabriel, such as Quick to Kill and Small Soldier. She explained that the soldiers called each other these names as they were capturing people. She did not hear any other soldier besides Angel Gabriel introduce himself. The witness heard Angel Gabriel's name as he said it out loud when he killed the two boys, he did not introduce himself to her personally. She did not hear any other name being used for him. The

defense referred to her police interview, where the witness had said that others called him Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Michael, which she confirmed. She explained that the people who called him Gibril Massaquoi were those who knew him personally, and other people in the crowd. She described that when he killed, called himself Angel Michael, and people said his real name was Gibril Massaquoi. The witness confirmed that she heard him call himself Angel Michael.

Civilian 68 had also mentioned the name Zigzag Marzah. She explained that she was unsure of this name, thinking that Zigzag Marzah was Gibril Massaquoi, but that this was a mistake as they are not the same person. According to Civilian 68, the only time she had spoken about the events was when she was in the car with [REDACTED] on the way back from Waterside. In the lower court, she had also said that she had spoken about the events with her friends who had commented on her scar, which she confirmed.

Next, there was more lengthy discussion as to the names used by the man who killed the two boys. The witness said that he used the name Angel Gabriel and said that she had never said Angel Michael. The defense played an audio clip of her police interview where she had used the name Angel Michael. The witness explained that she had said that the man used the name Angel Michael, but she then corrected herself and used the name Angel Gabriel. The recording was played once more and no further questions were asked on this issue.

Civilian 68 further testified that she was not far from Angel Gabriel when she saw the killings take place. She was by the checkpoint and could see the bridge ahead. The people she saw were under the bridge, a little bit to the side. The witness was also asked about the timing of the events. She said that it took place during World Wars I-III, so between 2001 and 2003. The defense referred to the police interview, where she had said that the incident took place in January or February 2001, during World War I. Civilian 68 answered that she had indeed said that the incident took place during World Wars I and II. When the same question was repeated, she testified that that it must have been a mistake. The defense referred also to the lower court's judgment, where she had testified that the incident took place in the middle of 2001. Civilian 68 confirmed that the incident took place in the middle of the year, in June, as she had come to do shopping for July 26. Finally, the witness testified that World War I took place in 2001, World War II in 2002 and World War III in 2003.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

Witness Civilian 62 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 62

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 62 about an incident where he was captured by soldiers in Waterside. The witness testified that he was fourteen years old at the time. His older brother used to sell food in Waterside. He had given the witness money to buy rice. When he got to the rice store, he realized that he had lost the money. As he was standing there working out what to do, he heard the noise of a store being broken into. Everyone around him started running to the store to get food, as there was a shortage at the time. The witness also went into the store to get rice, as he could not return to his brother empty-handed. As he entered, the store was full of people grabbing different things such as biscuits. Civilian 62 took one of the remaining rice bags and a person next to him started to fight him for it. While they were in the middle of the store,

they saw three vehicles arrive. A man jumped out of the vehicle and gave an order to "shoot anybody coming out with food".

According to Civilian 62, the soldiers lined up in front of the store and opened fire. They continued firing for approximately three and half minutes. The witness hid behind the rice bag that he and the other guy had been fighting over. After the firing stopped, the man outside ordered the soldiers to go and check inside the store. He ordered: "anybody you see alive, bring them outside". The soldiers began inspecting the store and the bodies on the ground. Civilian 62 was captured from the store. As the soldiers were taking people outside, he saw his older brother who had given him the money to buy the rice being taken outside by the soldiers. There were also elderly people, women with children on their backs, young boys and girls present in the store. The soldiers told the people to put their hands behind their backs and to get into vehicles. One person tried to resist, but "this guy" took his pistol and shot him. This made everyone else hurry to the vehicles. The young children and the woman with a baby in her back were put in a different vehicle. Then the commander, the man who had given the order to fire, ordered to take the people away and said "tell them that I, Angel Gabriel, sent them".

According to the witness, the car with the women and children was told to drive to Old Bridge. Civilian 62 stopped in front of an unfinished house, where they were ordered out of the car. They entered the building and sat on the ground. As they were sitting there, the commander told his men that they could take any one of the girls and "have fun with them", and that he would take one himself. A girl that was sat next to Civilian 62 started to cry and resist and the commander took a pistol and shot her dead. She fell to Civilian 62's lap. The witness testified that he was shaking with fear, as this was the first time someone had fallen dead into his arms. The same man walked up to the witness and asked if he wanted to see God: "I started shivering, and I told him no". The girls were taken away, one girl was still shouting and fighting the soldiers. She was taken away and Civilian 62 could hear a gunshot. He testified that he does not know what happened to the girl, but after that he did not hear any more shouting.

Civilian 62 further testified that he asked one of the girls next to him why the man was called Angel Gabriel, "because he is not doing anything that represents God". The girl explained that Angel Gabriel's real name is Gibril Massaquoi, he thinks of himself as the messenger of death, and "when he says you will die today and go see your Father, no one else will stop you, you will be killed, if he says you will be killed today, just say your last prayer, because he calls himself Angel Gabriel". The girl also mentioned the names of other people present, saying that one person's war name was Superman whose his real name was Zigzag Massaquoi, and General Mosquito, whose real name was Sam or Bockarie or Sam Bockarie. The girl then explained to Civilian 62 how soldiers would sometimes break into stores and as women would run into them to get food, the soldiers would get them.

The witness then described that there was another girl there, who said that she knew this Zigzag Massaquoi man. According to the witness, she was in great pain, and they were from the same area, so she wanted to say things that he would remember. She called him by his name Massaquoi and said: "People that you can call your mother, your daughters, your sisters, people are raping them all in the name of you fighting war?". According to Civilian 62, Angel Gabriel came and told her to "shut up" and began to take his gun. This is how Zigzag Massaquoi / Superman knew that he knew this girl and the two soldiers began to struggle. Both were wearing a Liberian uniform. According to Civilian 62 they were fighting because any time Angel Gabriel would take his gun into his hands, someone would die. As the two men were fighting, the witness

heard a car outside. A man came with a “full uniform” who started to ask the two men what they were doing and why they had brought children there, exclaiming : “This was not the reason I brought you here, I brought you people here to fight the war, and not to kill innocent people”. He began to inspect the building and saw the dead body of the girl. He started shouting that this was not the reason he had brought them there, for killing innocent people, and told Civilian 62 and others to go away. As the witness made it out of the building, he heard people using the name Chief Fifty, but he did not know his real name.

Civilian 62 was asked about his older brother, he confirmed that it was his biological brother. According to the witness, the store that was broken into was in Waterside, not too far from Old Bridge, about two and half minutes walking distance. When looking from Old Bridge, the store was located in the middle of an intersection. He testified that the man who stepped out of the vehicle at the store was Gibril Massaquoi and his war name was Angel Gabriel: he used the name Angel Gabriel, and the girl had told him that his name is Gibril Massaquoi.

According to Civilian 62, the soldiers were in front of the store and shooting inside of it. Many people died as a result. He stated that he was surprised to see his brother, as he had left him earlier when he had given him money. He described how his brother was put on a pickup and taken away. Angel Gabriel said that the people should say that he had sent them. Civilian 62 testified that he has not seen his brother since.

The witness stated the man who killed the person who was resisting at the store was the commander, Angel Gabriel. Civilian 62 saw him kill the man with his own eyes. The same man was giving orders at the building by the bridge. The witness did not know the girl whose dead body fell into his lap. The other girl next to him was called [REDACTED], she knew the names of the soldiers as she did business in Waterside at the time. Both of them were there until Fifty came and “started blasting to free us”. At the time of this incident, there was fighting ongoing against LURD rebels. The witness explained that the fighting was behind Duala around the Bong Mines Bridge leading to Brewersville and that there was not heavy shooting in the city. According to Civilian 62, after this incident there was still fighting ongoing. LURD would come and attack. This incident took place in 2001.

Civilian 62 stated that Angel Gabriel was not Liberian, which he knew from his accent, which was Sierra Leonean. He had not heard any news about someone being arrested in Finland in relation to the Waterside events before his interview with the Finnish police.

The defense questions Civilian 62

The defense began by asking about the other soldiers whose names were told to the witness by the girl under the bridge. Civilian 62 testified that Superman, aka Zigzag Massaquoi and General Mosquito, aka Sam Bockarie were with Angel Gabriel at the store, but he only found out their names from the girl under the bridge. According to Civilian 62, the girl was also at the store, they were both inside when the shooting began. Zigzag Massaquoi took orders from Angel Gabriel at the store. All three of them were together. He did not hear Sam Bockarie say anything, as Angel Gabriel was the one giving orders. As Civilian 62 and the others were taken from the store to the bridge, these three soldiers were together in a different car. The only time Civilian 62 heard Zigzag Massaquoi speak was when the girl next to him started talking about the killing and raping of innocent people. According to Civilian 62, Zigzag Massaquoi thought the girl was referring to him, so when Angel Gabriel took out his gun, Zigzag started to defend he as he was also Liberian.

All soldiers present were wearing a Liberian uniform, but a conflict ensued between those supporting Zigzag Massaquoi and those supporting the other group.

Civilian 62 testified that the uniform the soldiers were wearing was the ATU uniform at the time. It had the colors of the Liberian flag in the sleeve. The uniforms had a collar, it was colored in "army color", with green, brown and other colors.

The witness was also asked how the Finnish police had contacted him. He testified that he was reached via his friend who he thinks is Civilian 05. He was watching a football match at a video club, when people starting talking about commanders and other people who took part in the civil war. One person said 'let bygones be bygones', and another said 'whatever you do, you have to pay for it'. Civilian 62 joined the conversation and recalled his experience, saying that 'if you had experienced war, you would never say that someone should get away with it'. Civilian 05, who was listening to the conversation, approached him. He asked him if his story was true and then asked for his phone number. He then said that people will be in contact. Civilian 05 did not call him afterwards and had not mentioned that someone was a suspect in a case about the events. He took his number and said that he would get a call from somebody because he himself couldn't talk about such things. A few days later, Employee 1 called and told Civilian 62 that someone gave him his number. Employee 1 told him that he was the best person to talk about something to people that were coming to discuss these issues. After a while, Employee 1 called Civilian 62 again to tell him that the people had arrived and he should come and talk about his experience.

The witness testified that Employee 1 did not tell him the name of the suspect and that he had not heard the suspect's name anywhere when he came to meet the Finnish police. When he was explaining his story at the video club, he had mentioned the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel, which sparked Civilian 05's interest. The defense referred to Civilian 62's police interview, where he had told the police that Civilian 05 had called him and told him that the Waterside suspect was Gabriel Massaquoi. Civilian 62 denied saying this. The defense then played an audio recording of his interview multiple times, as it was not entirely clear. Finally, Civilian 62 responded that at the video club, he had mentioned the name Angel Gabriel and Civilian 05 had mentioned the name Gibril Massaquoi, but that did not mean that he had not heard it before.

Finally, Civilian 62 testified that the incident took place in 2001. He denied knowing Civilian 69, despite the the fact that the police reported to have contacted Civilian 69 through him, and that Civilian 69 spoke of a friend with the same name as him. The witness responded that many people have the same name. He also stated that the man called Zigzag Massaquoi spoke like a Liberian.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Civilian 61 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 61

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 61 about an incident where soldiers captured her in Monrovia. The witness testified that during the war, she lived in Paynesville and did business buying and selling goods. One day, her and her friends went to Waterside market to make

purchases. Her usual shopping spot was closed. Her friends told her that soldiers had broken into a store and were selling things from there, so the witness, her sister and some other women decided to go there. As they arrived, there was a big crowd of armed men and other people going in and out and out of the store, bringing out different things. As they were entering the store, a pickup came and soldiers got out. Another pickup arrived came, a man stepped out and gave an order to fire. The men started shooting in the air and Civilian 61 and her friends ran away. The men began to shoot at people and people were hit, including Civilian 61's sister. When she went to help her, she was already dead. There was a large group of armed men shooting randomly all over the place, and another pick up arrived. The situation was chaotic, and Civilian 61 and others was captured.

As they were captured, another group of men took them under a bridge. There was a small house under the bridge, where people were raped and killed. Civilian 61 testified that she saw the same commander and his men who had been by the store. There was also another group of soldiers, the commander told his men that the people that had been captured should be taken away and that they should tell God that Angel Gabriel sent them. Many people were killed there. Then, she saw a boy she knew and started crying. The boy asked her what she was doing there and Civilian 61 answered that she came to do shopping. The boy took her with him towards West Point and told her to run.

Civilian 61 testified that the store was located on the right coming from Freeport and on the left when coming from Sinkor. Many people died during the shooting at the store, but she could not count them at the time. The man who gave the order to fire spoke like a Sierra Leonean. Liberians and some other people called him Angel Gabriel and he was also called Gibril Massaquoi. He was standing on the pickup and gave the order. The witness heard the names Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi under the bridge, when he was killing people. He had said "when you go meet God, tell him that I, Angel Gabriel, sent you". The witness repeated that people were killed and raped under the bridge. Some were taken aside, and some were taken into the house.

The witness described how she was first taken under the bridge and as the soldiers were told to escort the people that had been captured, she recognized one of the boys and he helped her. She explained that she was not taken inside the house, but she saw people being taken there. She could not estimate the distance of the house from the bridge, but said that it was not far from the bridge or the store.

According to Civilian 61, she saw the same commander under the bridge whom she had seen at the store. He was giving orders when she got there. He said that "when you meet God, tell him that Angel Gabriel sent you". She testified that the commander used the name Angel Gabriel himself and she heard his soldiers call him Gibril Massaquoi. He was wearing "soldier trousers" and a white shirt. She described how most of the soldiers who were with Angel Gabriel spoke similarly to him, in 'Sierra Leonean' or 'Nigerian'. Some of them were also speaking like Liberians.

Civilian 61 testified that the war was called World Wars I, II and III Government forces were fighting LURD and sometimes LURD would come and attack, then they would leave and things would go back to normal before the next attack. The fighting was ongoing in Duala, almost in Monrovia. She explained that she was not in the area when the war ended as she left for Nimba after the incident, only returning after the war. The war did not continue for long after these events. The witness speculated that the bridge was called Waterside Bridge and Old Bridge at the time.

Civilian 61 testified that she had heard about someone being arrested by the Finnish police in relation to the Waterside events before her police interview. The father of the children called her and said that there had been a discussion at a tea shop about the events in Waterside. He had met a man there and told him that his wife had been involved as a victim. He gave the man Civilian 61's number. A few days after, Employee 1 called Civilian 61 and told her that the Waterside incident is connected to Finland. He said that people were on their way to investigate the matter and asked if Civilian 61 would like to speak with her. The witness then added "I don't like to talk about it. It reminds me of my sister every time". She confirmed that Employee 1 did not mention any details about the matter. She also confirmed that her sister who died in Waterside was her biological sister, and that had not heard any news about the arrest before that phone call.

The defense questions Civilian 61

The defense first asked whether Civilian 61 had heard the names of other soldiers at the scene besides Angel Gabriel. The witness could name Black Jesus but said she couldn't really remember. She stated that she would not be able to recognize Black Jesus, that this name was mentioned at the time. She named one of the friends that she was with at Waterside. She could not recall the names of the other women, or of the boy who saved her at the bridge. The defense referred to her police interview, where she had said that this man's name was [REDACTED], who she had dated previously. The witness confirmed this name and testified that she dated him a long time ago.

Civilian 61 was also asked if she had given the contact information for any other witnesses to the police. She testified that she mentioned the name of [REDACTED] when she was asked about this issue earlier. The Finnish police had reported that Civilian 61 had given Civilian 73's contact information, but she said that she could not remember this person. The witness stated that she met Employee 1 when the police arrived. After he had called her, it took some time before the police interview. The defense referred to Employee 1's notebook, where the year 2003 had been written next to Civilian 61's name and asked her if she had spoken of this year with Employee 1. She responded that this is something that they should ask Employee 1 himself. The defense also asked about the fact that the year appears to have been altered into 2001 in the notebook, she repeated that they should ask Employee 1 about it.

Finally, Civilian 61 explained that when she spoke of the soldiers escorting her and others, it means that they were being escorted to death: "It means to kill people".

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

February 17, 2023 – Day 15: Soldiers in court

The last day of the second week of proceedings in Monrovia saw the Court hear two soldiers about their participation in the Second Liberian Civil War.

The first witness served during the war in the Armed Forces of Liberia. He described the co-operation between official government troops and the RUF, who crossed from Sierra Leone to Liberia during the war. Later, when he was in Monrovia, he witnessed a battle against LURD rebels and the alleged atrocities committed by RUF troops.

The second witness was an RUF fighter during the war. He described his experience of crossing from Sierra Leone to Liberia and the killings of civilians in Lofa county by RUF forces. He also talked about being in Monrovia, where he was placed in Waterside. He recounted witnessing similar battles and atrocities as described by the first witness.

While the witnesses described somewhat similar events, the precise timing of their testimonies was the subject of a lot of discussion in the Court. The Court shall resume hearings next week.

February 17, 2023 [Liberia] Day 15: Soldiers in court

Witness Soldier 13 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 13

The prosecution began by asking about Soldier 13's participation in the Second Liberian civil war. He testified that he joined the revolution in 1990, when he was 15 years old. He got to the rank of colonel in the NPFL. During World War II, in 2001, he was stationed in Lofa county, and moved to Monrovia when the war moved there. His chief of staff was Roland Duo of the Navy division. Other commanders within the government forces included General Fasou, Jack the Rebel and others. LURD was also present in Lofa. There were also troops from Sierra Leone, they were from the RUF. According to Soldier 13, the RUF was in Lofa because ECOWAS had attacked them, they moved into Liberia from Sierra Leone and Charles Taylor had ordered Soldier 13's troop to join the conflict.

Soldier 13 testified that he saw RUF troops between Lofa and the Sierra Leonean border. He was responsible for the border area between Foya, in Liberia, and Konia, in Sierra Leone. He saw RUF troops in a small village there. Initially, when the RUF troops arrived at the border, they prevented them from entering Liberia. Later, they received information that the RUF had a leader. The witness then named a few of the RUF leaders: the late Sam Bockarie, who was the deputy director of Issa and a spokesman, Gibril Massquoi. According to Soldier 13, the spokesman "had on full uniform, and his arm, and he was introduced as spokesman for the RUF". Sam Bockarie introduced him to Benjamin Yeaten as the RUF's speaker, and whenever he came to Monrovia, he would need to be protected. The witness testified to seeing Gibril Massaquoi in Kortohun and Foya by the border. The RUF had a base in Kortohun. He also confirmed that he saw Gibril Massaquoi with his own eyes in Lofa.

According to Soldier 13, a few months after the RUF arrived, "a lot of things went on" and they blamed the Liberian government troops. He explained that civilians were killed in Kortohun. The

RUF used to come from Sierra Leone to Vahun by helicopter. They used to come to Lofa, but then, at the time of Kabbah's presidency, ECOWAS was attacking the RUF in Sierra Leone. Soldier 13 stated that he knew Sam Bockarie aka Mosquito and Gibril Massaquoi from 1999 to 2000. They used to come to Lofa by helicopter and used this route to come to Monrovia. As Johnny Paul Koroma seized power from Tejan Kabbah, he invited the RUF to Freetown. A few months after that, ECOWAS attacked Freetown and pushed them to the border, where the Liberians prevented their entry. Later, they received word from Monrovia and let them into Liberia.

Soldier 13 testified that LURD attacked in 2001, they were not official troops, but dissidents, and had no structure. When they retreated, Soldier 13's force was ordered to take the RUF to Kortohun. A lot of things took place and civilians were harassed. Killings also took place and Charles Taylor ordered Benjamin Yeaten to find out what was going on. Because of these events in Kortohun, the government forces "moved on them and surrounded" the RUF, taking three of their leaders to Monrovia. The civilians fled and some went to Gbarnga. According to the witness, it was the RUF that was killing civilians in Kortohun as they had their base there, and were in control of the area from Kortohun to Vahun. The three leaders taken to Monrovia were Sam Bockarie, Issa and Jublee Massaquoi. The latter had a full military uniform and an AK-47, Soldier 13 saw it with his own eyes. Soldier 13 explained that in Liberia they called him Gabriel, and in Sierra Leone he was called Jublee. He was the spokesman.

The witness explained that World War II and LURD came in 2002. When the three RUF leaders were arrested and brought to Monrovia, the remaining RUF troops in Lofa were divided into different units and Liberian government troops took command of them. Soldier 13 saw Gibril Massaquoi in Monrovia. The RUF leaders had a base in the EJ Roye building in 2001. Benjamin Yeaten also had his base there, the witness had been there to fetch ammunition from him. He confirmed that he saw Gibril Massaquoi, Sam Bockarie, Issa and Salami in Waterside. He explained that a lot of killing went on in Waterside and "the president was "confused". He described an incident that took place "coming into Waterside from Mechlin Street, there's a road off Johanssen that goes to West Point. Another road goes straight to the bridge leading to Vai Town. And if you take the Johanssen side road to West Point, there is a shop". During the war, "civilians can come out to get food and other things, we call it looting". Government forces were on the bridge at the time. As Salami and Jubilee Massaquoi saw the looting, they opened fire. Many people died and the commander of Waterside had people arrested. There were complaints and Salami was arrested and taken to Benjamin Yeaten at the EJ Roye building. Soldier 13 testified that he never saw Gibril after that and later, Salami was killed by a rocket on the bridge. The bridge where the government troops were stationed and where Salami was killed was called Gabriel Trucker Bridge and led to Vai Town and had an island underneath.

The witness testified that he saw the dead bodies after Salami and Gibril opened fire on the looters. The information was relayed to Benjamin Yeaten, who said that the aqbah were killing Liberian citizens. The witness confirmed that he saw the shooting himself. They had a machine gun mounted on a pickup in Waterside. At the time, in 2002 or 2003, there were heavy battles ongoing in Monrovia, they were called World Wars I, II and III. After Salami's death, Soldier 13 did not see Gibril again. Salami was killed by a rocket when there was fighting against LURD. At the time, the fighting was ongoing between Vai Town and the bridge, where people used to sell. The witness estimated that the rocket was fired from the direction of Freeport. The government troops were near the city center and the rebels were coming from the Duala, Freeport. According to Soldier 13, the RUF had troops in Monrovia until the end of the war. They were spread all over,

in Nimba and Lofa counties. When the RUF left Lofa, Sam Bockarie was ordered towards Nimba and he stayed there until he died.

The witness estimated that it was not long after Salami's death on the bridge that peace came. The three RUF leaders, Sam Bockarie, Sesay and Gibril/Jublee Massaquoi came to Monrovia at the same time. Soldier 13's troop handed them over to Benjamin Yeaten and then went back to Lofa.

The defense questions Soldier 13

The defense began by asking Soldier 13 how many times he met Massaquoi in Lofa county. The witness responded that he met him three times, with the third time in Kortohun. The three RUF leaders used to move together, and Foday Sankoh had already been arrested. According to Soldier 13, Massaquoi came to Liberia in 1999. He went straight to Monrovia and lived at KissFM in Congo Town, near Taylor's house. The next time he saw him was in Lofa in 2001, when RUF troops were pushed there by Tejan Kabbah. He could not estimate the month or season but knew that fighting was ongoing at the time and then Johnny Paul Koroma invited the RUF to Freetown. In 2001, Soldier 13 saw Massaquoi at the border crossing in Konohun, where a road goes from Sierra Leone to Lofa. The RUF went through Lofa because they were pushed out of Sierra Leone by international forces and wanted protection from them. After Lofa, Soldier 13 saw Massaquoi in Waterside when Roland Duo told them to move towards Monrovia. When the RUF crossed the border into Liberia, Soldier 13 had been instructed to take them to Kortohun and all the way to Vahun. He could not tell for how long Massaquoi remained in Vahun until he came to Monrovia because he himself was fighting.

The third time the witness saw Massaquoi in Lofa was when the massacre happened in Kortohun. Soldier 13 was ordered to Kortohun and he saw the three RUF leaders there. That time, Massaquoi had arrived in Liberia from Sierra Leone as the international troops had pushed the RUF and Sierra Leonean junta into Liberia. Sam Bockarie was leading the RUF troops in Lofa county. Gibril Massaquoi was the spokesman and Issa was Sam Bockarie's deputy. The defense referred to the witness's lower court's testimony, where he had said that Issa Sesay had never come to Liberia. Soldier 13 denied this and said that he had said that all three of them came to Liberia.

Soldier 13 further testified that Johnny Paul Koroma came with the RUF leaders to Liberia and disappeared in Lofa. The witness was not there, but he saw that Johnny Paul Koroma did not come to Monrovia with the RUF leaders. He was later told that Koroma was missing and that he had been killed. He could not say who might have been behind Koroma's killing but stated that there were rumors that Gibril Massaquoi might have had something to do with it. He repeated that he was not there himself, but said that something happened between Koroma, Sam Bockarie and Gibril Massaquoi. The witness estimated that Koroma died or disappeared during the ceasefire, going into 2002. The defense referred to his lower court testimony, where he had said that Johnny Paul Koroma was killed on the same day of the massacre in Lofa. The witness responded that he was killed in the same Kortohun area and that Gabriel Massaquoi and Sam Bockarie had "masterminded" it. He had found out about it from his troops who were on duty in the area. He had not heard that Johnny Paul Koroma had run in the 2002 Sierra Leonean presidential elections.

The witness testified that he came to Monrovia during World War I in 2001. It was the first war that came to Monrovia from Duala and the first time that LURD troops came. He estimated that the first time he saw Massaquoi in Monrovia was in 2000, when Foday Sankoh had been arrested. At the time, Massaquoi was the spokesman for the RUF and living in Congo Town, right by KissFM. He also saw Massaquoi in Waterside in connection with the massacre by the store and in EJ Roye building, where he received ammunition from Benjamin Yeaten. According to Soldier 13, there was a short time between these two meetings with Massaquoi, not even two weeks passed. Soldier 13 was himself stationed by the bridge, near West Point. During those two weeks, he saw Bockarie, Massaquoi and Salami, they had the pickup stationed by the bridge. He confirmed that he saw them once with the pickup and the weapon mounted on it, that was when Benjamin Yeaten was told that aqbah is killing Liberians. He described that Salami was shooting the gun that was mounted on the pick-up, and that there was a soldier with them in the car. He described that there were a lot of death at the shop. He stated that "I cannot tell you whether it was 5 persons or 100 persons, but the whole abba group was shooting". His own station was not far from the scene.

According to Soldier 13, Sam Bockarie was ordered to Nimba county, towards the border with Ivory Coast. He had some aqbah soldiers with him. He had seen Bockarie at Twelve Houses, where he lived, at a time when there was no fighting going on in Monrovia. He also testified that he had seen Bockarie in Waterside. The last time he saw Massaquoi in Monrovia was in late 2001 or early 2002, around World War I. The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that in 2003 Massaquoi and Salami were killing civilians in Waterside. Soldier 13 denied this in court and said that in 2003 Taylor left the country and Gibril Massaquoi was not in Liberia at that time.

Soldier 13 asserted that he had not discussed issues relating to Massaquoi with anyone between his police interview and his hearing at the lower court. The defense referred to his previous testimonies, as he had told the police that Massaquoi was chief of operations but in the lower court said that he was the spokesman. He denied saying that Massaquoi was the chief of operations. The court then listened to the audio recording of his police interview, where he told the police that he had made a mistake saying that Gibril Massaquoi was the chief of operations as he had discussed the issue and had found out that he was not. Soldier 13 commented by saying that indeed he had said the first time that Gibril was part of the operative leadership, but then he spoke with other people that he had previously fought with and corrected himself later. He could not say whether any of the people he spoke with had been heard as witnesses in this trial.

The witness was asked how the Finnish police had gotten in contact with him. He testified that he met one of his old friends from the military and said that people were coming from Finland and they wanted to know about the war from 1990 and Sierra Leone's war. Soldier 13 gave him his number. After about a month, Employee 1 called him. Later, Employee 1 called him again and said he wanted to meet, so Soldier 13 came to the city and met the Finnish authorities for the first time. The witness testified that he knows Soldier 7, but they have not lived in the same place.

Finally, Soldier 13 described the events relating to the Sierra Leone junta and the battle over Freetown in more detail. The defense concluded that these events took place in 1997 and 1998.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Soldier 11 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 11

The prosecution began by asking Soldier 11 about his participation in the war in Liberia. The witness testified that he is half Sierra Leonean and half Liberian. He joined the war from Sierra Leone as a child soldier for the RUF. His father had fought with the RUF during the war in Sierra Leone and while the rest of his family fled to Monrovia, he stayed behind. His father came and took him to join the RUF. He was in Waterloo, Sierra Leone, when government forces pushed back and they had to retreat to Liberia. When they arrived at the border, the Liberians told them that they could not enter, so they decided to enter by force. According to Soldier 11, one high-ranking RUF member, Issa, died and the RUF began to kill people and burn down villages. At the time he was in Vahun, where the Liberian government and RUF were negotiating. RUF commanders present there included Rambo, Patrik Kamara and Superman. The RUF burned towns and villages such as Malameh, Lormeh, Kpardemeh, Masavolahun and Manameh, where people were killed inside a house. Soldier 11 was present when these villages were burned. These three commanders, Rambo, Patrik Kamara and Superman, gave the orders to attack the Liberian soldiers and to do "maximal destruction" because the Liberians refused to host the RUF. During his testimony, the witness exclaimed: "What I saw with my eyes is what I am saying here. I want justice to prevail, so my conscience can set me free".

The witness explained that his troop went to Vahun, where Fifty said that if they joined the Liberian government in fighting LURD in Lofa, he would let the locals host them. He testified that he fought in Monrovia as well as Lofa. He was told that LURD was attacking from Bomi towards Monrovia. They were sent by helicopter to Monrovia and were stationed in different places there. The high-ranking soldiers went to Twelve Houses while Soldier 11, Rambo and others were taken to Moses Blah area. The war began in 2001 as LURD advanced towards Monrovia. Soldier 11 and the others were placed on alert and began attacking Duala and Freeport. LURD succeeded in pushing the government troops back all the way to Waterside. At that time, they learned that Sam Bockarie aka General Mosquito had gone to Ivory Coast and that he had been killed there, so they were all angry.

Soldier 11 testified that they had four commanders, Patrik Kamara, his own father and Kpangay. Their "big spokesman" was Angel Gabriel. They got to Waterside and fought there. Their Liberian commanders were Cooper Teah and Michael Harbray. They "attacked and defended back and forth" with LURD and at some point, LURD retreated. After the fighting, the soldiers began breaking into stores as they needed food. As they broke into stores, civilians came out and the streets were full of people. Soldier 11 testified that the second time he saw Gibril Massaquoi in Waterside was when it was said that Fifty had ordered that the whole Waterside should be cleared. Gibril Massaquoi gave an order to Yaney, one of the members of RUF's Death Squad. Fighting began again and LURD began shelling. The witness described how mortar shell hit Salami right in front of him and he exploded into pieces. When he died, Angel Gabriel was very angry, saying that the civilians were giving out information on their positions and that's how they had gotten hit. Jungle Fire and Yaney drove the pickup with a mounted weapon and received an order to kill all the civilians inside the store.

Soldier 11 testified: "That killing made me traumatized, because I am half Liberian, half Sierra Leonean, and seeing my Liberian sisters, and brothers being killed like dogs made me angry". He then joined the Liberians instead of the aqbah, as the RUF was called in Liberia. There was a plan

to ambush and kill Fifty and Jublee Massaquoi one night, but they did not come. The witness testified that they killed over two thousand civilians in Waterside. He was particularly traumatized after seeing the body of someone from his village.

The witness explained that the killings in Waterside took place on the Old Bridge, when coming from Goldman Hill towards West Point. He described seeing the killings with his own eyes, how Yaney shot with a machine gun and civilians fell with food in their hands. Angel Gabriel gave the order to clear Waterside. He had a silver pistol. He said that these civilians had given their position to LURD and that was the cause of Salami's death. Soldier 11 confirmed that he personally heard Angel Gabriel give this order and say that civilians should not be looting. According to Soldier 11, Angel Gabriel gave the order and left. He said he was going to Fifty, as the "sniper weapon" was in the EJ Roye building and Fifty was operating it. The witness described the EJ Roye building as a long and tall building, located opposite to the central bank when coming from New Bridge and Vai Town towards Monrovia. It was damaged in the war.

The witness testified that Angel was RUF's big spokesman. He did not really fight on the frontline, but sometimes he came to the front by helicopter to give orders. He did not know guerilla tactics, but he had his "sons" who did. He gave orders to this Death Squad, Salami being its commander. Soldier 11 testified that Angel Gabriel was also called Gibril Massaquoi in Sierra Leone and Gabriel Massaquoi in Liberia. After Salami's death, it took maybe a month before peace came to Liberia. American helicopters were in the air and people were told to stop fighting. This was called World War III.

Finally, Soldier 11 repeated that Jublee Massaquoi, in Krio, is the same person as Angel Gabriel.

The defense questions Soldier 11

The defense began by referring to Soldier 11's previous testimonies, where he had not mentioned the name Angel Gabriel. The witness explained that they called him Gibril Massaquoi in Sierra Leone. He remembered the name Angel Gabriel only later, as he used to say "Tell God, I, Angel Gabriel, sent you" before killing people. He only remembered this after the second hearing in the lower court. The defense also referred to the fact that he was asked twice in the lower court whether Gibril Massaquoi was in Monrovia and both times he answered that he did not see Massaquoi in Monrovia or elsewhere. The witness answered that this was wrong as he had said twice that Massaquoi came to Waterside and gave an order to kill because of Salami's death. He could not remember saying in court that he had not seen Gibril Massaquoi in Monrovia.

According to the witness, the man who was killed when the RUF crossed the border into Liberia was called Issa Sesay. He testified that the incidents in Waterside took place in 2002 or 2003, during World Wars I, II and III. The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that he had gone to Monrovia in 2003. Soldier 11 answered that the war was in Sierra Leone in 2001 and in Liberia/Waterside between 2001 and 2003.

Soldier 11 confirmed that he saw with his own eyes how a machine gun was brought in front of a store and people coming out of the store were shot. Gibril Massaquoi gave the order to shoot, he was in charge because Mosquito was already dead in Nimba. He ordered Yaney, who was now in charge of the Death Squad after Salami's death, to clear Waterside. The defense pointed out that at the lower court, he had testified that Yaney, who was there with Salami, had ordered to shoot people inside the store. The witness repeated that Yaney was the deputy of Death Squad and in

command of the squad after Salami's death, but that Gibril Massaquoi gave the order to Yaney. According to Soldier 11, Michael Highgray was a deputy on the government's side and assistant to commander Cooper Teah. Soldier 11 himself was part of a group called Jungle Fire. They did not have uniforms but wore black shirts with "Jungle Fire" written on the back and red bandanas.

Next, the witness explained how he was called to testify by his colleagues, Soldier 13, X9 and some other friends that he had fought with. He testified that he had not spoken about these events with them since the last hearing in court. He also stated that he had witnessed similar incidents where civilians were attacked near stores. After Salami's death, the aqbah men killed and beat people all over the area, even in West Point. The defense referred to his testimony at the lower court, where he had described an incident where Yaney locked people inside a store and burned it. According to Soldier 11, this was a different incident to the one that he had being speaking about, it occurred in Happy Corner in Waterside. He also testified that he personally witnessed Issa Sesay's death, he died in a firefight with the Liberians.

Finally, there was a discussion as to the witness's age at the time of the events. The witness also asked if there was a way to contact the court in case of any security concerns, to which the court responded that there was a specific number that he could call.

It was pointed out that the witness did not identify Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

February 20, 2023 – Day 16: Waterside Soldiers

The third week of the proceedings in Monrovia began with the Court continuing with last week's theme. The Court heard two former RUF fighters' testimonies about their experiences during the Second Liberian Civil War.

The first witness described his time in the RUF, both in Lofa County and Monrovia. Both parties focused on his experiences around the Waterside area in Monrovia during the so-called World Wars.

The second witness described his experience as a fighter for multiple armed factions both in Sierra Leone and Liberia. As they had done with the first witness, the parties focused on his time with the RUF, and particularly events in Monrovia during the World Wars.

The Court will continue its hearings tomorrow, Tuesday 21, and will hear three additional witnesses.

February 20, 2023 [Liberia] Day 16: Waterside Soldiers

[editor's note: mentions in brackets help clarify the text, not included in the actual testimony]

Witness Soldier 7 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 7

The prosecution began by asking Soldier 7 about his participation in the Liberian civil wars. The witness testified that he had been with ULIMO until the group split in 1997. When Charles Taylor rose to power in Liberia, he was arrested and then joined Taylor's troops. Soldier 7 fought for his troops until the war ended. He joined Charles Taylor's forces between 1998 and 1999. He served in Lofa county and Bomi Hills and ended up in Monrovia towards the end of the war. After the fall of Vahun, he joined the Navy Division, with Roland Duo as his commander.

According to Soldier 7, Taylor's forces had foreign soldiers in them, particularly from Sierra Leone. Sam Bockarie and Superman had brought their troops from Sierra Leone to Liberia. The witness named a few RUF soldiers: Carl Koba, Chuckie, Yellow Man, Gabriel Massaquoi, CO Med and CO Blood. The first time he encountered RUF soldiers in Liberia was in 1999, when he went to Lofa, around the time he joined Taylor's side. He came across RUF troops in Vahun, Foya and "after everything," in Monrovia as well. When asked to describe Gabriel Massaquoi, he stated "I used to see him with men behind him, that's all". He testified that he saw Massaquoi first in Lofa, in Foya and Vahun, around 1998 or 1999. Soldier 7 could not tell if the RUF was involved in any atrocities against civilians in Lofa, as he only fought with them in Guinea. He testified that he heard about the RUF's "attitude," that they were harassing civilians by raping and killing them. He had heard the news from the Kissi and Gbandi boys who were recruited by Benjamin Yeaten to fight with them.

Soldier 7 testified that he came to Monrovia between 2002 and 2003 with the government troops that were being pushed from Lofa by LURD. Sam Bockarie and RUF soldiers were already based in Monrovia, Sam Bockarie had a house in Twelve Houses and the RUF "had a place". Superman also

came to Monrovia and was living right by JFK Hospital. The witness could not tell how many RUF soldiers came to Monrovia, as some of them went back to Sierra Leone, but he estimated that there were 300 or 400 men stationed in different locations around the city. He named some of the RUF commanders that came to Monrovia: CO Man, CO Blood, Yellow Man, SS Yaney, Salami, Gabriel Massaquoi and High Command. There were also others whose names he could not recall. Gabriel Massaquoi was the same commander he had seen in Lofa. Salami and Gabriel Massaquoi were both assigned to certain areas in Waterside and took orders from Fifty. The witness explained that he was stationed around Gardnesville, Salami was stationed around Broad Street and Water Street, and he met Massaquoi at Water Street. The RUF commanders were controlling the area to prevent looting.

Soldier 7 described an incident with Massaquoi that occurred at Water Street. He testified that he was on the Garden Hill Road when he heard that Yaney had killed his bodyguard Bulldog. He came to see what had happened and saw him with civilians and soldiers, he said that the civilians had been looting, and he had killed them. Soldier 7 asked him why he had not killed soldiers instead of the civilians. They had a heated argument and Fifty called Soldier 7 to tell him to forget the whole thing. This took place around 99 Steps, at the river side. He described the location: “coming from Broad Street, before reaching the bridge, there’s a bend to the left. A little bit further, there’s an area where women used to carry out prostitution, 99 Steps is located right after this area”. The incident happened opposite 99 Steps, where a road goes towards the river.

The witness testified that he personally saw Massaquoi kill civilians and soldiers with his gun. He could not remember the number of people that were killed and did not know their names. He explained that Bulldog’s death was because of the looting carried out in the area, as Salami and Massaquoi were tasked to make sure that it would not happen. Bulldog was among eleven people, who were executed by Yaney because of looting. Soldier 7 did not know where Bulldog and the others were killed, he saw their bodies by the riverbank but knew that they were not killed there. The witness testified that Salami, High Command and Gabriel Massaquoi killed multiple civilians and soldiers in other instances as well around Waterside, but he did not witness any of those. He only came to see Bulldog’s death and then returned to his station in Garden Hill.

According to Soldier 7, the battles in Monrovia were called World Wars I, II and III. He estimated that this incident in Waterside took place during the World Wars, after they came from Bomi. After Bulldog’s death, it took approximately one year before the end of the war.

The defense questions Soldier 7

The defense began by asking about the timing of the events. There was a lengthy discussion, as the witness had mentioned different years during different hearings. The witness answered that he was fighting during the war, so had not written things down and had just estimated the dates at his previous hearings. He also testified that he had not spoken with anyone about the timing of the events as “this case is not what you should be talking [about] with anybody”.

Soldier 7 testified that he had been in prison during the 90s. He was released by Francois Massaquoi, the Minister for Youth and Sports and the leader of the Lofa Defense Forces. He met Francois often when he came to Lofa to bring supplies, up until his death. He could not say when exactly he died. The witness testified to having met Zigzag Marzah in Lofa, but he was not part of his troops. He had heard that Zigzag Marzah was “notorious for killing human beings and eating them”, but he had not seen these things himself. The defense referred to his police interview,

where the witness had said that he had seen Zigzag eat human flesh in Foya. He denied saying this. Soldier 7 had also told the Finnish police that he had met Massaquoi for the first time in Vahun in 2000. He stated that he could not remember having said this to the police.

According to the witness, as government forces were retreating from Lofa to Monrovia towards the end of the war, they could not have travelled through Lofa, but some soldiers who were left behind fought to get in. When there was fighting in Monrovia, his troops could only reach Lofa from Monrovia via helicopter. Soldier 7 testified that when the land route between Monrovia and Lofa was still open, there were two different routes: from Bomi to Vahun or from Gbarnga to Voinjama. As they were retreating, Sam Bockarie was in Monrovia but the witness could not remember if he had retreated with them. He could not remember when Sam Bockarie had died but had heard that he was coming from the Ivory Coast when he died. He could not remember if he had seen Massaquoi after Sam Bockarie's death. The defense referred to his police interview, where he had said that Gibril Massaquoi had been in Monrovia after Sam Bockarie's death. Soldier 7 answered that the two men were in Monrovia together, but he could not remember whether Massaquoi had been in Monrovia after Bockarie's death.

Soldier 7 could not say how old Bulldog was when he died, he estimated that he might have been around 20 years old. The defense referred to the police interview, where Soldier 7 seemed to have said that he had seen the executions take place. He confirmed that he was not there and said that Ramboson was there first and told him what was happening. He then went to look himself and asked why people were being killed and then Fifty called him and told him to forget it. He then repeated that he had sent Ramboson first. When reached the scene, Bulldog had already been killed. He testified that he could not remember whether he saw Bulldog's body or not.

According to the witness, the troop controlling Waterside did not have a particular name as they were part of the government forces. He then confirmed that both RUF and Jungle Fire were part of the government forces and that they were together in Waterside.

Next, Soldier 7 was asked how he had gotten in contact with the Finnish Police. The witness testified that one of his friends, who he met at a junction got him in touch with Employee 1 and then the Finnish police. He could not remember the first time that he had been in touch with Employee 1, but had not known Employee 1 for long before his interview with the Finnish police. He denied being in touch with Employee 1 already in 2018. When the defense referred to his lower court testimony, where he had testified that a man named [REDACTED] had given his phone number to Employee 1, he responded that this could be true, but he could not remember. He was not sure whether he knew Soldier 1. The police had recorded that they had received Soldier 1's information via Soldier 7, to which he responded that he had helped to find one person, but he was not sure whether this person was Soldier 1. He also testified that he knew Soldier 17 but had not given his contact information to Employee 1 or the Finnish police. Soldier 7 denied telling anyone what the investigation was about or talking about the events to anyone in general. He also gave his war name to the court.

Finally, the witness repeated that he had heard about the events at 99 Steps from Ramboson, whom he had sent to investigate the situation. Ramboson told him that there were about six people killed, three civilians and three soldiers. He also told him that Gibril had said that these people were caught looting and that they should be killed. Ramboson tried to prevent the killing,

but could not, as Gibril outranked him. According to Ramboson, Gabriel Massaquoi killed the soldiers.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as 'Big Man' and then as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Soldier 1 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 1

The prosecution began by asking about Soldier 1's participation in the wars in Liberia. The witness testified that he began as a child soldier. He fought in three factions: ULIMO-K, NPFL and RUF, which was his main faction as Sam Bockarie was his cousin. The witness held the rank of a colonel in the General Battle Group. He had had various commanders, such as the late Ambush in ULIMO-K, Maui Juli in the NPFL and Sweet Candy. General Mosquito, aka Sam Bockarie, was his commander in the RUF. The witness testified that he joined the RUF when he was 16 or 17 years old but could not remember in what year.

In the RUF, Soldier 1 was stationed in Vahun, Koindu and other places. He used to cross the border back and forth with Gabriel Massaquoi. According to the witness, Massaquoi was highly educated so was made the RUF spokesman. He testified to seeing Massaquoi going back and forth during the war in 2001 and 2002. He didn't see him after the war. According to Soldier 1, Massaquoi was a "planner", he used to come and go between Liberia and Sierra Leonne through Belle Fasama. Massaquoi also used to come to Monrovia, stay for a few days in Four Houses and then leave. The witness testified that Massaquoi went back and forth between Monrovia and Sierra Leone because he used to arrange everything for the RUF. Soldier 1 himself spent time in Monrovia with Sam Bockarie and saw Massaquoi in Monrovia in 2001 or 2002. According to Soldier 1, Massaquoi said that he had a deal in Sierra Leone, but would not say what kind of deal it was. Massaquoi spoke of the United Nations in connection with this deal, but didn't tell him any details.

Soldier 1 repeated that he saw Massaquoi in Four Houses in Monrovia. He never came during the day and only travelled at night. When the witness was in Monrovia, he was part of Charles Taylor's mercenaries and cleared Lofa for him. Soldier 1 moved from Lofa to Monrovia in late 2001 and remained in Monrovia from 2001 to 2003. They moved in and out of the city. They came as the revolution brought them here. Soldier 1 was stationed in Congo Town all the way to ELWA Junction. At the time, there was fighting against LURD on New Bridge and Stockton Bridge. He named Yaney, Andrei, Salami and Gabriel Massaquoi as the RUF commanders present around these bridges, with Benjamin Yeaten as the commander of their army.

The witness testified that Gabriel Massaquoi killed people. Sweet Candy sent him from Stockton Bridge to prevent it from happening as he was a general. But Massaquoi would not listen to the witness, as he outranked him. The witness then showed the court his leg, which he stated Massaquoi had broken, saying "he did this to me. It's war, I'm not holding it against him". He then went back to his superior to report back. The witness explained that Massaquoi himself killed people outside, and ordered for the people inside to be killed with a PKM machine gun. This took place on Water Street in Waterside. Gabriel Massaquoi had broken his leg beforehand in Masambolahun. The witness exclaimed: "Put him on video so we can talk, I want to ask him

some questions". The Court informed him that as a witness, he was not entitled to ask the defendant questions.

Soldier 1 testified that many people died on Water Street as they were coming from West Point to get biscuits and food. Massaquoi told people to shoot with a PKM, but used a .45 caliber pistol himself. The witness described that when he asked Massaquoi to stop, he got angry and asked him who he was to give him orders.

According to the witness, Massaquoi also used the name Angel Gabriel. He described that "he said it to do performance, building expectation, doing things beyond human understanding, he said call me Angel Gabriel". Some soldiers also called him Angel Gabriel. The witness then provided the war names that he used when he was fighting for different factions. The battles ongoing in Monrovia were called World Wars I, II and III. They were brought from Lofa to Monrovia during World War I until the end. He was then asked about the border crossings that he did with Massaquoi. He testified that they crossed the River Makona using rafts made of plantain leaves. They continued from Vahun via Kpelle Forest and straight to Monrovia. He could not estimate how long it took them to get there.

Soldier 1 also testified about Bulldog's death. He was shot by Massaquoi for standing up for him. Massaquoi shot Bulldog and then Soldier 1 shot one of Massaquoi's bodyguards. This happened on Water Street. According to Soldier 1, Bulldog died in the middle of World War II and World War III came after.

The defense questions Soldier 1

The defense began by asking about the death of Sam Bockarie. Soldier 1 confirmed that he was present. They were on a mission in the Ivory Coast. Upon their return, Charles Taylor ordered his execution. According to Soldier 1, this happened in late 2001 or 2002.

Soldier 1 was asked about a war name, which he confirmed to be his. He was asked about Sweet Candy's real name, which he provided to the court. He testified about the leg injury caused by Gibril Massaquoi in Masambolahun, but could not remember the timing of the event. His face had been also hit by a bomb, but those were two separate incidents. The defense referred to his lower court testimony, where he had testified that he had been injured on his leg on the Old Bridge of Vai Town. He answered that this relates to a different injury and showed various other injuries that he had sustained to the court. The defense then referred to the police investigation, where he had not mentioned Massaquoi shooting his leg at all. Soldier 1 answered that Massaquoi had injured his left leg, but it was not important to him. His knee had been injured during battle. He explained that he did not take the injury caused by Massaquoi seriously, as such things happened during wartime.

The witness further testified that Massaquoi shot his brother. He also repeated that he had seen Massaquoi kill Bulldog in Waterside because he had disrespected him. The defense referred to his lower court testimony, where he had said that he was in JFK hospital when soldiers told him that Bulldog had died. He then explained that there were three different Bulldogs. Only one of them was his subordinate, the one that Massaquoi killed. He was a child soldier, 13 or 14 years old. The Bulldog whose death he had heard about in the hospital, was from the marines. 'His' Bulldog, his bodyguard, was the one killed in Waterside. The defense then pointed out that he had said that he had been sent to look for Bulldog's body. There was confusion as to which

Bulldog this was about. The witness exclaimed: “Has there ever been crisis in your country before? Have you seen it before? 40, 50, people dying, you will be nervous”.

Next, the defense referred to his police interview, where he had said that he, Soldier 4 and Soldier 17 went by motorcycle to Waterside, where they met Gibril Massaquoi. He confirmed this. According to Soldier 1, Massaquoi first killed civilians and soldiers and only when he reached the scene, he killed Bulldog. The defense referred to the police investigation, which had the events in a different order: that Soldier 1 met Massaquoi, who had six civilians and six soldiers captured, on Water Street. Soldier 1 answered that he must have been misquoted. There were six soldiers and civilians in total outside a store. Massaquoi first killed the people outside and then gave an order to shoot inside the store. He had been sent to prevent the killings and that was what caused the conflict between him and Massaquoi.

An audio of Soldier 1’s police interview was played, which showed him placing the events in a different order to the way he had explained in court. After listening to the recording, Soldier 1 testified that he had said that Bulldog was killed first.

Soldier 1 then explained how he had gotten in contact with the Finnish police. Soldier 7 had given his phone number to the police and brought him to the interview. Soldier 1 confirmed that had not heard who the suspect was before the interview, and had not been told beforehand that the interview would be about the events in Waterside. Soldier 1 already knew, before the interview, that Gibril Massaquoi called himself Angel Gabriel based on his own experiences during the war. The defense referred to the police interview, where he had said that Soldier 7 had told him that the interview would be about Waterside and the mission he had given him. Soldier 1 testified that Soldier 7 had indeed told him that the interview was about Waterside during World Wars I-III, but he did not mention the name Gibril Massaquoi. The defense again referred to his interview, where Soldier 1 had said that Soldier 7 had mentioned the name Gibril Massaquoi. Soldier 1 responded that he cannot remember everything. He maintained his testimony about the discussion between him and Soldier 7.

Next, the defense asked about the Makona river crossing. Soldier 1 repeated that he could not remember when this occurred. There was a large group of soldiers. They constructed rafts made of plantain leaves on the beach and crossed the Makona river. After crossing the river, they did “jungle twelve”, a method of moving through jungle territory, to Vahun. From Vahun, they followed orders and continued through other places on their way to Monrovia.

Before the end of his hearing, the prosecution had some further questions for the witness. He described Massaquoi telling him about a deal in Sierra Leone, but did not tell him any details. He had just said that if the deal was successful, they would all go to Sierra Leone. This deal meant that Massaquoi travelled between Sierra Leone and Monrovia, and then later on he left Liberia.

The defense then asked for the timing of events, which Soldier 1 said he could remember as they were using drugs, including cocaine and ‘Italian white’ to get through the jungle and to fight. The defense referred to the lower court’s judgment, where Soldier 1 had said that Massaquoi had disappeared after 2001. He responded that Massaquoi disappeared between 2000 and 2002 when Charles Taylor ordered his arrest. He first heard about the deal when Massaquoi came to see Sam Bockarie in Four Houses. Massaquoi mentioned those involved in the deal, but Soldier 1 could not remember their names. There was someone involved named Alan.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

February 21, 2023 – Day 17: Civilians held under a bridge

Today, the Court heard three witnesses speak about incidents in Waterside, Monrovia.

The first witness, an NPFL soldier during the war, described being stationed near Waterside in Monrovia alongside RUF troops. He described various killings of civilians and soldiers in the area.

The second witness was a civilian, who had been detained near Waterside market and taken to a gate near the bridge. The third witness was also a civilian and gave a similar account of being captured by soldiers. She, along with some of her friends, was tied up and taken under Waterside bridge. One of the friends that had been captured with her was killed before her very eyes by the Sierra Leonean commander of the soldiers in the area.

The Court is not scheduled to have a hearing tomorrow and will continue hearing witnesses on Thursday, February 23, at 9 am.

February 21, 2023 [Liberia] Day 17: Civilians held under a bridge

[editor's note: mentions in brackets help clarify the text, not included in the actual testimony]

Witness Soldier 17 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 17

The prosecution began by asking Soldier 17 about his participation in fighting in Liberia. The witness testified that he fought in 1994 and then again from 1999 to 2001. During the latter time period, they were fighting against LURD rebels in an area extending from a bridge leading to Waterside and Slipway, in Monrovia. He had also participated in fighting in Lofa county. For him, the war began in Lofa and then later moved to Monrovia.

Soldier 17 testified that he fought in Lofa between 1998 and 1999 until his arrival in Monrovia. He fought in the NPFL, led by Charles Taylor. He himself did not mistreat civilians in Lofa, but others did. Some of the people that mistreated civilians came from Sierra Leone while others were from Liberia. They were RUF and NPFL fighters. The RUF was a revolutionary movement from Sierra Leone who came over the border to Liberia. Soldier 17 named Cow Pupu, Gabriel aka Angel Gabriel and Abbah aka One Way to Death as RUF fighters who had come from Sierra Leone to Liberia. Angel Gabriel was one of those that came over the border when things got difficult in Sierra Leone. When asked about Angel Gabriel's rank, he explained: "You know, [in] rebel war we don't get special ranks but we deal with manpower. Manpower, from that group that you have, can be general, commander. The more you get plenty people behind you, the higher the grade of your rank". Angel Gabriel had one of the fighting forces on the front line.

Soldier 17 testified to having personally witnessed civilians being killed. He saw people being put in a house and then the house burned down in Sosomalohun, Bolahun and Savalahun. He saw Zigzag Marzah burn people, he gave the order to do so. He was part of the NPFL. Various RUF soldiers also were present, such as Cow Pupu, Angel Gabriel and One Way to Death. The witness testified that he did not see Angel Gabriel burning people in houses.

According to Soldier 17, they came from Lofa to Monrovia when the enemy pushed them away and "the war turned against us". The fighting began in Lofa in 1998. Soldier 17 was stationed from the bridge that went to Slipway and Waterside, as the enemy was on the other side of the bridge. The bridge was called Waterside Bridge at the time. Civilians were being killed every day in Waterside. Civilians were killed by rocket attacks and during combat and some soldiers were also deliberately killing them.

Soldier 17 further testified about being crippled by Angel Gabriel's bodyguard, Body Man. There was an incident where Body Man and others killed people on Water Street. There had been a misunderstanding and a fight broke out within the government troops. Roland Duo sent Grady and others to control the situation, and Benjamin Yeaten aka 50 was already there. Once the matter was settled, the troops were sent towards the bridge. Angel Gabriel gave an order to shoot anyone retreating from the bridge. As the enemy was approaching, Angel Gabriel's bodyguards crossed the bridge. As Soldier 17 was crossing the bridge, Angel Gabriel's bodyguards began firing. The witness was shot in the leg by an 'AK dragon'. He was then helped to the hospital by his comrades.

The witness confirmed that he saw himself the killing of civilians by Angel Gabriel's bodyguards on Water Street. He said that this the reason he and others got angry and the fight broke out between Angel Gabriel's men and the men on Soldier 17's side. According to him, a faction among Angel Gabriel's men wanted to take women from the crowd and another faction wanted to stop them. As the two could not agree, people were killed. The incident took place at the entrance to Water Street, before a women's clothing store. The store was located on the right side of Water Street, when looking from the bridge. Angel Gabriel also had a role in the killing as he was using a cutlass to cut the throats of some of the civilians. The witness confirmed that he personally witnessed Angel Gabriel doing so.

The enemy the witness had described was LURD, some were from Sierra Leone and some were from Guinea. The enemy was approaching from Freeport to cross the bridge. After he was hit in the leg, it took over a week before peace came to Liberia.

The witness also testified about soldiers being killed in Waterside outside of situations of combat. According to him: "if [Benjamin Yeaten] caught you with anything, he would execute you". Soldiers also had internal fights amongst themselves. Soldier 17 had been involved in one, where somebody had robbed his house in Waterside. He went to the robber's house and they had a shoot-out for over an hour.

The defense questions Soldier 17

The defense began by asking Soldier 17 about his interview with the Finnish police in December 2019. The witness testified that in the interview, he used the name Gabriel Massaquoi for Angel Gabriel, as that is his full name. The defense pointed out that he had said that Gabriel Wilson had killed one of Sweet Candy's bodyguards at 99 Steps. He confirmed that he had said so to the police and explained that some people were using three or four names, sometimes more. Here, the same person was called multiple names: Angel Gabriel, Gabriel Wilson, Gabriel Massaquoi and another name that he couldn't remember. As a person switched between different targets, they would also switch names.

The defense pointed out that the witness did not mention the name Gibril Massaquoi once during his police interview. He responded that he could not use all the names at the same time, stating that “Even my name, which you use here. If I go to another area, they use another name for me. It’s called guerrilla warfare”. He knew of the names Angel Gabriel and Gabriel Massaquoi before his interview, as they were being used in relation to operational areas. There was a discussion in court about such names, as the defense then pointed out that during his police interview, he was asked whether he knew the names Gibril Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel and he had said that he didn’t. The witness repeated his explanations that different names were used for different operations.

Soldier 17 was then asked to clarify the matter and provide all the names he knew for Angel Gabriel. The witness testified the following: his full name is Gabriel Massaquoi, during operations he was referred to as Angel Gabriel and in Sierra Leone he was called Spirit Gabriel. The man himself referred to himself as Gabriel Wilson in Waterside, in order to seem like a Liberian.

The defense pointed out that Soldier 17 had also testified in the lower court he had not heard the name Massaquoi but had used the name Gabriel Wilson at his residence. Soldier 17 denied that a name was used in connection to a particular residence as there was no specific place that he was staying in. The audio recording from his lower court testimony was played to the court, and the defense moved on with their questioning.

Soldier 17 testified that before his police interview, he did not know the reason for the investigation. Soldier 7 had called him and asked whether he knew anything about Gabriel who “did the thing in Waterside”. The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that Soldier 7 told him a story about Gabriel Wilson, who was Benjamin Yeaten’s subordinate in Death Squad. The witness confirmed that Benjamin Yeaten was the head of the Death Squad and said that Soldier 7 had asked him whether he knew that man. He denied that he was told “a story” about Gabriel Wilson, stating that “This man was a man that we all were across there, so they asked me if at all I know him”.

The witness was asked about the injuries he had sustained on his legs and feet. He had injuries on both his left leg and his right leg which had been amputated, as well as other injuries under his arm and on his head. He testified that Body Man shot him on the bridge crossing from Water Street, in Monrovia. Kill the Bitch was a man in the same group as Body Man. In that unit, there were over five people who used the name Trouble, including Soldier 17 himself and Body Man. The defense pointed out that Solider 17 had named the person who injured him as Trouble in his police interview, Kill the Bitch at the lower court and Body Man at the appeals court. The witness explained that Body Man, Trouble and Kill the Bitch were all present that day, as they were controlling the gate. They all shot and he was hit, he could not say exactly who had shot him. As he was brought back from the hospital, there were three people at the front and three at the back of the gate. The defense played the audio recording of his testimony at the lower court, where he had said that on a bridge between Lofa County and Bong County, Kill the Bitch had shot him in his kneecap and that Angel Gabriel was there. The witness responded that there was a difference between the different incidents.

Soldier 17 then further testified about the events on Water Street in Monrovia. One of their bodyguards, whose name he could not remember, had been killed on Water Street before he went to investigate the situation. He recalled a man named Bulldog, he was the biggest man and

a bodyguard. According to the witness, something happened to Bulldog in Waterside, but he did not know what. He could not estimate how old Bulldog was at the time.

The witness then went to describe the different weapons that Angel Gabriel used. According to him, Angel Gabriel had a cutlass that he used as his "secret weapon that he used to butcher people with", as well as an assigned gun. According to Soldier 17, Angel Gabriel killed one of their bodyguards on Water Street, "that was what brought the confusion" before Fifty got there. The witness saw it himself when Angel Gabriel killed the bodyguard by shooting, and there were bodies "all over". The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that Sweet Candy ordered everyone to look where the bodyguard had been killed, so he, Solder 4 and Robertson went. Soldier 17 confirmed this. He could not recall the name of the bodyguard that had been killed but said that he was one of Roland Duo's bodyguards and had also been with them. The defense asked the witness if the bodyguard that he saw being killed, and the one whose body he was sent to look for, were the same person. He responded that: "Soldiers died, there were many that were killed". According to him, both civilians and soldiers were killed at 99 steps. He explained that "99 steps was a bypass area where people used to kill their friends for looting".

Soldier 17 then testified that he did not know whether Bodyman was killed or injured in Waterside, as they were not close. The defense pointed out that at the lower court, the witness had testified that Bodyman was the only soldier killed at 99 Steps. The witness then stated that Bodyman was one of Roland Duo's bodyguards and he was killed between Water Street and 99 Steps. As he was killed, a firefight broke out and Sweet Candy ordered them, Soldier 17, Soldier 4 and Soldier 1 to go onto the scene.

The witness confirmed that Sweet Candy did not promise him any benefits when he asked him to come and testify. Sweet Candy had said that if he came to testify, they would help him to get a new leg.

Finally, the witness named Zigzag Massaquoi, Zigzag Marzah, Fifty and Benjamin Yeaten as soldiers who killed people at 99 Steps. Benjamin Yeaten had seen people loot a store with rice, the store was welded shut and he ordered the killing of the looters with a four-barrel anti-air gun.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Gabriel Wilson from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Civilian 76 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 76

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 76 whether she had experienced anything particular during a crisis in Monrovia. The witness testified that she used to live in Red Light district and sell goods in Waterside. One morning, as she went to Waterside, the whole place was upside down. People were running all over the place and gunshots were fired. The witness began to run as well. A gate was closed right before the bridge and she was captured and tied up. There were people being captured and people being killed. The witness described a man called Angel Massaquoi, Angel Gabriel Massaquoi giving orders and after people had been killed, he gave

orders for them to be taken to West Point. She then saw a man she knew. He asked what she was doing there all tied up and she explained to him that she was running and had been captured. The man asked the man who was giving orders to release her, she was released and was able to flee the scene.

The witness further testified that she was captured in Waterside, near a biscuit store that was located on the left when coming from West Point, right before the bridge. The bridge was called Old Bridge at the time and the store was not too far from the bridge. Civilian 76 saw people being killed by the store by Angel Massaquoi, who ordered his men to kill people. Angel Massaquoi was speaking English. The witness could not estimate how many people were killed by the store, exclaiming: "I was not to myself".

Civilian 76 testified that from the store, she was taken to a gate at the bridge. People were killed there and bodies were carried towards West Point. She did not personally know anyone that died by the store or the gate. She could not remember how Angel Gabriel Massaquoi was dressed. According to the witness, the war that was going on at the time was called World War I, in 2001. She could not estimate how long it took after the incident before peace came to Liberia, as she left and went straight to the bush right afterwards. According to Civilian 76, Angel Massaquoi spoke 'in British'.

The witness had not heard any news on a person being arrested in relation to the events in Waterside before her interview with the Finnish police. When she came back from the bush, her friend, who she used to sell with at Waterside, told her that people had come to talk about it. This friend had said that she was sitting talking about the war, and a man was watching and listening. He then came up to her and told her that they were searching for people with information about the events in Waterside. This man was called Employee 1. Civilian 76 asked her friend for Employee 1's number and called him from the bush. Later, she met Employee 1 and the Finnish police in Monrovia.

According to Civilian 76, the fighting at the time of the incident was between government troops and LURD. She did not know where LURD was at the time.

The defense questions Civilian 76

The defense began by asking Civilian 76 about the gate. The witness explained that the gate was between the store and the bridge. The defense pointed out that she had told the police that the 'checkpoint' was about a five minutes' walk from Waterside Market. The witness explained that the gate served as a checkpoint: "When you reach at the gate, they will check, so we call it [a] checkpoint". It had a long rope crossing the road. Civilian 76 had told the police that the checkpoint had a white and blue building, and she confirmed this. She explained that the building had been replaced by a store, but it was painted white and blue at the time and it had an upstairs.

Civilian 76 heard the name Angel first and then the names Angel Massaquoi and Gabriel Massaquoi. These names were all for the same person. Angel Massaquoi was the commander. The defense referred to her police interview, where the witness had said that she had heard the names Chief Angel and Angel but had not mentioned Angel Massaquoi or Gabriel Massaquoi. The witness explained that a long time had passed since the incident and things can be forgotten. The police investigation was the first time she had spoken with white people and she was scared. The

defense pointed out that Civilian 76 had also not used the names Angel Gabriel Massaquoi or Gabriel Massaquoi in the lower court but had mentioned Angel Gabriel. She repeteated that a long time had passed and things come to mind when one thinks about the past.

The witness testified that the first time she saw Angel Gabriel Massaquoi was at the gate that she had been taken to after being captured. The defense pointed out that she had told the police that he walked with them from Waterside Market to the checkpoint, which she denied. An audio recording of her police interview was played before the court. After listening to the recording, the witness maintained her testimony that she saw Massaquoi once she had been taken to the checkpoint.

The defense then pointed out that Civilian 76 had told the police that when Angel Gabriel arrived at the checkpoint, he had ordered for her to be tied up and that he would send her to God when the time was right. Civilian 76 explained that she was not tied up at the market, but at Waterside, and then she was taken to the gate. She was tied up between Red Light and Waterside, while people were running around.

According to Civilian 76, her friend [REDACTED] is not a witness in this trial as she is sick. At the checkpoint, there were children and child soldiers, but not babies.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

Witness Civilian 72 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 72

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 72 where she was in Liberia during a war. The witness testified that she lived on Lover Street in ELWA Junction, Monrovia. She was selling biscuits, sweets and other small goods at the junction, and one day she had ran out of things to sell. Her friends told her to go to Waterside. As they got there, they were standing waiting to buy goods, when people suddenly started running around in panic. The witness and her friends tried to leave but they were arrested. They were taken to a main checkpoint. The witness testified: “When we reached the main check point on that day I remember human being intestines on the gate. On the checkpoint of the gate. Human being heads on poles. If you don’t salute the head, they will kill you”.

According to Civilian 72, ‘the main man’ at the checkpoint told his bodyguards to take them under the bridge, saying ‘I will come and deal with them there’. As the main man was coming, he had a pregnant woman with him. This woman was being taken under the bridge and the man began to argue with his friend as to whether she was pregnant with a boy or a girl. The witness testified that the chief said “I, myself, Angel Gabriel, will take out this child”. He cut the woman’s stomach open and took the dead fetus out, it was a girl. The chief began celebrating, “I told you all it was a girl, I won”. Right after, the chief asked for a butchering board, which he used to slaughter people. The witness described how he slaughtered her friend right before her eyes, exclaiming “They used to treat human beings like dogs”.

Civilian 72 testified that they were there until the evening and then they were put on a pickup and taken to Lover Street. Women were put on one side and men on the other and they were

told that the place was not safe, as every night one person was taken away and didn't come back. They all began crying and shouting. A man came over and asked "What are you doing here?" He then opened a back gate and told the people to escape, and they left.

According to Civilian 72, three of them went to Waterside that day. She could only remember the name of one of her friends, [REDACTED]. They were all arrested in Waterside, there were bodies all around, some hand their hands cut off and some had no heads. The checkpoint was in Waterside, the main one was on the bridge and there was another one underneath it. The witness didn't know the name of the 'main man' to start off with but came to know it when he brought the pregnant woman under the bridge. The witness described: "As he opened the woman's stomach, he said out loud 'I, Angel Gabriel, did this'". She heard his name from the man himself. Angel Gabriel opened the woman's stomach and took the fetus out. Civilian 72 witnessed this personally, as well as the slaughtering of her friend. This friend was not the one she had previously named. The witness testified that she saw bodies "in the water, the road, everywhere [was] scattered with bodies. I was so confused that day".

Civilian 72 testified that Chief Angel Gabriel had a Liberian army uniform, but he was not a soldier. She was asked what she meant by that and responded: "He killed innocent people. Soldiers help people".

Civilian 72 saw Angel Gabriel at the checkpoint and under the bridge. The bridge was called Waterside Bridge. Angel Gabriel was speaking like a Sierra Leonean and not like a Liberian. At the time, World War I was being fought in Monrovia. The witness was 12 at the time. She had not heard any news about someone being arrested in Finland in relation to the events in Waterside before her police interview.

The defense questions Civilian 72

The defense began their questioning by asking how Civilian 72 got contacted by the Finnish police. Civilian 72 testified that they used to go to a Fulah store to discuss sports and wartime events. Someone there began talking about the war and the witness mentioned that she was there. A person asked for her phone number and said that someone might call. After a couple of days, she got a phone call and was told that people would like to meet with her. She stated: "That was what brought me this far. And I happen to be sitting here today. To see the end of that man. If you kill innocent people you will feel the consequence".

Next, there was discussion as to whether the person that the witness met at the store called her before she spoke to the man that she later met at the hotel or not. The witness provided the name of the person who brought her to the meeting with the Finnish police, which was Employee 1. The person she had met at the store had not told Civilian 72 that he had been asked to find witnesses to this trial.

Civilian 72 testified that she had been in business in Monrovia since her teenage years and she does not live in Monrovia anymore. According to the witness, the bodies with severed heads had also been cut from the chest so that one could see inside the body. That was the first time she had seen inside a human body.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

February 23, 2023 – Day 18: Executions in Waterside

The Court heard two witnesses today, both soldiers serving on the Liberian government's side during the Second Liberian Civil War.

The first witness described their war experience during the later phases of the Civil War, when fighting took place between government forces and LURD in Monrovia, around the Waterside area. The witness mentioned executions of civilians and soldiers undertaken by commanders, for example, as a punishment for looting the stores.

The second witness' testimony also focused on the Waterside area. They described a particular incident, where they heard gunfire while on patrol around the Market area. Investigating the source of the sound, they came across Sierra Leonean troops and dead civilians near and inside a store in Waterside. According to the witness, the civilians had been killed by the commander in charge of the Old Bridge and Water Street area.

The Court will hear two more witnesses tomorrow, Friday 24.

February 23, 2023 [Liberia] Day 18: Executions in Waterside

Witness X2 is heard

The prosecution questions X2

The prosecution began by asking about X2's participation in the crises in Liberia. The witness testified that he was a soldier on the government's side during World War III, in 2003 and 2004. He was stationed in Waterside. The government was carrying out attacks against the rebels, who were on Bushrod Island. The rebels were LURD troops. Bushrod island is at the end of the Vai Town bridge that goes towards Freeport. According to the witness, soldiers sometimes looted in Waterside, looking for food for themselves and for civilians. The witness testified that a biscuit store near Waterside bridge was looted and civilians were executed inside the store. This biscuit store was located near the LEC gate junction, near UN Drive. X2 explained that executions occurred because people were breaking army rules by looting, so commanders ordered their killing. He was there himself to witness the executions and heard the orders being given. The soldiers carrying out the executions were government soldiers and members of militias.

X2 testified that the only commander present that he recognized at the time was Senegalese. He could not estimate how many people were killed at the store, as the executions were carried out at night and the store was locked. Both soldiers and civilians were executed, as they had all been looting. There were also foreign soldiers, mercenaries, in Waterside. Some of them were from Sierra Leone. The witness had not personally fought alongside them. The Sierra Leoneans were called aqbah, and they were not stationed in a particular place. X2 recalled the names of some of the soldiers belonging to the aqbah troops, such as General Yaney and Angel or Angel Gabriel. He had not met them personally, but had seen them in Waterside. He explained that: "At the time the mood they were in we never used to go closer to them because they were too fearful (…) They carried out funny funny accusations and executions because of the mood they were in". These executions were mostly carried out because soldiers would break their rules by for example raping women, looting and killing innocent people. According to X2, women would

sometimes go to look for food for their families and soldiers would then rape them. Innocent people were sometimes accused of giving information to the rebels and were executed by government troops.

The witness testified that he had not seen Yaney and Angel Gabriel involved in rape. He had heard about them being involved in killing innocent people, but had not witnessed it himself. He had heard that the aqbah were always with Benjamin Yeaten and when they came to Waterside and saw looting, they opened fire. The witness estimated that Angel Gabriel was a high-ranking leader in aqbah because the younger aqbah soldiers took orders from him. Angel Gabriel spoke English. The witness did not know of any names for him other than Angel Gabriel.

X2 explained that he had seen Yaney and Angel Gabriel in Waterside and also saw Yaney on the new bridge, the Gabriel Tucker bridge. The first time he saw them, it was rumored that they were going to do an attack across the bridge. X2 was there when they attacked. The last time he saw them was when they were planning a general attack. President Charles Taylor was on his way to the front, so all the generals met together. This planning took place around the same time as the arrival of UNMIL, which was ECOMOG working with the UN. After that, the war lasted less than two weeks before there was a ceasefire.

Finally, the witness testified that he had heard Angel Gabriel giving orders to the aqbah troops. He had ordered them to execute or disarm soldiers that had broken the rules. The witness had not seen these orders being carried out in the form of executions.

The defense questions X2

The defense began by asking X2 about the World Wars. The witness explained that World Wars I and II took place from late 2002 until 2003. He was in Monrovia at the time. He named some of the commanders present in Waterside during World War III: General Senegalese, Benjamin Yeaten and Michael Highgrade. There was also a general from the Ministry of Defense and Tony Montana, the commander of Son of the Devil.

The witness had not seen Angel Gabriel during the incident at the biscuit store. He had not seen Angel Gabriel regularly, only here and there, he could not remember the exact number of times that he had seen him. The defense referred to his lower court testimony, where X2 had testified that he saw Angel Gabriel twice in July 2003, during World War III. He had also testified that he had not heard Angel Gabriel speak either of these times. The witness repeated that he did not get close to Angel Gabriel as he was scared of him. He added that he had not personally heard Angel Gabriel giving orders, but many people had told him what they had heard.

X2 testified that the Finnish police had contacted him via a friend of his, [REDACTED], who had been to several interviews and had told him that the Finnish police would like to contact him. He was then contacted by Employee 1.

Additional questions from the prosecution

The prosecution asked some further questions about the names the witness had used for Angel Gabriel in previous hearings. X2 first responded: “I don’t know if he had other names that were attached to him at that time because sometimes some people can use different names”. He then

recalled that Angel Gabriel was called Gibril, Gabriel Massaquoi or something similar. These names referred to the same person as Angel Gabriel.

Back to the defense

The defense then asked X2 if he remembered discussing the name Gibril Massaquoi with the Finnish police. He testified that he used the name Gibril Massaquoi as he was one of the mercenaries. He did not know that the interview was about Gibril Massaquoi before meeting with the Finnish police, because he did not know what the interview was about. During the war, X2 had heard from the aqbah men that Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel were the same person.

X2 stated that everyone in Angel Gabriel's group spoke English, but he had not heard him speak himself. He knew before his police interview that there would be a trial in Monrovia, but he did not know the details of it. The witness repeated that he did not know who the trial was about but said that he knew he would be asked about the crisis and about Monrovia particularly. He had heard from his friend [REDACTED] in Tubmanburg hat there were questions being asked, but he did not know that it was 'a trial like this'.

It was pointed out that the witness was not asked to make a photo identification during his police interview.

Witness X6 is heard

The prosecution questions X6

The prosecution began by asking about X6's participation in the wars in Liberia. The witness testified that he had fought in World Wars I-III in 2002 and 2003. In World War II, he was in Foya, Voinjama and Lofa all the way to Montserrado county, Monrovia. X6 began in Lofa and when LURD pushed them they retreated thorough Gbarpolo and Bomi to Montserrado. He was fighting on the government side and LURD followed them all the way to Monrovia. They started in Gbarpolu and Bomi, and then were pushed to Iron Gate and then to VOA. Once they were pushed out of these places, they ended up in Waterside. The witnesses' troop was on Front Street and the rest of the government forces were on Waterside. Benjamin was at the EJ Roye building and Michael Highgrade at the Ducor building.

According to X6, Angel Gabriel was in control of Water Street all the way to Old Bridge. Benjamin Yeaten was the key commander, the head of the whole military. He was stationed at EJ Roye. Angel Gabriel was a commander with his own group called aqbah. Most of them were mercenaries from Sierra Leone. Angel Gabriel was also from Sierra Leone and spoke Krio with his men. X6 testified that he would often come in a pickup and talk to his troops, and then leave in the pickup. He described that civilians would come over from West Point and look for food during pauses in the fighting. Some of them were hit by stray bullets.

Next, X6 was asked about an incident where civilians were killed. One morning, he was on patrol, coming from Johanssen towards Waterside. He and his boss Glasco were travelling on a pickup towards the LEC junction. They heard gunfire, so they drove down. As they arrived on the scene, they saw two bodies in front of a store and five bodies inside it. Many aqbah men were on the scene and Glasco asked who had given the order. One of the aqbah men responded that it was

Angel Gabriel. Glasco also asked where Angel Gabriel was, and the man responded that Angel Gabriel had just gone towards the Old Bridge. A friend of X6's, [REDACTED], said to Glasco that if they just sit there, the Sierra Leoneans will kill all of their citizens. Glasco then went after Angel Gabriel, telling them to stay behind. When Glasco went to Angel Gabriel, the two began to argue, and began to walk back towards X6 and the others. Angel Gabriel said: "It was not me, it was the President that gave the order to shoot people that were looting". Glasco then called Yeaten, who came to the scene. He inspected the situation and ordered the men to meet him at EJ Roye. Glasco, Angel Gabriel and Benjamin Yeaten all got on pickup trucks and left. X6 and others followed and waited for them outside EJ Roye. After a while, Glasco came out and gave his men money to get food. They later ended up in Congo Town.

X6 testified that he did not see Angel Gabriel after disarmament. Disarmament took place less than two weeks after the incident in Waterside, when UNMIL came in. He specified that the store was located near a triple junction between Water Street and LEC Gate, not far from West Point. He saw the bodies of civilians and soldiers all over Waterside in addition to the ones that he previously mentioned. Some were hit by stray bullets, some were killed in battles, and some had broken rules such as by looting and were killed. X6 was not there during the killing done by Angel Gabriel at the store, but he testified that commanders used to do so. According to X6, he mostly saw Angel Gabriel in Montserrado, not elsewhere in Liberia. The witness also explained that when UNMIL arrived, they were ordered to disarm and go home.

The defense questions X6

The defense began by asking about the witness' troop in the government forces. He testified that his troop was called the War Veteran Special Task Force. Angel Gabriel was in control of Old Bridge. Glasco was his commander, and he and his troop were on Front Street. The defense referred to his police interview, where X6 had said that Salami was responsible for the Old Bridge all the way to LEC. X6 responded that Salami was under Angel Gabriel, who was one of the leaders of the whole war. The defense also pointed out that at the lower court, X6 had mentioned the bodies near the store, but had not spoken anything about bodies being inside the store as well. X6 responded that he had said in the lower court that there were bodies inside the store, but he had not gone inside to check. The defense referred to his lower court's testimony, where he had testified that Glasco had seen dead people in front of the store. X6 confirmed that he was personally present at the store.

X6 explained that when he got to the store, they were told that Angel Gabriel was on his way and Glasco went after him. The defense pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that Angel Gabriel was stationed at Old Bridge and Glasco had gone to meet him and tensions were running high. X6 confirmed this. Glasco went after Angel Gabriel towards Old Bridge, while X6 and the others stayed behind. The witness repeated that Benjamin Yeaten came and all the commanders went to EJ Roye.

The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that there was a rocket attack and Glasco had been wounded, and Salami and other soldiers had died. There was confusion as to when this had happened, in relation to the events and the store and the commanders going to EJ Roye. An audio recording of his police interview was played. X6 testified that he remembers saying this, including mentioning of the rocket strike. He explained that it had been a long time since the events and some of the things were coming back to him only after listening to the recording.

In his police interview, the witness had also mentioned that Angel Gabriel took 7 people under the bridge. The witness responded that he wasn't there himself, but someone told him about it in Congo Town. X6 confirmed that he had only been personally present at the biscuit store. He also stated that the rocket strike occurred on the same day as the incident at the biscuit store.

The witness then explained how he got into contact with the Finnish police. He was contacted by one of his men, [REDACTED], who put him in touch with Employee 1. X6 was not aware whether [REDACTED] had been interviewed by the police or whether Employee 1 had spoken to him. He only told him that there people were looking for people who had been involved with the aqbah troops. He did not tell him any details about the case. The defense referred to his lower court testimony, where X6 had said that [REDACTED] had contacted him and asked him to come to the police interview, and that they were together. X6 then responded that he was not sure whether [REDACTED] actually came to the interview. The defense pointed out that X6 had told the lower court that [REDACTED] had told him details about the case. The witness denied this. X6's police interview recording was played again and it was revealed that there had been an error in interpretation.

Next, X6 was asked about the photographs that he was shown by the police to identify the perpetrator of the acts he had spoken about. X6 testified that he has issues with his eyesight.

Final question from the prosecution

The prosecution then asked the witness a final question about what he had heard about the people being taken by Angel Gabriel. The witness responded that he was told that Angel Gabriel killed the seven people that he had taken under the bridge.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

February 24, 2023 – Day 19: Looting civilians shot in Waterside

Today, the Court heard two additional witnesses in relation to the events around Waterside area in Monrovia.

The first witness, a former soldier serving on the government's side during the Second Liberian Civil War, described his wartime experiences in Monrovia during the battles between LURD rebels and the government forces around the city center, especially Waterside area. The witness spoke of an incident, where some soldiers, including the witness himself, broke into a store. Soldiers at the scene were given an order to shoot civilians that had been looting.

The second witness worked in construction in Monrovia, when LURD rebels were facing the government forces around Waterside and Vai Town. He described the difficult food situation in the city at the time, leading many civilians to resort to looting. The witness described a specific incident, where soldiers were ordered to drive looting civilians away from a store, resulting in the killing of many people.

The Court concluded the proceedings for this week today and will continue on Monday 27 at 9 am with three additional witnesses.

February 24, 2023 [Liberia] Day 19: Looting civilians shot in Waterside

Witness Y5 is heard

The prosecution questions Y5

The prosecution began their questioning by asking about Y5's participation in the wars in Liberia. Y5 testified that he had fought in government forces between 2002 and 2003. At the time, he fought in Waterside as part of a militia, during what he named "World Wars I-III". According to Y5, in Waterside, there were foreign troops from Sierra Leone, called 'aqbah', fighting on the government's side. He explained that the fighting on Waterside was against LURD, who was, at the time, on Bushrod Island, which is over the Waterside Bridge past Vai Town. According to Y5, Waterside Bridge is also called Gabriel Tucker bridge.

Y5 testified that civilians were not treated well in Monrovia and especially in Waterside. He stated that a lot of killings took place and that there were orders to kill looting civilians. Some of the soldiers also looted in Waterside. When asked, Y5 testified that Chief Fifty, also known as Benjamin Yeaten, gave the order to kill civilians who were looting. He explained that commanders gave orders to the aqbah men, who would then execute the orders. Y5 and other militia men were below the aqbah men in the chain of command. The witness named some aqbah commanders, such as General Salomi, General Yaney, Angel Gabriel and Mickey. He testified that he personally witnessed the aqbah men execute Yeaten's orders multiple times.

The witness described an incident where General Salomi died, and the aqbah men were angry. The next day, he and other militia men broke into a store, as they thought it would contain valuables. They realized that it was a cookie store and whilst some of the militia men looted the store anyway, according to Y5, the Sierra Leoneans did not care for such goods. The store remained open and civilians from West Point and Rock Town came over. As the civilians entered

the store, Chief Fifty gave an order to kill everyone going to the store and the aqbah men carried out the killing. According to Y5, after Salomi's death Angel Gabriel was the aqbah man present at the scene. He stated that he did not hear Fifty give the order to Angel Gabriel. After the order was given, civilians were shot inside the store, and he saw bodies in front of the shop. Y5 testified that he was present that day and personally witnessed the shooting take place and confirmed that the aqbah men and militia men were shooting. He explained that Angel Gabriel was also shooting, he was an aqbah commander at the time and he was angry because of Salomi's death. Y5 had heard Angel Gabriel speak and described him speaking English with a Krio accent. Y5 testified that he heard Angel Gabriel give orders to the aqbah men, ordering them to "shoot to kill."

Y5 explained that Angel Gabriel was usually up on Rocktown Hill and the other soldiers below, they did not usually see him during the day. According to Y5, Sierra Leoneans called him Gibril Massaquoi and Liberians called him Angel Gabriel.

Y5 estimated that peace came to Liberia within a week from the shooting at the store. He gave details on the location of the cookie store: near the government's checkpoint in Waterside, at the Gabriel Tucker Bridge, also called New Bridge. The government had another checkpoint at the LEC gate. Y5 confirmed that he had not heard any news about a person being arrested in relation to the events in Waterside before his interview with the Finnish police.

The defense questions Y5

The defense began their questioning by asking about the government checkpoint at the bridge. Y5 named two commanders who had been at the checkpoint: Tony Montana and Zigzag Marzah. He confirmed that there was no separate base for government troops by the bridge, only the checkpoint. The defense pointed out that Y5 had testified in the lower court that Benjamin Yeaten was in command of the checkpoint, which he confirmed. Angel Gabriel had the same checkpoint by the bridge, but he was also located up at the LEC or down by Waterside. Y5 had heard the name Angel Gabriel in Waterside from soldiers whose names he could not remember. He knew a person called Mickey, he was one of the aqbah men. The defense referred to the police investigation, where Y5 had said that he was friends with a Sierra Leonean man named Mickey who had told him the name Angel Gabriel. Y5 first stated that he could not remember saying this, but after hearing the audio of the police interview, he stated that he did in fact remember.

Y5 stated that he had seen Angel Gabriel two or three times. He described a car with the Sierra Leonean flag and a lion on it that 'they' used to travel in.

Next, there was a discussion as to the last time that Y5 had seen Angel Gabriel. He estimated that the first time that he had seen Angel Gabriel was in Duala, the second time in Artington, and the last time he was in Waterside, "the day before the ceasefire, just before the roads reopened". He stated that the last time he saw Angel Gabriel, he hadn't done anything to him apart from give the order. The defense then referred to the police investigation, where Y5 had stated that he had seen Massaquoi the last time one day before the ceasefire, at nighttime, and he was playing music and smoking with his friends. Y5 confirmed this, stating that he meant that he hadn't seen him do anything bad at that time. He then clarified that this last time occurred after the order to kill civilians had been given, estimating that it was about a week later. The defense then referred to the lower court's judgment, where Y5 had testified that the last time he had seen Gibril

Massaquoi was in Waterside, the night before the ceasefire, where he saw him and another Sierra Leonean man get into a car and drive away. Y5 confirmed this, stating that he could not remember which of the two times was actually the last time that he had seen Massaquoi.

Y5 testified that Massaquoi moved at night because he was a mercenary. He was not sure why mercenaries usually moved at night but estimated that it was because they didn't want people to see them. According to Y5, Angel Gabriel stayed up in Rocktown during the day.

He then explained that the first time that he had seen Angel Gabriel, in Duala, he had seen him with other people inside a car. He explained that he later found out in Waterside, when the name was used, that the person in the car had been Angel Gabriel.

Y5 stated that Angel Gabriel had been a member of a delegation. He had seen Angel Gabriel in a convoy, with a Sierra Leonean flag on the car, which he thought was the RUF. He estimated that he had seen this convoy before World Wars II and III, in 1997.

Next, Y5 explained how the Finnish police had gotten in touch with him through his friend, Witness X2. Y5 had been working in the jungle, when X2 called him and said that the Finnish police was in Liberia and wanted to ask about the Liberian wars. Y5 was not aware whether X2 had been interviewed by the police at the time, X2 had only told him that he was told about the matter. X2 asked Y5 whether he would have any information about the war, as he knew that he had been involved. When the defense pointed out that Y5 had told the lower court that X2 had asked him if he had any information about the RUF's connection to the civil war in Liberia, he confirmed this. He then stated that Employee 1 had called him to the interview.

Y5 stated that he had heard, a long time ago, that Angel Gabriel lived on Fourteen Houses Road in Monrovia. The defense pointed out that during the police interview, Y5 had told the police that he was not aware where Angel Gabriel had lived. Y5 responded that he did not know it at the time, he had only heard of it. He explained that "the generals didn't have a specific house or area where they lived", and "you could hear that he lived somewhere and see that he lived somewhere else".

The prosecution asked a final question about what he had said at the lower court regarding burying bodies. Y5 explained that when attacks happened, bodies were left on the street and were buried later.

Finally, the prosecution pointed out that the witness had correctly identified the photo of the defendant during his police interview. The defense asked the court to take into account the date on which the police interview and photo identification had taken place.

Witness Y4 is heard

The prosecution questions Y4

The prosecution began by asking where Y4 had lived during the wars in Liberia. He testified that at the beginning of the wars, in 1989-1990, he was living in Monrovia and fled to Lofa with his parents. He then returned to Monrovia in 1991 or 1992, when he was 12 or 13, while there was still fighting there. Because of the fighting, Y4 could not stay in school, so he began working in construction with his father. Y4 testified that he did not participate in any fighting or join any

armed groups. However, he witnessed different battles, stating that from the years 1991-96, he witnessed Charles Taylor's rebels fighting against peacekeepers. Y4 explained that the fighting ended in 2003 with the ceasefire and Taylor leaving the country. According to Y4, before the end of the war, LURD and government forces were fighting in Monrovia, in Duala, Freeport, Waterside and on Slipway bridge. There were mercenaries from other countries, such as Guinea and Sierra Leone, fighting on the sides of both the government and LURD. According to Y4, the mercenaries from Sierra Leone were called aqbah troops.

Y4 saw these troops fighting in Monrovia. He testified to seeing them when he would go looking for food, such as in Duala and on the Stockton bridge, which he explained was in Gardnersville, on the road between Gardnersville and Freeport. Y4 explained that he had worked as a contractor for Benjamin Yeaten to work for his mother. While working, he saw some of the commanders of the aqbah troops. He stated that as he was on good terms with the soldiers, he heard the names of the commanders from them: Mosquito, Prince, Gibril, Salome and a Kissi person from Sierra Leone. According to Y4, Gibril was also called Angel Gabriel by some soldiers and his Sierra Leonean friends called him Gibril.

Y4 estimated that he saw Gibril in 2001 or 2002 in Monrovia, when there was fighting between LURD and government troops. According to Y4, civilians were badly mistreated at the time, they were killed due to stray bullets and intentionally killed. Y4 explained that when civilians went looking for food, soldiers would break into stores and would shoot to scare them away and some civilians were killed. According to Y4, incidents like this happened in Waterside and in Gardnersville, on the Stockton bridge.

Y4 testified that he was in Waterside when one such incident occurred, clarifying that he was not directly at the scene. He testified that he had gone to Waterside to look for food when he heard gunshots and saw people running away. After the gunshots, Y4 saw bodies on the ground. According to Y4, on the same day, one of the aqbah generals had been killed, so the men were angry and began firing "suppressing fire." Y4 described how he heard gunfire from LEC gate and saw a group of people running from the store towards Johanssen. He saw bodies both inside and outside the store, and injured people trying to crawl away. The store was in Waterside among other stores, but Y4 could not remember exactly where. According to Y4, the aqbah general that had been killed, called Salome, had been killed in the mortar fire coming from the other side of the bridge. The people shooting inside the store were government forces mixed with the Sierra Leonean mercenaries.

The witness confirmed that he had not seen the actual shooting take place, but he had seen aqbah commanders in Waterside at the time. They were giving orders to drive the civilians out and shooting, killing and wounding civilians. According to Y4, there were both aqbah and ATU commanders on the scene and Angel Gabriel was one of the aqbah commanders giving orders. Y4 explained the different times that he had seen Angel Gabriel/Gibril: at Yeaten's apartment with "the late Vinny", once by the Kiss FM radio station in a jeep, and at Waterside, the day civilians were killed at the store.

According to Y4, the battles in Monrovia at the time were called World Wars I-III. He estimated that the incident in Waterside took place between 2002 and 2003, maybe early 2002. According to Y4, it took a few months after this incident "for things to calm down" in 2003. The witness testified that Angel Gabriel spoke in good, clear English. Angel Gabriel was the most common name that he heard, and he was also called Gabriel or Gibril by the Sierra Leoneans. Y4 confirmed

that he had not heard any news about someone being arrested in Finland before his police interview.

The defense questions Y4

The defense began their questioning by asking about Y4's construction work. He testified that the site was on Duport Road, in Pipeline, Paynesville. There were no military operations occurring in the area at the time, but he sometimes heard the sounds of fighting from the work site. Y4 estimated that the site was a long way from Waterside, about 30 or 45-minutes' drive. He explained that in addition to looking for food in Waterside, him and the other construction workers were sometimes forced to carry ammunition and supplies for the soldiers. At the time of the incident in Waterside, Y4 was looking for food, he was first ordered to carry ammunition to EJ Roye and went to Waterside to look for food afterwards. Y4 testified that he never carried arms. He was at EJ Roye when he heard heavy firing coming from the direction of Old Bridge and Vai Town.

The defense asked Y4 to clarify the locations of a few areas in Monrovia. He confirmed that Crown Hill is near EJ Roye, at Broad and Johansson Street. Sniper Hill is located up at Mamba Point, on Benson Street. Y4 explained that he went to Waterside when the shooting had ended to look for food to loot. Once asked, Y4 confirmed that he had told the lower court that he had heard Angel Gabriel give orders to shoot. He explained that he knew that Angel Gabriel was the commander of the aqbah troops, that one of their commanders had been killed and they were angry about it. While he was not on the scene himself, he was in the area, so he could see Angel Gabriel, who was the only commander on the scene, giving orders. The witness further explained that Angel Gabriel was on a straight road, so could be seen from a distance. He could hear and see the order being given from a distance and then went to take cover.

Y4 confirmed that he had heard the name Sam Bockarie and had heard that he had been killed in Nimba. He testified that he had seen Bockarie in Monrovia while he was working at Yeaten's mother's house, when aqbah soldiers had come to the house. The soldiers had said their names.

Next, there was a discussion as to the use of the word "kamajaro" soldiers, which Y4 had used to describe Sierra Leonean soldiers, and whether Angel Gabriel was a commander such troops and / or one of them.

The Finnish police had contacted Y4 via Employee 1. Employee 1 had reached Y4 through his friend [REDACTED]. According to Y4, Employee 1 was speaking with [REDACTED] about looking for witnesses, and [REDACTED] gave him Y4's number. The witness explained that this friend was the one who had hired him to work for Benjamin Yeaten. Employee 1 had then called him. Y4 could not remember whether his friend had told him that he had given his number to Employee 1, or the other way around.

Finally, Y4 estimated that he had identified Gibril and Yeaten from the photos shown to him by the Finnish police.

Before concluding the hearing, the prosecution had some remaining questions for Y4. He was asked about the potential other names for Angel Gabriel. The witness testified that his full name is Massaquoi. Y4's late brother was an ATU commander, and he was present when they had a big party and the names of these high-ranking officials were mentioned. Y4 had also heard the name

Massaquoi from child soldiers following the Sierra Leoneans. According to Y4, the incident in Waterside took place during the day. He also confirmed that Yaney was also present at Benjamin Yeaten's mother's house, he was one of the bodyguards.

Finally, was pointed out that that, at his police interview, the witness correctly identified a photo of the defendant as 'Massaquoi', and stated that a photo of Sam Bockarie resembled Salami.

February 27, 2023 – Day 20: Looters targeted

Today, the Court began the fourth week of proceedings in Monrovia by hearing two witnesses.

The first witness testified about cooking for various troops in Waterside, when battles between government forces and LURD rebels were ongoing. He described an incident where a commander of the Sierra Leonean troops was killed. Following this, soldiers rounded up civilians that had been looting nearby shops under a bridge. The civilians were executed.

The second witness described meeting various RUF commanders in Monrovia. He had been at a base near Waterside when he heard heavy gunfire coming from nearby. He managed to get a closer look at the scene and saw looting civilians being executed near a store selling foodstuffs in Waterside.

February 27, 2023 [Liberia] Day 20: Looters targeted

Witness Y8 is heard

The prosecution questions Y8

The prosecution began by asking Y8 about his participation in the wars in Liberia. The witness testified that he was a food officer between 2000 and 2003. He was a part of the militia and his commander was General Solo. He was stationed in Waterside in Monrovia, on the bridge. The bridge was called Old Bridge, and is now called New Bridge. Y8 cooked in the market building which was located on the left when crossing the bridge from Vai Town. There were two groups stationed at the bridge, militia troops and the RUF, who were Sierra Leonean and whom the Liberians called aqbah.

The witness named several aqbah commanders such as Salami and Yaney. Angel Gabriel was the most high-ranking commander. He saw Angel Gabriel twice in Waterside. The witness could tell that he was also Sierra Leonean, because he would command the whole group and they spoke in ‘Sierra Leonean’. Y8 had himself heard Angel Gabriel speak. The first time he met Angel Gabriel, he had brought soup to him, and soldiers had said that he was their leader.

The second time that Y8 met Angel Gabriel was during an incident in Waterside. The witness described an order that came down that nobody should loot. A grenade exploded and injured Salami, Angel Gabriel had been called to the scene where civilians had been arrested by soldiers for looting. This was the second time that Salami had been wounded. Yaney and Salami were arguing about killing people that had looted when the grenade hit.

When Y8 saw Angel Gabriel again the same day, Angel Gabriel was saying that since Salami had been killed, the civilians should be killed. The witness has not seen him since. He did not know whether the order to kill civilians was carried out, but stated that they were taken under the bridge. Y8 testified that he saw civilians being taken under the bridge as his kitchen was very close to it, he could see what was happening there from the kitchen. He did not see the executions himself, but he heard from soldiers coming and going in the kitchen that the general had given an order to kill people. The witness estimated that four civilians were taken under the bridge, they were men and boys.

The witness did not know any additional names for Angel Gabriel. At the time of the incident, there was fighting in Monrovia. The fighting was not in Waterside, but towards Vai Town direction, on the Freeport side and in the Gardnesville area. The fighting was between LURD rebels and government troops. These battles were called World Wars I-III, some were were fought in July 2001 and some in July 2003. Y8 had also heard about similar incidents where looters had been killed: he had seen bodies when taking food to the troops and had been told that they were looters. According to Y8, it took "a little bit of time", over a month, after the incident with the civilians being taken under the bridge for peace to come to Liberia. The witness had not heard any news about a person being arrested in Finland before his police interview.

The defense questions Y8

The defense began by asking about the second time that Y8 had seen Angel Gabriel. He confirmed that this was after the jungle mortar hit Salami, when Angel Gabriel was called to the scene. The looters had been already captured and brought to the place where Salami was. The defense then referred to his lower court testimony, where he had testified that he had been sitting in the kitchen when Angel Gabriel came on a pickup with men on it. Y8 confirmed this. The defense pointed out that at the lower court he had said that some of the men in the pickup had no clothes on, some were tied up and that Angel Gabriel had said that they were looters. Y8 responded that it was not Angel Gabriel who said this, but his men.

The defense pointed out that in Y8's testimony at the lower court, he gave the impression that Angel Gabriel initially arrived on a pickup and left, and then returned after Salami's death to order to kill the looters. Y8 testified that the first time he saw Angel Gabriel was when he arrived on the pickup with the men, and the second time was after Salami had been hit on the bridge. Angel Gabriel got angry and said that the looters should be killed. Angel Gabriel had not been there himself to witness Salami's death, but he had heard of it. According to the witness, Angel Gabriel rarely came to the front line.

Y8 was asked again about the times he saw Angel Gabriel that day. Y8 answered that Angel Gabriel came on the pickup and he took the soup to him, the same day they heard noise from the bridge and Salami was wounded. He confirmed that an order was given to kill the civilians taken under the bridge. He had not seen the civilians being killed, as from the kitchen, he could see the bridge, but not underneath it. After repeating that he didn't see the killing of the civilians, he stated that one of them had survived as someone had spoken out for him. Y8 had heard about these events from other soldiers and militia members. He confirmed that Angel Gabriel had ordered the killing of the civilians. The defense raised that he had said in his police interview that Angel Gabriel ordered the execution of five of the seven men taken under the bridge, and two civilians were released. Y8 confirmed this and said that he could not remember the exact details as it had been a long time since the events. He could not remember how long it took from the time that the civilians were brought on the pickup to their execution.

The witness testified that he learned the name Angel Gabriel from his soldiers, who used the name for him. The violence towards civilians took place in the afternoon. He testified that he had spoken about these events with the Red Cross before his interview with the Finnish police. He couldn't remember when this was, but recalled that they had asked about things such as his experience and the food available during the war. The Finnish police had asked him whether he had spoken about Angel Gabriel with the Red Cross and he had stated that he had not.

Next, Y8 described how he had been contacted by the Finnish police. One of his friends called him and asked him to come, as there were people that wanted to interview people that had participated in the war. This friend did not tell him anything else about what the Finnish police wanted to know but knew that he had information on the war as they had been together. The defense pointed out that Y8 had used a different name for his friend when he testified at the lower court, to which he responded: "I was afraid, I didn't know what they were going to do him".

The people interviewing Y8 at the Red Cross were white. They did not ask about generals or leaders. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the police that both white and black people asked about the war and the generals that participated in it. He answered that there were indeed both black and white people, but the white people from the Red Cross were asking the questions. The witness maintained that the people with the Red Cross did not ask him about the generals, and nobody besides the Finnish police had asked such questions. Y8 was also asked about some workshops he had mentioned to the Finnish police. He testified that he had been to workshops a long time ago, but he could not remember exactly. He speculated that it was organized by the Red Cross. When the defense pointed out that he had previously said it was organized by Save the Children in 2015, he confirmed this. He had not brought up the name Angel Gabriel during these discussions.

Y8 further confirmed that he had not heard news about an arrest in Finland.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Y7 is heard

The prosecution questions Y7

The prosecution began by asking Y7 about the time he lived in Monrovia. The witness testified that he moved to Monrovia in 1999 and had lived there until 2005, 2006 or 2007. He had experienced the three wars in Monrovia, World Wars I, II and III, when LURD was fighting against Charles Taylor and the Sierra Leoneans, the RUF. He had met some RUF troops in Monrovia. Some were based in Waterside and their "big man", the late general Mosquito, was stationed at Twelve Houses Road. The witness had been to Twelve Houses Road and saw many generals in a meeting there. He recalled the names of Benjamin Yeaten, Zigzag Marzah and Gibril Massaquoi, who was also called Angel Gabriel. His friend took him there, and had told him that the meeting was about attacking LURD rebels. The witness could not remember when this meeting took place.

Y7 testified that he saw Gibril Massaquoi for a second time in Waterside. He went to Waterside with [REDACTED] and they went to a base where Gibril Massaquoi and others were staying. While they were there, Gibril Massaquoi was called and asked to go to a store. A few minutes after he left, the witness heard heavy gunfire. He and [REDACTED] went and saw civilians who were getting food from a store and soldiers were shooting them. The witness later heard Gibril Massaquoi order his soldiers to shoot and 'escaped' the situation.

The witness described the store which sold sweets, biscuits and other foodstuffs. It was located on the right when going towards Old Bridge, which is now called New Bridge. Y7 and [REDACTED] snuck towards the gunfire and managed to get close to Gibril Massaquoi. The witness described

the distance between them as the distance between the panel of judges and the back of the courtroom. He heard Gibril Massaquoi give an order to kill the looters. He was speaking Krio English, like Sierra Leoneans speak. The witness saw the soldiers shooting as he escaped towards Broad Street. He could not estimate how many people were killed at the store.

After the incident at the store, Y7 saw Massaquoi once at a junction, but he could not recall anything particular about it. He had heard the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel from [REDACTED] at the meeting at Twelve Houses where he met Benjamin Yeaten. According to Y7, almost everyone at the meeting introduced themselves. Massaquoi introduced himself as Gibril Massaquoi. Y7's friend, [REDACTED], used both the names Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi and his soldiers in Waterside called him Angel Gabriel. Y7 estimated that the incident at the store took place weeks after the meeting at Twelve Houses Road. He could not recall how long afterwards peace came to Liberia but estimated that it was several months or almost a year after the incident.

The witness confirmed that he had not heard any news before his police interview about a person being arrested in Finland in relation to the events at Waterside.

The defense questions Y7

The defense began by asking Y7 about the meeting at Twelve Houses Road. The witness did not know of any other names for Benjamin Yeaten or Zigzag Marzah. During the meeting, Y7 was outside by the fence, the meeting was happening inside a house within the fenced area. The house was called Black Gate, it was located on Twelve Houses Road. The witness could not see inside the house or hear what was being discussed. His friend [REDACTED] came told him what had been discussed inside. The witness described the times that Gibril Massaquoi introduced himself: by the fence, after the meeting, and others also called him by that name. Y7 clarified that people arrived at the house, within the fenced area, and introduced themselves. Benjamin Yeaten then came and they went inside to have their meeting.

The defense referred to his police interview, where Y7 had said that he met more than fifteen people inside the house. The witness confirmed that there were a lot of people there but he couldn't remember all their names, and clarified that he had meant the area within the fence. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the police that the soldiers were standing and the commanders were sitting, and that Yeaten introduced them. Y7 confirmed this and stated that Yeaten introduced the soldiers who also said their own names out loud. He testified that he had forgotten the detail about the soldiers introducing themselves in his police interview and remembered it later.

Regarding Waterside, Y7 testified that he did not know who had called Massaquoi, and that he did not find out who it was. The defense pointed out that he had told the lower court that Massaquoi had been called by Benjamin Yeaten. The witness responded that [REDACTED] had told him this later. The defense further pointed out that Y7 had told the lower court that Massaquoi and Yeaten were supposed to meet on the street where Slipway Depot is. He confirmed this and said that [REDACTED] took him to the place they were supposed to meet, but Yeaten was not there.

Y7 confirmed that after Massaquoi had left the base, they heard heavy gunfire and they went after it. He described the noise coming from looters being shot at the store. Gibril Massaquoi had

given the order. At the base, he didn't know who had given the order or what was happening, but found out when he went towards the scene. According to the witness, Benjamin Yeaten had given a general order to shoot looters in Monrovia. As he was on his way to the scene, he could hear the gunfire. It continued when he arrived and when he escaped the scene. The witness testified: "When I crept and came around a certain store I heard him say Fire! Kill! Kill them!". This incident took place during the day. He did not drive to the scene from the base. He remembered that Massaquoi had taken a pickup, but he himself did not. An audio recording of his lower court testimony was played in court, where he had said that he had also taken the pick-up. Y7 explained that this was a mistake, as he had walked from the base while Massaquoi and the others took the pickup.

Y7 testified that the first time he saw Massaquoi was at Twelve Houses Road, the second time was at Waterside and the last time at the junction. The defense pointed out that he had testified at the lower court that he had seen Massaquoi over the period of four or five months, which he confirmed.

The defense also referred to Y7's testimony in the lower court, where he had said that he had not known Massaquoi's real name until he heard it from [REDACTED]. He responded that Massaquoi did not come up to him personally to introduce himself, but he heard his name outside in the yard when people were talking.

Y7 further testified what he knew about Sam Bockarie. He testified that Bockarie died in Nimba, but he did not have much more information as to his death. Bockarie had gone to Nimba from the Ivory Coast. He did not know the reason why he was killed. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the police that he had heard that Yeaten had killed Bockarie and that Charles Taylor had given orders to kill him and his men before they could provide information to the UN. Y7 confirmed that these were rumors that he had heard.

The witness then explained how he had gotten in touch with the Finnish police. He was contacted by Employee 1, who, according to him, had gotten his number from his friend, [REDACTED]. Y7 was also asked about another friend of his. He responded that both friends had, on different occasions, given Employee 1 his contact information. When Employee 1 called him, he asked if he had been present during the civil war. He told him that there were people coming from abroad to conduct interviews and to find out what happened during the war. The witness came from the bush to meet Employee 1 who brought him to a hotel in Monrovia. He could not remember anything else about his interaction with Employee 1, or whether he had mentioned the name Gibril Massaquoi or what the investigation was about.

There was then a lengthy discussion regarding whether the witness knew that the case was about Gibril Massaquoi, and how he came to find out. There was also discussion as to whether Employee 1 had mentioned the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel to him or whether he had brought them up spontaneously.

Finally, Y7 stated that he may have been mistaken when he testified in the lower court that he also saw Massaquoi shooting looters.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 2, 2023 - Day 23: Kamatahun Hassala hearings begin

Today, the Court moved on from Waterside to discuss events that occurred in and around Kamatahun Hassala, Lofa County, Liberia. The Court heard testimonies from three witnesses that had been living in different villages at the time of the events.

Two witnesses testified about civilians being captured from their villages and brought to Kamatahun Hassala, where they were imprisoned along with other civilians that had been captured from neighboring villages. The witnesses recounted how a commander ordered soldiers to lock the civilians in a house and burn it down with them inside. While they were different ages at the time, both witnesses lost family members during the course of these events.

Another of the witnesses was from Kiantahun. He recounted a similar story. On the first day of the incident, he had written the date of the event down on a blackboard. He had later written a list of people that had died in the burned house.

The Court will continue its hearings on this matter on Friday 3, 9am.

March 2, 2023 [Liberia] Day 23: Kamatahun Hassala hearings begin

[editor's note: closed brackets contain notes helping to clarify the text, they do not appear in the original testimony]

Witness Civilian 36 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 36

The prosecution began their questioning by asking about Civilian 36's background during Liberia's wars. Civilian 36 testified that he was living in Kiantahun. At the time, there was fighting in the area around his village, where Sierra Leonean and Liberian fighters, as part of government forces and the RUF, were fighting LURD rebels. Civilian 36 testified that there were no soldiers stationed in Kiantahun, but he saw government troops as well as RUF rebels there together.

Civilian 36 testified about an incident that took place in Kiantahun. Before beginning his testimony, he relayed to the court that recounting the story was "like pouring salt in the wounds". The witness described how RUF rebels were hunting them, killing many people. Their commander, Gibril Massaquoi, gathered a lot of people together, took them to Kamatahun and burned them. Gibril Massaquoi was one of the RUF rebels. Civilian 36 had seen him himself in Kiantahun, and learned his name from his soldiers. Civilian 36 was not captured, but his sister was captured in Kiantahun and taken to Kamatahun – she had escaped, and told him what happened when she had returned. The witness recounted how his sister told him that the people were going to be burned. She had not seen the people being burned herself, but had later heard that the people that had been captured were indeed burned in Kamatahun.

According to Civilian 36, over forty people were taken from Kiantahun to Kamatahun that day. In addition to his sister, his wife was among those that were taken from Kiantahun to Kamatahun. His wife, however, was burned in Kamatahun. He estimated that the events took place in 2001 or 2002, when there was fighting all over. He further estimated that it occurred in August, on a

Monday, as he recalled that he was on his way to do laundry. He did not however have a particular day that he did his laundry.

The witness further testified that the soldiers entering Kiantahun believed that the villagers were Muslims and that their guns would not work against them. For that reason, they collected people to burn them. He stated that Gibril Massaquoi was there, and he heard him giving orders to capture people. Civilian 36 described Massaquoi as speaking Krio, and that his soldiers called him Chief Gibril and Gibril. As the soldiers left Kiantahun with the people that had been captured, Massaquoi went with them to Kamatahun. After the people had been captured, Civilian 36 escaped to the bush.

The defense questions Civilian 36

The defense began by asking Civilian 36 about the names of other soldiers that were present in Kiantahun. According to Civilian 36, Gibril Massaquoi used many names, including 'I Want to See Light'. He had three different names. The defense pointed out that in the lower court, the witness had testified that Massaquoi used the name 'Second to God'. Civilian 36 responded that "this story will never end", explaining that he may forget some things and remember other things each time he is asked to talk about the same events. According to Civilian 36, Massaquoi also had a Mende boy with him called Ansu, who was killed in Kamatahun. The defense pointed out that Civilian 36 had testified in the lower court that amongst the soldiers were Stanley, Zig Zag and Jalloh. The witness confirmed this, adding that these soldiers burned a house in Kiantahun. The defense also pointed out that he had told the lower court that Gibril and his bodyguards were speaking Mende instead of Krio. Civilian 36 responded that those two are both languages of Sierra Leone and Gibril Massaquoi and his men spoke both.

The defense then referred to when Civilian 36 had said to the lower court that over twenty people were taken from Kiantahun to Kamatahun. He responded that he had initially thought so, but as he had taken a look at a list, he realized that the number was much bigger. Civilian 36 testified that he cannot read or write, so he told his brother, who had gone to an Arabic school, to write a list of the people who had been taken to Kamatahun based on names that he gave him orally. He stated that he returned from exile in 2003, and this occurred in 2004. When the defense asked the witness if he could provide the list, he refused, stating that "whenever I hear names on that list or see names on that list, the tears come. I keep it hidden, for my future and for my children". He accepted, however, to go back and submit a photograph of the list to the court.

According to Civilian 36, soldiers came to Kiantahun in the early morning. The defense referred to the police investigation, where Civilian 36 had given the precise date of August 13, pointing out that he had told the police that he could not remember the year, but now in the court of appeals had placed the events in 2001 or 2002. Civilian 36 responded that his cousin told him the date, month and the time of day after his police interview. He did not know whether his cousin had been interviewed for this trial, but stated that he was a school teacher and had been involved with Plan International.

Civilian 36 knew Civilian 50, saying that he is a farmer and lives in Kiantahun. He stated that they had discussed the incident, including the date August 13.

Next, Civilian 36 testified that he saw a boy being killed in front of the house of [REDACTED], where he is now buried. He was put on a mattress and burned. When the defense raised that he had said at the lower court that the boy was killed with a knife, Civilian 36 responded that there were two boys with the same name. One of them was killed on a mattress and the other was killed with a knife. Both of these killings took place in Kiantahun. When asked why he had not mentioned the other boy in the lower court, Civilian 36 responded that he had forgotten. The defense further pointed out that Civilian 36 had told the police that no one was killed in Kiantahun. Civilian 36 testified that this was an error, since people were in fact killed in Kiantahun: "they killed my brothers and they killed my people, then I will say they didn't kill anybody?" According to Civilian 36, another of his cousins was killed in Kolahun.

Next, Civilian 36 gave the names of some of the people he knew that were killed in Kamatahun, including his mothers and two of his uncles. He explained that people in Africa might have two wives and if two brothers are married to different women, but they all live in the same house, both women can be called mothers. Civilian 36 confirmed that the other woman he had referred to as his mother was the wife of his uncle. Civilian 36 explained that his wife that he had described as having escaped from Kamatahun was his first wife, and after her death, he had got remarried to have two wives.

According to Civilian 36, his child also died in relation to the incident in Kiantahun. This child died in the bush, as he had "no support." The defense referred to the lower court testimony, where the witness had testified that the child was with his mother. Civilian 36 repeated that the child was with him in the bush.

According to Civilian 36, there is a chalk board in Kiantahun. He could not say whether a date had been written on that chalk board, as it is in a school, and he had not been there.

Next, there was a lengthy discussion as to how the witness had been contacted by the Finnish authorities. Civilian 36 did not know anyone named Employee 1 or Interpreter 4. He did not know why Employee 1 had noted down his information in April 2019.

Finally, it was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Civilian 43 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 43

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 43 where she had lived during the wars in Liberia. Civilian 43 testified that she is from Lofa and lived there during the war. There were soldiers from multiple groups in her village. The leader was Gabriel, Gibril Massaquoi. Civilian 43 learned this name as the soldiers came into their village and killed their people. Gabriel was the leader, everyone else was government troops. Civilian 43 was present in the village when the soldiers came. She testified to seeing the bodyguards of Angel Gabriel kill her parents and saying to bring other people outside the village back to the village.

The witness testified that Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi were the same person. She described how she was captured and put in a circle with other people. Gibril Massaquoi stood up and asked the people who had been captured whether they knew his name. "I can't forget that

name till I die". She also explained that she heard the name Angel Gabriel during the war, and that he was the leader of the group that came to their village.

According to Civilian 43, it was Gabriel Massaquoi's group that killed her parents. She described how she heard shooting before she came outside the house. The witness confirmed hearing Gabriel Massaquoi ordering his soldiers to kill people. Her parents had been killed before she and others came outside the house. As they came outside, they were tied and beaten by the soldiers. Many people were captured, they were beaten.

Civilian 43 described being taken to Kamatahun first. On their way, they passed by six different towns and in each town, more people were captured and added to the group. The leader, Gibril Massaquoi, came with them to Kamatahun. According to Civilian 43, he spoke Sierra Leonean English. There were multiple groups of soldiers and leaders, but Civilian 43 and the others were only under the control of Massaquoi's group. She could not remember the names of any other soldiers or leaders that day, estimating that she was 5 or 6 years old at the time.

The witness then described what happened when they got to Kamatahun. When they got there, she saw people in a house with a tarpaulin roof. The people in the house were crying and the soldiers were saying that they would kill them all. As Civilian 43's group was on the road later, they saw a building on fire and people crying next to it. They sat down and joined another group, this other group told them that "their turn would come tomorrow". After the people had been burned, Civilian 43's group continued to Vahun and Yandehun. She could tell that people were being burned, as she heard crying and shouting inside the house. There were soldiers surrounding the house. The witness confirmed that she heard the screams herself and saw the house on fire. She had not seen it being lit on fire, but her group was tied up in a line on the road next to the house.

Civilian 43 testified that Gabriel Massaquoi gave the order to burn the house. She did not hear him give the order, but stated that he was the leader of the group and they did whatever he told them to. She explained that he said that he was 'Next to God', and had heard him say this when she was tied up with the other people that had been captured. According to Civilian 43, he said "Anything I want to do I will do it, even if there's no small soldier around".

Civilian 43 repeated that as the house was burning, she was sat in front of it tied to the other people that had been captured in a chain. The group spent the night in Kamatahun. After Kamatahun, they were taken to Vahun, Popalahun, Yandehun and finally to Foya. They were being transported by the same group of soldiers.

Next, the witness described her escape. A woman who took pity on her, as a young child, took her to be hidden with a group of people that were hiding. This woman told another woman to escape with the witness at night and to take her through the bush back to her village.

According to Civilian 43, when they entered Kamatahun, Gibril Massaquoi was there and told them that his people were still inside the house and that he would burn the house. After that, the group saw the house on fire and heard people crying. Civilian 43 testified that the soldiers entered her village just before the sun came up, and there had not been any soldiers or fighting nearby before that day. The witness was not sure whether the war had been ongoing in Lofa before that morning. She clarified that her village, from where she had been taken, is called Kparwohun. The witness also clarified that the group of people that had been captured was not

next to the house that was on fire, but was taken up a hill and could see the building on fire below. Angel Gabriel was not with them on the hill, he stayed by the house and small soldiers had taken them to the hill.

The defense questions Civilian 43

The defense began by asking about Civilian 43's age at the time of this incident. She responded that she was 5 or 6 years old, but does not have a birth certificate, so is not certain how old she is. Civilian 43 remembered having told the Finnish police that she did not know her age at the time, since all those who were supposed to know her age had died. Civilian 43 testified that she woke up to shooting as soldiers entered the village early in the morning. As they heard the gunshots, her mother told them to get up. Her parents went to the door first and they were killed. Civilian 43 named some other people close to her that were killed during this attack on the village. She stated that she was so young at the time that she could not tell the difference between different relatives and friends in the community. She confirmed that her uncle and his wife/wives were also killed.

Next, there was a discussion as to the names that Civilian 43 had used to describe the leader of the group. According to Civilian 43, Gibril Massaquoi himself told his name to the crowd that had been put in the circle. She could not remember the name she had told the Finnish police during her interview. According to the defense, who also played an extract of her police interview, she had used the name Chief Gabriel, and the name Angel Michael before the lower court. The witness denied this, stating that perhaps the police had misunderstood her, but that she may have used the name Angel Michael. Civilian 43 then asserted that "the person who captured us was Angel Gabriel Massaquoi".

Civilian 43 knew Kamatahun to be Kamatahun Hassala. She confirmed that it was daytime when they saw the house burning from the hill. The hill was not far from the building, it was located right before the entrance to Kamatahun. The house that was burned had a tarp roof. She testified that some of the people who had been captured went back down to the village afterwards, but did not go near the burned house. The witness could not say whether other buildings were burned in Kamatahun. She stated that when she returned after the war, she saw buildings that had been burned and broken into.

According to Civilian 43, child soldiers were using a name Charge the Bush at the time of the incident, but she could not remember what it meant. The defense pointed out that she had said in her police interview that Charge the Bush was the person who set the building on fire. Civilian 43 testified that she was not involved with Charge the Bush, as she was under the control of Angel Gabriel Massaquoi's group. The defense further pointed out that Civilian 43 had said that Charge the Bush was one of Angel Gabriel's bodyguards and that took her as a wife, which she denied.

On her escape, Civilian 43 testified that the woman who had taken pity on her showed her an older woman that she was to follow, and they escaped together towards Sierra Leone. They hid in the bush and slept in farm kitchens. Civilian 43 ended up in Mano Junction, Sierra Leone. The defense pointed out that Civilian 43 had told the police that she met a Kissi man and walked to Buedu, Sierra Leone. Civilian 43 responded that that was the same thing, as Buedu is also in Sierra Leone. She saw the Kissi man for the first time during the war and he went back home. The

defense pointed out that she had told the police that she was assaulted on her way and the Kissi man died. The witness responded that she did not have knowledge of this.

Next, the defense asked Civilian 43 if she had ever seen Gabriel, Zigzag Marzah and Stanley together, which she denied. She was also asked about a situation where Gabriel had called a woman to him and said that she is going to be eaten. Civilian 43 responded that she did not know of such an event and could not remember saying so to the Finnish police. The defense further referred to the police interview, where Civilian 43 had said that upon hearing this, she and other women started to cry, that they did not see the killing took place, but saw the woman cut in pieces, that the body parts were sold and that Zigzag Marzah and Stanley were also present. Civilian 43 maintained that she had not witnessed such a thing. She stated that she had only told the police that she was on a farm and the commander, Angel Gabriel Massaquoi, came and took them to Kolahun.

Finally, the defense asked Civilian 43 how she had been contacted by the police. She explained that she met them when they came to her village. The police said they were looking for people, who'd had bad things happen to them during the war. Their leader was Interpreter 4, a Gbandi man, who told them to go to Kolahun and speak about their experiences. Civilian 43 relayed her experiences to Interpreter 4, a white woman and a white man. Civilian 43 had spoken about her experiences with the village chief before talking to the Finnish police. She stated that when she had spoken with the village chief, she had not used the names Gibril, Gibril Massaquoi, Angel, or Angel Michael, but Angel Gabriel Massaquoi. According to Civilian 43, the village chiefs were aware of what had happened to her before Interpreter 4 and the white people came.

Civilian 43 could not estimate how long it had been since the incident. She has no birth certificate. She was living in Bolahun when Interpreter 4 asked her to go to Kolahun for an interview. She could not estimate how old she is now.

It was pointed out that the witness did not identify Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

Witness Civilian 50 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 50

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 50 where he had lived during the war in Liberia. Civilian 50 testified that he lived in Kiantahun village, Kolahun district, Lofa county.

He went on to describe an incident in April 2001, when soldiers came and killed an old man and took another man to Popalahun. That same Saturday, soldiers burned ten kitchens and two houses. Since that April, Civilian 50 and others ran "from one place to another". They returned to Kiantahun in August. On 13 August 2001, Civilian 50's son died and he went to a cemetery to bury him. As he was returning from the cemetery, a rebel group attacked Kiantahun. This group was a mixture of RUF and NPFL troops. Everyone in the village was captured. According to Civilian 50, one man said in Mende that they would kill all the people who had been captured. They started to tie up the men one after the other, but he himself was tied less tightly than the others. He described being hit on his head with the butt of a gun, from which he still has a visible scar.

Next, the witness explained that they were told that they would be taken to Kamatahun Hassala. They took bush roads from one village to another. In Kiantahun, there was a man who called himself Halagie Rebel. Once they got to Kamatahun, they slept there. The next morning, a group of soldiers came up to them and began introducing themselves. The next morning, the soldiers said that they would kill them all immediately. Civilian 50 explained that during this time he had interacted with the rebels and they had figured out that he could read and write. Before they had entered the village where the rebels were planning to burn them, Massaquoi introduced himself. Zigzag Marzah was also there. As they were putting people inside a house, one of the rebels called Civilian 50 out. The rebels wanted him as their secretary to keep statistics. Civilian 50 was brought an "academic weapon", a pencil. He described watching as all the others were locked inside a house, the rebels set the house on fire and everyone inside was burned alive. Civilian 50 told the court that every time he has to remember these events, "it is like an old wound that is struck again with a knife and opened up again".

According to Civilian 50, after his people had been burned alive, he moved with the rebels from one place to another, until they crossed the border to Sierra Leone. He explained that some of the group that was taken to Kamatahun managed to escape on the way, but that he was the only person that was taken all the way to Kamatahun who survived.

The soldiers that came to Kiantahun in April 2001 were comprised of RUF and Charles Taylor's men. Civilian 50 understood the Sierra Leoneans speaking in Mende saying that they would kill them. He testified that the whole of Lofa county was at war at that point. He described how fighting in Lofa began in 2000, when RUF troops came to Voinjama and went back to Sierra Leone. The RUF and Taylor's forces were fighting against Liberians, against LURD. He explained that in 2001, LURD was in Kolahun/Kulbah City, and the RUF/Taylor's troops came to Kiantahun to fight against them. Civilian 50 speculated that they came to Kiantahun because the population in the village was Muslim, and that the soldiers believed that their weapons would not work against them, which is why they were taken to Kamatahun to be burned. According to Civilian 50, the route they took from Kiantahun to Kamatahun Hassala was not the shortest route, they took detours through different villages.

According to Civilian 50, the man speaking Mende in Kiantahun, who said that they would be all killed, was called Halagie Rebel. He was part of the RUF. The witness then showed the scar on his head to the court.

Civilian 50 further testified that the soldiers that came to Kamatahun Hassala the next morning were mostly RUF members who came from Vahun and Popalahun. According to Civilian 50, Massaquoi had not been in Kiantahun, they met him in Kamatahun. He explained that he figured out that he was a high-ranking officer from the way the other soldiers respected him. Massaquoi was surrounded by his soldiers when he introduced himself. The witness estimated that he did so to make them afraid of him. Civilian 50 knew that he was Sierra Leonean from the way that he spoke.

According to Civilian 50, Massaquoi was there when the building was set on fire: "that was their agreement, the RUF and Charles Taylor". He stated that Massaquoi himself did not set the building on fire, but gave orders when the house was burned. While Civilian 50 did not hear him give the order, he testified that Massaquoi was in charge of the situation as one of the commanders. The witness continued, stating: "If I was a commander in a time of war and my subordinates did something I didn't want them to do, I would stop them from doing it. But if I just

shut up, then I'm responsible for what they do". The witness did not know the namesof the soldiers that set the house on fire.He was not aware who the most senior commander was, but according to him, both Zigzag and Massaquoi were there when the house was burned.

Civilian 50 could not estimate the number of people that were burned inside the house. The prosecution showed him a piece of written evidence of a list of names. Civilian 50 recognized the list, he had written it during his hearing before the lower court. The witness explained that the names he'd written down were of the people who, on August 13, were captured, taken away, and killed. Those who had managed to escape were not on the list.

When asked whether he had witnessed other violence, he responded: "Whenever there's a war, there's a lot of destruction". In Kamatahun Hassala, soldiers went to the bush and captured people, killing some and taking others to Sierra Leone.

The witness then described, in detail, the location of the house that had been burned, explaining that it was on the right side of the road coming from Popalahun.

According to Civilian 50, men, women and children were taken from Kiantahun to Kamatahun Hassala. He explained that around the time the house was burned, there were multiple occasions where women from Kiantahun and other places in the bush were raped in Kamatahun Hassala. According to Civilian 50, soldiers were "using their power" on them, and he heard shouting. Some of them were RUF and some of them were Charles Taylor's soldiers. When asked about Massaquoi's role, the witness reiterated the point that he had made earlier that a commander is responsible for what his unit does. He thought that Massaquoi was aware of what his soldiers were doing to the women, as he did not see him do anything to prevent it.

The witness testified that when he came to Kamatahun Hassala, he was there for a few days and it was chaos. Civilian 50 left with the rebels to Popalahun and then Sierra Leone, estimating that he reached Sierra Leone that same year. Civilian 50 remembered the date August 13 2001, because he had written it on a chalkboard on a wall. It was located in a house that had a separate room for the chalkboard. He had written the date down "so that the day would be remembered, because the soldier had said we're going to kill you all".

The defense questions Civilian 50

The defense began by asking Civilian 50 about the first time he saw Zigzag Marzah. The witness responded that he saw him in Popalahun, and people were talking about him. He also saw him again in the same place after the 'massacre'. He testified that Zigzag killed people in front of him and ate some of their hearts. Zigzag also killed Civilian 50's older biological brother. The defense pointed out that he had not mentioned that Zigzag had killed his older brother in previous hearings. The witness replied that if he could speak his mother tongue Gbandi to the court, he could explain the situation much better.

The defense also pointed out that Civilian 50 had only used the name Massaquoi at his police interview and did not use that name at all the last time he was in court. Civilian 50 explained that the man had two names, Angel Gabriel and Gibril, both being the same Massaquoi, and exclaimed that he did not see the issue as important. The witness used a well-known parable to explain his point: "if you tie the rope on the goat or bring the goat to tie the rope, is it not the same goat?".

According to Civilian 50, the house was burned during the day. The soldiers wore mixed clothing, some had soldier trousers, some had berets, some were wearing ordinary clothes. Civilian 50 also clarified that he had not meant that soldiers forced themselves onto women. According to him, whenever there is war, women may be too afraid to resist, or they might think that when the soldiers have them, they will set them free later. Nevertheless, some of them were "used and killed".

The defense pointed out that the last time he was in court, Civilian 50 had said that he was scared to use the name Massaquoi. The witness denied this. He asked why the same issue was being asked repeatedly, and reasserted that the same person had two names, just as he himself answered to different names on different days.

Civilian 50 testified that he did not go to Sierra Leone with soldiers, but with other civilians. As he had been making documents for the soldiers, he asked them for permission to leave and they let him go to Sierra Leone. The defense pointed out that Civilian 50 had testified in the lower court that he had gone to Vahun with the soldiers and then further to Sierra Leone. Civilian 50 denied this, saying that he went to Vahun and Sierra Leone with civilians. The defense further pointed out that in the lower court, he had said that the soldiers had asked him to come back to Liberia. Civilian 50 responded that "I had crossed the border to heaven, why would I come back to a war zone?". The witness then described how he went to a refugee camp in Sierra Leone. He met some of his relatives there and told them about his experience. A white woman from Geneva wanted to take his picture, but he refused.

Civilian 50 testified that he might know Civilian 36 from Kiantahun, but he could not remember. The day of the hearing, Civilian 50 had not met any other witnesses in the case. He had spent the previous night in Monrovia, and was brought there by the people he was testifying for. He came from Lofa, in a car with other people, but he did not know who they were or why they were travelling to Monrovia. According to Civilian 50, there were four people in the car, including the driver, Civilian 43 and Civilian 45. The defense pointed out that the court had heard Civilian 36 earlier that day and he had told the court that he knows Civilian 50 well. The witness replied that "knowing me is one thing, but maybe our way of interaction is not the same". He denied discussing the date, August 13, with Civilian 36. Civilian 50 could not remember whether Civilian 36 had been in the Kiantahun group that was captured.

Civilian 50 testified that he had written the list of victims that the prosecution had presented to him in Kiantahun. After he had gone to Sierra Leone, he thought about what had happened and wrote the list. He did not write it in one sitting, as the names came to him across different days. The defense pointed out that the last time Civilian 50 was heard in court, it was agreed that he would write a list for the parties of the trial. According to Civilian 50, the list the prosecution had showed him was the one he had written in Kiantahun, as the one he had written in court contained less names.

The defense showed the same list the prosecution had shown again. Civilian 50 confirmed that he had written that list, but could not remember when he had done so. He also stated that he had written a list for the Finnish police, which contained about fifteen names. After giving the list to the police, Civilian 50 thought about the matter and wrote the longer list. The last time he had been in court, he had brought this longer list with him, but he had not brought it this time. The witness was asked to write another list for the appeals court. There was a further lengthy discussion as to when and where the witness had written each of the lists. The president of the

court then offered the court's position and asked the parties to move on with their questions. Civilian 50 finally testified that he had the shorter list he had given to the Finnish police with him when he was drafting the longer list.

Civilian 50 testified that he does not know Employee 1. He did not know how Employee 1 had received his contact information in April 2019, over half a year before his police interview.

According to Civilian 50, when the soldiers arrived to Kiantahun on August 13 2001, he got to Kamatahun on the same day.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 3, 2023 – Day 24: Forced labor in Lofa

Today's hearing was focused on forced labor imposed on civilians by soldiers in and around Foya, Lofa.

Three witnesses testified to being captured and rounded up in the town center of their villages. They described how soldiers looted belongings from their houses and forced them to carry the stolen goods on their heads across different villages to Foya. Once the groups arrived in Foya, the goods were presented by the soldiers to the commander.

While one civilian managed to escape along the way, the other two were held or imprisoned in a building in Foya for multiple days. One of the captives was able to escape with a friend, while the other was later released after appealing to the soldiers. Each witness described soldiers mistreating and killing civilians during these events.

Hearings will continue Monday 6, 9am.

March 3, 2023 [Liberia] Day 24: Forced labor in Lofa

Witness Civilian 27 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 27

The prosecution began by asking Civilian 27 about where she was living during the war. The witness testified that she lived in Kortohun village, Kolahun district during the war. The road from Kolahun to Foya goes through Kortohun and there is another village nearby on top of a hill. She was living in the village by this road.

Civilian 27 testified that in 2001, she was sitting with a group by the road. They saw people running towards them who were saying that war is coming, war is here. The witness's mother was in Babahun and she ran there to tell her family about the war. As she arrived, she heard someone say "Stop, don't move". Some people went inside her house and started carrying things away. She and her son were captured and tied up. They were told that everyone should go to Kondubengu and were taken through bush roads from Kondubengu to Foya. The people that had been captured were ordered to stand in a line. A child soldier hit the witness in the back with a knife. She managed to escape and to hide. She heard a gunshot, her son was killed. She left and went to tell her relatives about what had happened.

The people that ran towards the witness in Kortohun as she was sitting by the road were civilians. She was tied up in Babahun. She and her son were tied by soldiers. There were different groups and commanders present, but the man who captured them in Babahun said that his name was Gabriel. The witness described the different locations of Babahun, Kortohun road, and Kondubengu in relation to each other. The man called Gabriel spoke Krio, like Sierra Leoneans. She described as he captured people, put them together in a large group, and said "I am Gabriel Massaquoi". Gabriel Massaquoi came to the village on a jeep, all his men were wearing camouflage clothing.

Civilian 27 was in Babahun when she met Gabriel Massaquoi and heard him ordering for the people to be taken through Kondubengu to Foya. She stated: “That is the bypass. When they capture civilians, they don’t use the main road”. The civilians were ordered to carry valuable looted goods. She was carrying goods on her head such as “country clothes”.

The witness could not estimate how long it took for them to go from Babahun to Foya. She did not go all the way to Kondubengu as she escaped before arriving there. The people who were captured were gathered in the center of the village. Civilian 27 was hit on her back in Babahun, when people were being gathered. The witness still had a scar on her back and showed it to the court.

Civilian 27 described that when she escaped from the soldiers, she hid behind a tree. She heard her son shouting for her, then a gunshot, and she never saw him again. The witness named some people from the group that were taken from Babahun towards Kondubengu, including a village chief. She stated that she was the only one in the group from Kortohun. In Babahun, the soldiers told the village chief to gather everyone together.

The defense questions Civilian 27

The defense began by asking Civilian 27 about her interview with the Finnish police in Voinjama in 2019. The witness recalled that she had told the police that Angel Gabriel came to Lofa in 2001, she was in Babahun village and was captured. The defense pointed out that she had told the police that this occurred in 2002, and she was living in Kortohun 2 village. She had specified the year as 2002 as it was the year her son was killed. The witness responded that she had made a mistake and that the year was in fact 2001. The defense also pointed out that the witness had told the police that Angel Gabriel Massaquoi had come by car to Kortohun 2. The witness responded that Angel Gabriel did not come to Kortohun, as she herself left Kortohun and went to Babahun, where she was captured.

Civilian 27 testified that after she escaped and her son had been killed, she went back home to her village. The defense pointed out that she had told the police that her son was shot on the way. At her police interview, she had stated that she did not see who shot him and began to cry, but the soldiers forced her to keep walking with the load. The witness responded that she was hiding when her son was killed, so the soldiers could not have forced her to carry the load.

The witness testified that she was not re-captured after her escape, and went to hide with her relatives. While they were in the bush, they heard a lot of things happening around them, with people being killed and houses being burned. After being in hiding, Civilian 27 went to Kortohun. The defense referred to her testimony before the lower court, where the witness had testified that as they were advancing towards Kondubengu, the soldiers had shot her son. She had previously testified that they had a big container of money and began arguing about it. Civilian 27 responded that as they were shouting at each other, she escaped. The defense continued, as Civilian 27 had previously testified that as the group was on its way to Kailahun, she had left her son’s body and went to hide. The witness denied having been on the way to Kailahun, repeating that they went from Babahun to Kondubengu. Her parents were in Babahun. When the defense asked her whether she had told her mother that her son had been killed, she denied this, saying that she did not meet her mother during the fighting but only after the war. She hid in the bush, and she didn’t come across any soldiers while she was there. Her parents were not there with her.

The witness testified that the only violence she was subject was the injury in her left shoulder. The defense pointed out that she had told the lower court that a child soldier had threatened to cut her ear off. She recalled that the child soldier attempted to cut her throat, but she managed to dodge the strike and was hit in her shoulder instead. The witness testified that her hearing was still intact. The defense pointed out that she had testified in the lower court that she was hit in the ear so hard that she could not hear anything from that ear to this day. Civilian 27 denied this.

Civilian 27 did not know anyone of else that had been killed besides her son, but she heard gunshots. When the defense reminded the witness that she had previously testified of 4 people that had been killed by soldiers, she responded that she had forgotten about that, and confirmed that these people were killed in Babahun.

The witness also testified that her father's property was stolen, and his house was burned down. She described Angel Gabriel speaking Krio and introducing himself as Gabriel, Angel Gabriel Massaquoi, and Second to God. As this commander arrived, all the people in the village were gathered together. He said "Give me light" and fires were lit. The soldiers arrived when the sun was hot. Civilian 27 could not remember whether it was the rainy or dry season at the time, but it was not raining that day.

According to Civilian 27, Angel Gabriel Massaquoi and Gibril Massaquoi are the same person, he was using a war name. She confirmed that she had not discussed these names with anyone between the police interview and her hearing at the lower court.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to her at her police interview.

Witness Civilian 18 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 18

The prosecution began by asking where Civilian 18 lived during the war. He testified that he lived in Kortohun 1 up on the hill. Civilian 18 testified on a Monday in early 2001, he was in Kortohun, and soldiers entered the village. He and the people that he was with were arrested and put in the middle of the village. The soldiers began looting their houses. At the time, some people were not in the village but doing farm work in the bush. Everyone in the village was gathered and they were forced to go towards Foya. The people were carrying things on top of their heads and were beaten by the soldiers. They went through Kailahun 1 and Kondubengu on their way to Foya.

They arrived in Foya the next night with the loads still on their heads. The soldiers put them in an old, large store. The next morning, Civilian 18 and others were taken to another location where another group of people had been captured. On the way to Foya, the soldiers set houses on fire. Inside the store in Foya, all the people from Kortohun were ordered outside. They were asked if there were any soldiers among them, to which they responded that they were all civilians. Civilian 18 was taken somewhere and saw a man wearing soldier clothes. There were many soldiers, but the witness could remember their leader. As he was standing in the middle, he said that he was Angel Gabriel, Next to God and the leader of the group. He ordered them to return to the old store and stay there until he decided what to do. When they were inside the store, people came and told him that two people from his village had been killed, including his wife.

The witness testified that when they were inside the store, the soldiers allowed them outside in the afternoons to look for food. After two days of being in Foya, he and his friend escaped without wearing shirts or footwear. On the second day, they were sent to look for food for the people captured from Kortohun. His friend knew how to speak Kissi, so they were able to escape.

Civilian 18 testified that the soldiers that came to their village spoke Krio and some spoke Mende, the witness himself could understand a bit of both. He could remember that the day was a Monday, because on Mondays they had the market in Kolahun and that day, some people had already left to go there. The goods they were forced to carry included mattresses, rice and cutlasses. Many people, men and women, had to carry them, and he could not estimate how many. The soldiers set houses on fire, approximately seven houses in Kortohun 1 were burned down.

The leader of the group whom they met in the center of Foya was called Angel Gabriel, Gibril Massaquoi. The witness heard the man use both names himself, he heard him speak while the villagers were captured in a group together. Angel Gabriel spoke Krio. In Foya, people were gathered in a group, Angel Gabriel stood in front of them and introduced himself.

Civilian 18 did not know what happened to the looted goods that they carried to Foya. The two people that came to tell them about the villagers who had been killed were also from Kortohun 1, the witness and others had gotten to Foya before them. The witness testified that they passed people in Kondubengu and Kiantahun, but these other people did not join the group on the way to Foya.

The soldiers that came to Kortohun 1 were RUF, as “only the RUF spoke Krio”. There had been fighting near the village already before that day, in Foya district, Kolahun district and other places. Government forces and LURD were fighting at the time. The witness did not know whether the RUF was on the government’s or rebels’ side but saw them in the village.

Civilian 18 could not remember in which month the event took place. Gibril Massaquoi told them that he was leading the RUF. The witness named a few people that were with him in the group that walked from Kortohun 1 to Foya. They had no village chief at the time, but the witness named the previous chief.

He did not know whether Angel Gabriel was aware that they were carrying goods on top of their heads to Foya. The soldiers did not tell them anything, only ordered them to put the things on their heads and walk.

The defense questions Civilian 18

The defense began by asking whether Civilian 18 had spoken with anyone about the name Gibril Massaquoi since his last hearing in court. The witness could not recall doing so. The defense pointed out that he had not mentioned the name Gibril Massaquoi in the lower court or at his police interview. The witness stated that he thought he had done so.

The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness had said that it was a Monday morning on 16 August 2002, about ten o’clock, when the soldiers came to Kortohun 1. He confirmed that it was indeed in the morning but was not sure about the date. However, he was sure that he had said 2001, not 2002. The defense asked him how he could remember the date so

well in his police interview but not in court. Civilian 18 responded: “You know when you come from war, your mind cannot be set. At times we say things and forget”. The witness could not remember the date, nor whether he had spoken about it with anyone else. He testified that he knows many people who have the same name as Civilian 45, but not one that lives in Kortohun 1. Civilian 18 could not remember discussing the date of the event with this person. Civilian 18 had not travelled from Lofa to the hearing with Civilian 45 and did not know if they had stayed in the same accommodation before the hearing.

In connection with this event, the witness did not know about the death of any other people besides those he had previously mentioned. The defense pointed out that Civilian 18 had told the lower court that when the soldiers shot his wife, the bullet went through a baby’s arm and the baby still has a scar. He confirmed this, and stated that the child is still alive. The other woman who had died with the witness’s wife was his sister. She was with his wife making palm oil in the bush when the soldiers came. The women tried to run away and were shot by the soldiers. Civilian 18 had told the police about their death, but had not mentioned that they were his wife and sister since the police did not ask about his relationship with them.

Civilian 18 testified that he met Angel Gabriel on his second day in Foya. The defense pointed out that Civilian 18 had told the Finnish police that when they arrived in Foya, Angel Gabriel ordered for them to be imprisoned in the store. The witness did not recall saying so. The leader of the soldiers who came to the village was called Edward. He took the villagers to Foya. The soldiers were dressed in different ways, some in soldier clothes and some in civilian clothes. Civilian 18 did not know whether they had a base in Foya. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the lower court that there was a large house in Foya on the main street, which was the soldiers’ base. Civilian 18 denied saying that this building was a base.

The witness then testified about how he was put in touch with the Finnish police, through some people that came to his village. The first people who arrived were black. They came one afternoon. The witness could not remember what year it was. After that, a second group of people, who were white, came to the village. Civilian 18 could not estimate how long after the first visit the second group of people came. He could not recall the names of the people that came to his village. He had heard of Employee 1, but was not sure where from. When the second group arrived, they asked if anyone in the village had anything happen to them during the war and he had put his hand up. They asked him questions which he answered. Civilian 18 could not recall a village meeting that discussed this second group of white people coming to the village. He testified that they have village meetings almost every month.

It was pointed out that the witness did not identify anyone from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Civilian 45 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 45

The prosecution began by asking about where Civilian 45 lived during the war. Civilian 45 testified that he lived in Lofa county, Kolahun district, in Kortohun village. Kortohun village was located near Foya, and shared a border with Kissi tribes in the area. The witness testified that around 2001, he saw armed men entering his village. As these men entered, they called everyone to the center of the village. When the villagers had been gathered, they began looting belongings from

their houses. People were put in a line, looted goods were placed on their heads, and houses were lit on fire. The armed men took them to Kailahun and placed them in the center of the village. The armed men then went to Kailahun 2, which was located close by. The same occurred there, as the group looted goods, captured people, put the looted goods on their heads and burned houses. The group was then taken to Kondubengu, where they were held until 9 pm. They continued towards Foya and arrived there around 2 am the next day. The witness described how the men captured three women: one was 9 years old, the other was older, and the third was pregnant. The girls were taken to the commander in Foya. The men then began beating and torturing Civilian 45 and others. Civilian 45 and another person were held in the same room and the men began "using" the girls that they had captured. Two girls survived, but one, who was in her third month of pregnancy, did not survive. Civilian 45 spent four days in Foya before being released.

The witness then described the location of his village, in relation to Kailahun, Kondubengu and Foya. He described a road in Kortohun that splits the village in two, and leads to Keilahun, through Kondubengu and to Foya. Civilian 45 clarified that he was on a hill during the events and because of this incident came down from the hill. He could not specify when exactly the events occurred as "we were in a critical time at the time, it was a war". The witness described the armed men that entered his village as RUF soldiers, because they were speaking Krio, Mende and Temne. They had a leader called Nathan Kpeh. The goods that the villagers were forced to carry included sewing machines, mattresses, ducks and chickens. He described how the soldiers forced people to carry their own looted property. The soldiers told the civilians to carry the goods to Foya, because their commander was located there. The commander in Foya was called Gibril Massaquoi.

Civilian 45 learned the name of Gibril Massaquoi when the soldiers took the group before him and he introduced himself. He was speaking Krio and other languages. The witness explained that they could not look him in the face as he was so high-ranking. He used a war name, Angel Gabriel, and told the captured people that he was Angel Michael, an angel of God, and that if he says you live, you live. His soldiers called him CO Massaquoi, CO Gibril, CO Gabriel. Civilian 45 only saw Gibril Massaquoi once in Foya. He was taken before him and Massaquoi sentenced them to jail. They were told to set the looted goods on the ground before Massaquoi was called in.

The witness clarified that the girls he had previously mentioned were raped by the soldiers, and one of them died because of this. This was done by RUF soldiers. During the time they were in Foya these soldiers would beat them, and they would plead with them to let them go. After four days, they were put in the hands of the commissioner of Foya, Dennis Armah. Dennis Armah then released Civilian 45 with the others.

The defense questions Civilian 45

The defense began by asking Civilian 45 about the soldiers' arrival in Kortohun. The witness explained that the soldiers came to the village twice, the first time during the night. He was sleeping when the soldiers came, they broke into houses and began beating people. As he came out of his house, the same leader, Nathan Kpeh, was there. Civilian 45 begged the soldiers to release him. The soldiers released him, telling him that if he did not report to them by noon the next day, they would burn the village.

The defense then asked the witness about the theft of a pig. According to Civilian 45, the soldiers had come to loot the village. An officer in Charles Taylor's forces, Jah Brother, was there, he had captured a pig in Bonubu. Civilian 45 had told the soldiers that he would look into the alleged theft and that he would return the pig to the RUF if he found it in their village. However, according to Civilian 45, the pig was not in Kortohun, it had been taken to Babahun. The defense pointed out that Civilian 45 had testified in the lower court that a man had told him that they would accept his offer and that they would return the next day around 9 or 10 o'clock, and if they did not see the pig by then, they would burn the village. He confirmed this, stating that they said that they would come back the next day and that is what they did: they burned the village. The witness speculated that the story with the pig had been a set-up, the soldiers used it as an excuse to come to the village and do whatever they wanted.

Civilian 45 repeated that they arrived in Foya at night. They were brought to Gibril Massaquoi straight away. He maintained that his men were calling his name, including Nathan Kpeh. When asked about the names Commander Massaquoi, Gibril Massaquoi, and Angel Gabriel, the witness stated that "the name was floating, it was all around". The defense pointed out that Civilian 45 had not used the name Angel Gabriel when he testified at the lower court. The witness stated that he had mentioned the name, when he had testified that Massaquoi had told his soldiers to "give him light". Civilian 45 then clarified that when Massaquoi's group came to Kortohun, it was them who said it. He stated: "The people that came said it, so long as they said that one, it was the commander".

According to Civilian 45, when they were brought before Massaquoi, he thanked his soldiers and told the civilians to pack the goods and move them. The defense pointed out that Civilian 45 had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi had seen him and others carrying the goods to Foya. The witness did not recall having testified this and said that they were brought before him to report to him. He stated: "I'm here and you're changing story, the thing that happened with me is what I am talking, I am not a small boy for someone to tell me to say something, what happened to me is what I am saying". According to the witness, he and the others spent the night before Massaquoi with the goods and in the morning, they were sentenced.

The witness was asked about the year of the incident. He recalled the discussion that had occurred at the lower court, where he had said the year 2001 but the defense had asserted that he had previously said 2002. Now, he maintained that the events occurred in 2001. The defense pointed out that Civilian 45 had told the Finnish police that the date was Monday 16 August 2002, on the day of the market in Kolahun. The witness confirmed that the date was 16 August, but the year was 2001 or 2002. The defense pointed out that 16 August was not a Monday either in 2001 or 2002, to which he replied: "That is why I was saying the particular of dates are not important". The witness testified that he had not spoken with his friends in the village about this subject. He testified to knowing someone with the same name as Civilian 18 from the Kortohun area. He had not spoken to him, as they do not know each other. He stated that he had travelled from his hometown to Monrovia by car with Civilian 50 and Civilian 43. He then acknowledged that Civilian 18 had come to Monrovia on the same day as him. When the defense raised that both Civilian 45 and Civilian 18 had given the same date of the events and incorrectly stated that it was a Monday, the witness stated that he did in fact know the witness and had previously denied knowing him because: "You want to trap me, when you people know everything and you are asking me".

The witness was then asked about how he got in contact with the Finnish police. He confirmed that he had not discussed this subject within his village before the Finnish police had come. The defense read what he had previously described at the lower court on the matter, which he confirmed: “When they came they went in the town, I was on the road. They had the meeting we said something happened to us, everybody came and reported individually. We did not talk in Kortohun until we came to Voinjama”.

Finally, the witness recalled the names of some of the people that were captured with him in Kortohun. He stated that the war was raging all over their area in Lofa county when the soldiers arrived.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 6, 2023 – Day 25: A former soldier testifies

On Monday, March 6, the Court returned to its examination of events in Kamatahun Hassala.

A former soldier that had worked with the government forces recounted his experience with RUF fighters in Lofa. He described coming from a checkpoint to the village, where he had seen a house on fire and was told that there were people inside the burning house. He then described escorting some of the perpetrators to Monrovia as a consequence for their participation in these events.

In the second part of his testimony, the witness gave his account on events that occurred later on in Waterside, Monrovia. He described arriving onto the scene when soldiers were ordered to kill civilians that had been looting.

The witness affirmed that it was the same person that had ordered the acts in both Kamatahun and Waterside.

March 6, 2023 [Liberia] Day 25: A former soldier testifies

Soldier 50

<u>The prosecution questions Soldier 50</u>

The prosecution began the hearing by asking the witness if he had partaken in the fighting during the war. Soldier 50 explains that he was part of the GOL troops, but he did not occupy any officer position. He was assigned as security to the mansion, but he also went to Foya, and Lofa. When there, his commanders were ZigZag Marzah and Bush Commando, but the higher-ranking officer was General Stanley.

When he was in Lofa, fighting against LURD had been going on around the border, in Vahun, Foya and other towns he could not remember the names of. He also couldn't tell precisely what years the fighting took place, 2000, or 2002.

Soldier 50 shared that the GOL troops were fighting alongside RUF, as LURD troops were difficult to fight back and RUF came to support them. The witness was part of a welcome committee that took RUF soldiers from the border to Monrovia, where they resided at 12 Houses.

RUF fought alongside GOL in villages in Lofa, and once LURD had been cleared out they left to go back to Sierra Leone. The RUF commander at the time as Foday Sankoh, and when he died, the chain of command when tot Sam Bockarie aka General Mosquito. Soldier 50 also shared that he knew of Gibril Massaquoi, who was RUF spokesperson, Salami, and Superman, who died and was "one of the men Liberians really depended on" as he was Liberian but living in Sierra Leone.

The witness specified that Massaquoi was the most educated man amongst them, and that he played a major role in the RUF. Soldier 50 had met him in Lofa, in Foya, Vahun, and Kamatahun.

When asked by the prosecution, the witness shared that "there was war going on" and that "civilians cannot be treated right". Soldier 50 recounted how he had heard that Massaquoi had

killed his girlfriend, as another soldier had fell in love with her. He explained that Gibril Massaquoi's operation name was "Angel Gabriel".

Soldier 50 explained that when he was assigned in Kamatahun, people were burned alive in a house as they were accused of being rebels. Angel Gabriel had been left in command, as the other commanding officers had gone on patrol. He reiterated that he had been there: he was standing at the checkpoint when he saw the fire blazing. When he came to the scene, he saw people trying to put the fire off, and that they kept on saying there was people tied up inside the house. In the witness' mind, these things should not happen as it wasn't the frontline, but a friend of his warned him that if he had said something to the authority, the "man will do something to me". He was there on the scene until the house burned to the ground, but Angel Gabriel was not on the scene, but he had given the order. He knew Angel Gabriel was in Kamatahun because he would have known if people left.

Going back to escorting RUF troops to Monrovia, Soldier 50 confirmed that he saw Gibril Massaquoi amongst them. At the time, there was no fighting ongoing in the city, and almost a year after their arrival fighting ensued. Nobody knew that RUF troops had been in Monrovia prior to the fighting of World War I. LURD had captured Freeport, and Vai Town. The witness took part of the fighting at Waterside, where he saw Gibril Massaquoi. Soldier 50 was with a team of around 7 men when a slipper shop had been looted, and that RUF troops had open fire on the looters. He saw dead bodies. The witness said that Gibril Massaquoi, Stanley, and Salami were the operating officers – if they had been from Liberia, they would have had more sympathy for Liberians. He was told by a friend that it was they who had carried out the killing. Soldier 50 stated that the looting happened a few months before the cease fire.

Soldier 50 explained which route RUF soldiers took to go to Lofa, but he couldn't exactly remember the date, but said around 2001. He explained where Kamatahun was, and where exactly the burned house had been. He had not witnessed any other similar incidents. He reiterated that Angel Gabriel had not been on patrol, but he had been the commander left in charge that day. He knew because he was a soldier, not a civilian, and was aware of which commanders had been on patrol and who was left on the ground.

He remembered being interviewed by the Finnish police in 2020, and he had heard on the BBC that someone had been arrested in Finland for the incident in Waterside. He had not seen pictures of the person who was arrested, but he knew him in person and he knew he was in Finland, so it did not come as a surprise to him.

<u>The defense questions Soldier 50</u>

The defense started questioning Soldier 50 regarding his knowledge of Gibril Massaquoi's presence in Finland. The witness explained that he had moved there after "the case in Sierra Leone" – he learned about it in 2012 or 2013 – he had not been following the court's work. He had heard the news in a coffee shop but had the confirmation at his sister's funeral in 2019.

Regarding Gibril Massaquoi's operation name, Soldier 50 explained that in war people don't use their real names: he himself also used a war name, so that people would not find out their real name. "Some people play dirty games during the war: some people I have done things to them, I have forgotten, but those people I wronged have not forgotten."

The defense asked Soldier 50 about his earlier statement regarding Angel Gabriel killing his girlfriend, and why he had not shared this with the police or during the hearings at the lower court. The witness said that so many years had passed and things could slip out of his mind, and because he remembered during the current hearings, she shared it with the Appeals Court.

On the incident in Kamatahun, where the house had been burned down, the defense asked the witness why he had said to the prosecution that it had been the only incident of that nature he had witnessed, if during the police interview in 2020 he had said that he saw ZigZag burning a house with people in it, and then Gibril did the same. Soldier 50 responded that the issue at hand was Angel Gabriel, not ZigZag, and that ZigZag was "the worst" and that he committed a lot of crimes, not only in Kamatahun.

According to the police statement Soldier 50 gave in 2020, only men, suspected of being rebels, had been burned in the kitchen set on fire in Kamatahun, but during these hearings, Soldier 50 had said that both men and women had been present in the building. The witness said that he had not been present, and that he was told that both men and women where inside the house. He had told the police it was only men because they had been accused of being rebels, and women usually were not killed – except in crossfire – but raped.

He had been at the checkpoint in Kamatahun when he heard people screaming. The defense told the witness that during his recorded interview, Soldier 50 had said he had been in Vahun when he heard the news that Gibril had given the order to burn the house. The witness explained that he was supposed to be in Vahun, but that because LURD had been attacking, he stayed in Kamatahun. He had been on his way to the highway when he heard the news of Gibril giving the order, which, he confirmed, was relayed to him by other soldiers. The defense however said that during the police interview, Soldier 50 had said that he had heard himself Gibril Massaquoi giving the order: the witness explained that soldiers cannot be everywhere, and that when orders are passed around amongst soldiers, you will say "yes I was there, but in reality, I was not there". You do not lie about orders; it was a punishable offense.

The other higher-ranking officers came back to Kamatahun the following day. According to Soldier 50, they were angry about what had happened. And because of the burned house incident, RUF troops were then shortly moved back to Monrovia. During the lower court hearings, Soldier 50 had said that the RUF troops had been ordered to leave later the same evening, as the higher-ranking officers were really angry. The witness explained that one thing was a set military order, and another was a preparatory order. When Gibril Massaquoi arrived in Monrovia, there was no fighting going on there, only in Lofa. It took some time for the war to break out in the city as well, but he could not estimate how long. The witness said that Sam Bockarie was a live when the incident took place in Kamatahun. To the police, Soldier 50 had said that the time span between the burned house and the looting incident was about 5 months.

Soldier 50 said that in his opinion, Gibril Massaquoi spoke English or creole, but he was not aware if he spoke any other languages as he did not know his ethnicity; he knew that he was from Sierra Leone. He had learned Massaquoi's real name when he brought RUF troops to 12 Houses.

The police had contacted him through an organization working on the case, as they had sent people in Lofa to do an investigation. He had heard on the BBC about the case, and a man was looking for people who had information and who had been present during the incidents. He did not know the man's first name, but his surname was Employee's 1 surname. They exchanged

phone numbers, and then met in Monrovia. Soldier 50 explained that Employee 1 had not discussed anything regarding the case. Following further questions about whether or not Employee 1 had known him, the witness explained that he knew that he had been an ATU soldier. According to the police, Soldier 50 had said that he had been contacted through his cousin. The witness explained that he later realized, through talking with Employee 1, that their mothers were related. Soldier 50 had been put in touch with Employee 1 through a friend of his, who knew about his past. He clarified that his friend and himself are not related and that he had said he was his "cousin" because they spoke the same dialect.

Soldier 50 already knew what the police wanted to discuss, in relation to the war in Lofa and Gibril. According to him, Employee 1 had told him about this once he had arrived in Monrovia, that the police will want to know about the RUF. This, alongside the news, made the witness aware of what the police wanted to discuss. Soldier 50 explained that Employee 1 never specifically told him anything about what happened in Lofa, but only asked him if he was willing to talk to the police as Gibril was arrested in Finland: Employee 1 did not need to say that Gibril was Massaquoi, because Soldier 50 knew that Gibril was Massaquoi.

March 7, 2023 – Day 26: Lives lost in Lofa

On Tuesday March 7, the Court heard two witnesses, both of whom had been witness to killings of civilians in the area.

The first witness described being rounded up with other civilians and taken to Kamatahun Hassala. He managed to escape, and from there he saw soldiers putting people into a house and setting it on fire. The next day, he saw the bodies of 7 women that had allegedly been raped outside the Blacksmith's kitchen. The witness lost two family members in the course of these events.

The second witness was a victim of torture. He described being accused of being a rebel and being subject to acts of torture carried out to get him to confess. He also described other incidents that occurred in the area, such as the killing of a man and the extraction and cooking of his heart, as well as the burning of a house with people inside.

There will be no hearings tomorrow, Wednesday 8, as it is Decoration Day – a public holiday in Liberia.

March 7, 2023 [Liberia] Day 26: Lives lost in Lofa

Civilian 70

Prosecution questions the witness

The testimony began as the witness discussed that he had been living in Monrovia when the war broke out in 1990, and therefore he had returned to Lofa, where he is originally from. However, war broke out in the entire region of Lofa around 1999, as LURD rebels fought against Charles Taylor's troops. Government troops took both him and his wife from their village to Kamatahun, around 2001. There was plenty of people that were taken from their villages, and there were also soldiers from Sierra Leone – he remembered a few names, like Sam Bockarie, Mosquito, Superman, Issa, Massalay, Gabriel Massaquoi. He also remembered there was ZigZag Marzah, Z man, and Stanley.

Civilian 70 stated that soldiers could do whatever they wanted to the civilians. The witness said that when he was taken by the soldiers, he was wounded, his wife was killed, and that his auntie was burned in a house. When the prosecution asked, Civilian 70 shared that he had been present when his auntie was burned. They had been talking when soldiers told them to go inside a house. He had seen Superman and Angel Gabriel, who, according to him, was called Gabriel Massaquoi, and was a high-ranking commander. The witness said that Angel Gabriel gave the order to put the house on fire and said "you burn all of those dogs" – the witness stated that the house they were burning was the same as the one where his auntie was. He reiterated that Angel Gabriel was the same person as Gabriel Massaquoi.

The witness testified that his wife, among other women, was raped in a kitchen in Kamatahun. The incident took place before the house was burned. Seven women, including the Civilian 70's wife, were taken to a blacksmith's place, were raped, and then killed. The witness did not see his wife being brought there, but he was told by other villagers. As soon as he discovered it, he went

there himself, and saw his wife and other women in the house. He went there to talk to his wife, but he was beaten up and wounded. He explained that the blacksmith's house wasn't really a "house" but more of an open place. The women had been raped all night, and then killed in the morning. He saw his wife's body, and the other women too. Civilian 70 stated that he had heard Angel Gabriel giving the order to rape the women; he had invited the soldiers to help themselves to the women. The witness saw him at the blacksmith's house, and whilst he did not partake in the raping himself, he had given the order.

Civilian 70 mentioned that he has also witnessed a man being accused to be a LURD rebel and murdered by Angel Gabriel. He had shot the man and told him "tell God I Angel Gabriel sent you." The witness does not know what happened to the body. He then described to the prosecution where in Kamatahun the blacksmith house and the house that burned were.

He recalled talking to the police about the incident in 2020. He had learned on BBC and CNN that Gabriel Massaquoi had been arrested – he had not seen his picture, but that his fighting name was Angel Gabriel.

Defense questions the witness

The witness explained that he had met Employee 1 in a tea shop in Gbarnga, which is where Civilian 70 works. He had not been interested in what he had to say. The defense pointed out that Civilian 70 had told the police he had met Employee 1 in Monrovia. The witness responded that he was sure he had met him in Gbarnga. They had been talking about Zigzag Marzah and then Employee 1 told him he was going to call him, but only did so when the "white people came." Employee 1 had told him that white people were interested in learning about what happened in Lofa, and if the witness had been interested in talking with them. According to the police report however, the witness had said that Employee 1 had called him after the meeting at the tea shop and the witness had been confused about how he got his number, but the witness denied ever being asked how Employee 1 had got his number, nor if he had called him.

Regarding the soldiers' names he had mentioned before, like Superman, Bockarie, Stanley, and Massaquoi, he had not found out the soldiers' names in Kamatahun, as "who are civilians to ask soldiers for their names." He shared that only the Sierra Leoneans were based in Kamatahun, but that the others used to come and go – sometimes with an interval of a few months between visits.

Asked by the defense, Civilian 70 recounted that Zigzag used to eat human hearts – they had accused a man of being a LURD rebel so they killed him, took his heart, and gave it to a lady to cook it. She couldn't do it, as her hands were shaking. The witness did not know who had given the order to kill the man, but it had been Zigzag who had done the butchering. Civilian 70 added that maybe it had been Angel Gabriel that gave the order, as he had been the highest commander there.

Going back to the testimony of the burning of the house, the witness specified that it happened at night. There is still no electricity there, so there were no lights to illuminate the streets, but he had been close enough to see the people being put in the house. The defense stated that during the first instance proceedings the witness had said that he had been further away and did not go where the soldiers had been gathering people – the witness explained that he had not gave a

specific measurement of how far he was, and he had not been there where they were gathering people, but close enough so he could hear and see.

The defense asked who in the specific was that had set the house on fire and the witness responded that he did not know who it had been, but he knew that Angel Gabriel gave the order and had said "burn those dogs." He added that Zigzag was there, but most of the soldier present were from Sierra Leone.

Civilian 70 reiterated that he had not been present when they took his wife, but he had been told, so he went to look for her in the blacksmith's house. Her and the other women were all sitting on the ground, wearing their clothes. At night, Angel Gabriel gave the order to the soldiers to do whatever they wanted with the women. He got beaten as he made "myself known to the man that his was my woman, I was lucky they did not kill me." The defense then read the police summary to the witness, where he had said that Angel Gabriel ordered the women to strip and spread their legs, as they were being tied. Civilian 70 answered that he had heard a lot about that event, but what he discussed in the Appeals Court is what he saw himself. The defense continued to read the police report, where it then said that when the witness was beaten, he had been tied – the witness responded that he did not remember being tied, but he could not remember everything. The defense added that the women were then raped all night, and then someone had seen the witness tied and had freed him in the morning. Civilian 70 explained again that he did not remember being tied, and that someone had helped him, but he cannot remember.

After he left Kamatahun, the witness went back to his hometown, where he stayed until Charles Taylor left Liberia, about 2-3 years. When asked if he had been to a refugee camp, the witness said he could not remember. The defense pointed out that during the lower court hearings Civilian 70 had said that he had gone to Vahun in hiding, and then he had been a refugee camp in Sierra Leone. The witness responded that he used to go to Vahun for work, but he could not remember going to Sierra Leone, nor he could remember the additional details, like an NGO taking him to Bo Waterside for treatment.

Civilian 70 specified that Angel Gabriel used to go back and from Kamatahun, but he could not remember for how long, as he only spent some months there, around 3 or 4. He couldn't really specify what language Angel Gabriel spoke but said that some of the soldier spoke Creole, Mende, and Timini.

Going back to Zigzag Marzah killing the man accused of being a LURD spy, the witness said he had seen the heart himself, and that Angel Gabriel had given the order.

Civilian 35

Prosecution questions the witness

The witness begun his testimony by sharing that he was from Kolahun, in Lofa. When the war begun in 1989, he had been residing in Monrovia, but he had been in Kolahun between 2001 and 2003, when LURD was fighting government troops.

He testified that there had been a lot of torture and atrocities perpetrated against civilians, and he himself had been tortured. Around 2001/2002, he and others had been captured by LURD troops and taken to Massabolahun – once there, there had been a fight between LURD and

government troops, and him and the others were then taken by the latter in yet another place, Kamatahun Hassala. There, he saw Benjamin Yeaten with Sierra Leonean troops, which he recognized because of their way of speaking. Civilian 35 was tortured in Kamatahun, where Angel Gabriel, also known as Gibril Massaquoi, accused him of being a rebel from Guinea and ordered his soldiers, in Creole, to tie him tabey. He had heard himself Angel Gabriel giving this order to the troops, and the witness added that he wanted to kill him. Civilian 35 also added that he had been tortured with melting plastic on his skin to make him talk, again, ordered by Gibril Massaquoi.

The witness shared that once some RUF soldiers found a man in the bush and brough him to Kamatahun, killed him, took his heart out, and ordered a woman to cook it under the orders of Gibril Massaquoi. He also saw a house being put on fire. Civilian 35 also saw a pregnant woman being opened as soldiers had a bet on the child's sex. A friend of the witness told him they had to leave before they also got killed, and that is how he escaped.

The prosecution asked the witness if he still bore scars of the torture he went through, and the witness answered in the affirmative, as he said one of the soldiers that assaulted him also had a knife. He also used to have marks of the melted plastic, but those had faded away with time.

Going back to the man who had been killed and whose heart had been ripped out, the witness specified that Gibril Massaquoi had been responsible as he had authorized all of the atrocities committed in Kamatahun, including the burning of the house: "everything was attributed [to him], he influenced it, he commissioned it." He answered that he had been present when Massaquoi had given these orders. The witness had been in Kamatahun for 5 days, and throughout these days he saw Gibril Massaquoi every day. He had learned that he was using the names of Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi from the man himself. Benjamin Yeaten had to leave and left command to Angel Gabriel, and he had introduced himself to the troops.

The witness also shared that he had been forced to carry ammunitions on his head, on order of Angel Gabriel. Civilian 35 had carried two boxes of ammunition and one gun to carry.

Civilian 35 described in detail the torture he was submitted to and reiterated that whilst the torture was carried out by soldiers, it had been Angel Gabriel who gave the order. He also stated that he had heard Gibril Massaquoi gave the order to burn the house with the people in it, on the left entering Vahun. He then specified that the man who had been accused of being a spy and who had been murdered and whose heart had been ripped out was killed by Angel Gabriel, and that the witness saw this himself.

The defense questions the witness

The witness explained to the defense that Massaquoi spoke as the troops' commander, not as the RUF's spokesperson, but the defense pointed out that earlier in the testimony he had said that Massaquoi was RUF's spokesperson. He then said that Benjamin Yeaten had introduced Gibril Massaquoi to the troops, as he had to leave, and that Massaquoi was going to take over. He could not recall exactly when this has happened, between 2001 and 2002. The events in Kamatahun took place between 2001 and 2002, but according to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi was not in Liberia in 2003, but the LURD still fought in Lofa until 2003: he had not seen Massaquoi in Lofa in 2003, but he could clearly remember him in 2001-2002. The defense read

the police report, where Civilian 35 had said that the incidents in Kamatahun happened in 2002 and 2003: the witness said that it must have been a mistake.

The defense continued reading the police report, where the witness had said that he had never lived in Kolahun, and that he left Monrovia to go back to his family once he graduated from university, and once he met his family, rebels attacked. He ran away to Massabolahun, but another group took him to Vahun in 2002, where he was forced to carry weapons. The witness said that indeed he never lived in Kolahun, he had gone there on vacation to see his family, and he saw all of those atrocities between 2001 and 2002. Civilian 35 had said to the police that he remembered the atrocities being committed in 2002, which is when he graduated. Civilian 35 stated that he had not graduated in 2002, but that the war happened in 2001, and that the incursions happened in 2002, mainly in Lofa County: this is why he gave the 2001-2002 timeline for Massaquoi being there and what he experienced.

Asked about his own experiences, the witness explained that when LURD attacked Kolahun, and he had escaped in Massabolahun, where had then been captured, LURD was not present there. RUF then arrived, and LURD retreated, but when they came back, they arrested everyone. Civilian 35 explained that he was a young man at the time, so everyone just assumed he was a rebel, and Charles Taylor had stated that "no ants should live in Lofa" – meaning that no matter which rebels, the troops had to get rid of them. And this is how he got to meet Gibril Massaquoi – not that he had met in in 2001, just that this was the situation in Lofa. The witness experienced LURD forces attacking twice.

On the reason why he had not told the police about the melted plastic torture, the witness said that "I said when you are under duress you experience so many things, right? But only when you have overcome that identical stress that you mind start reflecting on this that were happening at the time. I didn't explain to police, the reason was like my mind didn't go there."

The defense went back to the police notes again, and whilst the witness had shared some torture, he had not disclosed to the court how Gibril Massaquoi, according to the witness, had urinated in his mouth. The witness said that yes, he had done this to him, but the reason why he didn't share it this time is that his mind was not a computer, and he did not remember.

On the matter of the capture of the man in the bush who then got murdered, and whose heart was taken out, the defense asked why he only spoke about one man, when he had discussed two with the Finnish police. The witness said he only remembers one man being killed.

On the matter of the house being burned down, the defense told Civilian 35 that he had said to the police that whilst Gibril Massaquoi was there, Zigzag Marzah was "active", and that the witness described the actions of Zigzag, not of Massaquoi, so why was he now saying that it had been Gibril Massaquoi giving the order? Civilian 35 said there must have been a miscommunication, either with the police, or with the translator. Gibril Massaquoi was the person who ordered the burning of the house, but Zigzag was the one who executed the order. The defense said that in the lower court, the witness had said that he had heard about the house burning down, but Civilian 35 denied it. He said that the police had asked him "do you know Zigzag" and he had responded in the affirmative, saying he had heard about him during the war. And that no, the burning of the house had not been a rumour because he had risked his life.

The defense asked which version of the events was true: to the police, Civilian 35 had said that Zigzag had burned the people, and to the lower court he had said that he had not been present. The witness said that Zigzag had carried the order and that Massaquoi was there, and this is what he had experienced. The defense retorted that when he was asked when Zigzag had burned the house down, the witness had said he had not been there, and that it had been people who told him about it. The witness responded asking why he would say he wasn't there, when he had been, and he reiterated that Zigzag had committed a lot of atrocities, but that Massaquoi had been in Kamatahun and Hassala.

After the witness escaped, he had gone to Sierra Leone – but he could not say for how long. He had then gone back to Monrovia. The defense pointed out that Civilian 35 had said that after he escaped, he had gone to Foya, and then to Guinea, where he began looking for work. The witness responded: "What I'm I going to do in Guinea?" and that he had gone to Sierra Leone as it was easier to go back to Monrovia.

When asked, the witness shared that RUF wore yellow t-shirts.

When asked how the police had gotten in contact with him, Civilian 35 explained that once day he had received a call from Employee 1, asking him if he knew what had happened during the war, and that people wanted to talk to him. He had issues leaving work, but at the end he agreed to go to Monrovia and speak to the Finnish police. The defense asked if Employee 1 had promised financial compensation for this, and the witness said no, but he asked if his transport was being covered by them.

According to the defense, the witness had been under the impression that he was going to receive a scholarship if he had gone to Monrovia. Civilian 35 said that there had been a misunderstanding: he had asked for it, but Employee 1 had told him he was not going to get one.

March 9, 2023 – Day 27: Tributes made in Kamatahun

On Thursday March 9, three witnesses from Kamatahun Hassala testified before the Court of Appeal.

Each witness testified to similar events of civilians from surrounding villages being rounded up by troops and taken to Kamatahun. The large group of people was assembled in the town center and locked in a house. Upon the orders of their commander, the soldiers set the house ablaze with the people still inside. The witnesses also all testified to a group of women being separated from the group and raped by soldiers during the course of these events.

Each witness also testified to different tributes that had been paid to the victims of these incidents. They described conducting sacrifices to honor those that had been killed, the ceremonial burying of their remains, and the building of a palaver hut in the centre of town.

The final hearing of the week will be held tomorrow, Friday 10.

March 9, 2023 [Liberia] Day 27: Tributes made in Kamatahun

Civilian 13

Prosecution questions Civilian 13

The witness begun explaining that during the war, he had been in Kamatahun. Around 2001, 2002, he had escaped to the bush because of the fighting, as LURD troops had been attacking, but the government troops had come and brought him back. One day, he saw some soldiers speaking Creole and Mende, captained by General Gabriel. These soldiers had captured some people and put them in jail. On General Gabriel's order, he saw a house being put to flames, with people in it. He specified that the troops speaking Creole and Mende were RUF troops from Sierra Leone, and he knew that their commander was Gabriel because that's what the soldiers called him – he did not know if he had any other name besides that. Civilian 13 said that the house that was set on fire was only a house away from his, and he heard Gabriel giving the order to burn it. He could not remember precisely how many people were burned in the house – and it had not been Gabriel himself who set the house on fire, but it had been him giving the order to his troops. He specified that the house that burned was on the left when facing Vahun.

The witness shared that a lot of atrocities happened in Kamatahun, and that government troops carried them as well. Women were raped, but he had ran to the bush, so he had only saw the house being set on fire.

He couldn't estimate how long the RUF troops had been there for, but from the beginning of 2001 to 2002.

The defense questions Civilian 13

The witness could not remember how old he was at the time of the events, but he could estimate he was around 38 years of age as he gave this testimony.

He said that the government troops leader had been Stanley, and that Zigzag had been there too, and he had done really "bad things there". When asked to elaborate, the witness shared that Zigzag used to capture people, kill them, cook them, and eat them. He had seen so himself, including a woman who was asked to cook a human heart. He said that Zigzag used to "love the people that was light skinned" – he did not know the names of the victims of Zigzag, and he could not remember exactly when he had killed people. LURD had come and retreated already, when he saw Zigzag eating someone. Zigzag had not been there when Civilian 13 had witnessed the house burning down with people inside. The witness had heard of other houses being burned down, besides the one he had saw himself.

Asking how he got contacted by the Finnish police, Civilian 13 said that someone had visited the Town Chief, who then contacted him. The Finnish police came after a long while that the Town Chief was contacted. The witness shared that he didn't talk about the war to anyone, as he is still scared – the Town Chief explained that police was coming to interview him about the war. Civilian 47 is a friend of Civilian 13, and he had also spoken with the police, but he had not known, because the police had not even spent the night in Kamatahun, as they were really fast. The defense told him that whilst he had been interviewed on November 28, Civilian 47 had been interviewed the day prior. The witness said that he didn't know about Civilian 47's interview, as he had not been there.

After the war, the witness stayed in Kamatahun as it is "my home that is where I was born, so I cannot go".

The defense asked the witness if he remembered an NGO coming to Kamatahun and putting a memorial plate where the house was burned down. Civilian 13 responded in the affirmative, but that they had not come to question the villagers.

During the war, he had seen Gabriel until he had been in Kamatahun: Gabriel came and went to go on the battlefront, but then came back. He could not estimate for how long he saw him, but when the witness escaped Kamatahun, Gabriel was still there.

Prosecution questions the witness again

The witness stated that he remembered seeing women's bodies – some of them "dried" – they had buried them. The witness did not know how they were killed. They had buried them behind the blacksmith's kitchen, but he could not say how they were killed, and he only helped burying the bodies. He added that other people that will testify will know how they were killed, but he didn't.

Civilian 14

Prosecution questions the witness

Civilian 14 began his testimony by sharing that he is from Kamatahun, and that a lot of fighting happened between LURD forces and government troops. The witness escaped to a nearby town, but the government troops brought them back to Kamatahun. There, there was also RUF troops, with some commanders being Angel Gabriel and Mosquito.

The witness recounted how one day they were all round up in the center of town and soldiers took some people and put them in a house and burn it. He also recounted how he saw some women being raped and killed, and another woman murdered. The witness escaped to LURD controlled area, where, according to him, there weren't the same atrocities being committed.

About Angel Gabriel, the witness said he had learned his name because he always used to announce it before giving orders and said that "I am next to God, when I give order only God can stop it"; the witness had heard this himself several times. He added that Angel Gabriel spoke Creole.

The witness said he was staying at a woman's place in Kamatahun, and that this woman, [REDACTED] used to be with Angel Gabriel, before he killed her. When the civilians were rounded up in the center of town, to be placed in the house that was set on fire, [REDACTED] had held the witness' hand, as she did not want him to be put in the house. According to Civilian 14, that was the only reason why he was spared. He did not know why the civilians were burned, and he said that it was Angel Gabriel who had given the order. He shared that the house were the people were burned was near the town hall, and that he saw this happening with his own eyes and heard himself Angel Gabriel giving the order.

Civilian 14 recounted how women were raped and killed in a blacksmith's kitchen. Angel Gabriel gave the order, although he did not rape nor killed the women himself, and left after giving the order. The witness said he saw the women's bodies, and some of them were tied up. He did not know how they were killed, but he guessed it might have been with knives, as he did not hear any gun shots. He could not even recall exactly how many bodies he saw, just that there were many, 7, 12, maybe more. He had not seen them being raped, but he had heard Angel Gabriel giving the order. He could hear the women crying.

[REDACTED], who had been Angel Gabriel's "wife" had been killed in Yandahun, and was stabbed to death by Angel Gabriel himself. According to the witness, [REDACTED] had been killed the same day they had all reached Yandahun, on a football field. He had been carrying Angel Gabriel's bag, and had been walking with them, so he was not too far away when [REDACTED] had been murdered.

About the house that was set on fire, did not know how many people were burned, but he said there were many, around 50, both men and women, all from different villages collected by soldiers. The house that was burned down was as you entered Kamatahun on the left.

According to the witness, Angel Gabriel was also called Angel Michael. He knew that because he had heard his soldiers calling him that. He spoke Creole.

Defense questions the witness

The witness remembered that the commanders of the government troops were Stanley and Zigzag. He said they were dressed in white sandals, so people could recognize them in battle and not kill them.

Back to the burning house incident, Civilian 14 explained that because [REDACTED] was Angel Gabriel's wife, her holding his hand meant that the soldiers were not supposed to harm him, and that's how he was spared from burning. But she had not said anything to the soldiers.

According to the police report from 2019, the witness had said that [REDACTED] had spoken on his behalf, and this is why he had been spared. Civilian 14 explained that holding his hand was the gesture she did, so she had communicated with the soldiers that he was not supposed to be taken.

He could not remember exactly how much time passed between the burning of the house and the raping of the women, maybe closer to a week than a month. He believed it happened somewhere between 2001 and 2002, but couldn't remember the month, in the dry season.

On the matter of how the Finnish police got in touch with him, the witness said that one day the Town Chief let him know that someone people wanted to ask him questions about the war, and about 6 months later, the police had come.

Civilian 14 shared how someone from the TRC had come to Kamatahun, and according to the witness they had not come to interview people, but to "put the people together to forget about the past and all the things that happened".

Civilian 16

Prosecution questions the witness

The witness began by sharing that he holds a political position in Kamatahun since 2005. He recounted that once a senior person called him asking him to take his motorbike to a nearby village, as it had broken down. Once there, Civilian 16 saw government soldiers, who told the witness that LURD had advanced to Kolahun. They all went back to Kamatahun, and the government troops spent the night there. The morning after, Benjamin Yeaten came and ordered people to fix a bridge. So Civilian 16 blew the trumpet and the men in the town gathered and they went to fix the bridge, but LURD troops attacked. Everyone scattered to the bush, and Civilian 16 estimated that he was there for 2 to 3 weeks, until they were called back to return. But soldiers attacked again, so people escaped to Popalahun. When there, they saw more civilians coming, and they met them along the way to see if their family members were among them. It was then that they were stopped by soldiers. A commander came, his name was Gibril Massaquoi, but his fighting name was Angel Gabriel. He accused the civilians of harboring LURD soldiers, so he burned a house with civilians inside – Civilian 16 heard the cries and laments in different languages coming from the house. A man managed to escape the fire, but he was put back, and did not survive.

Bones were leftover, and the inhabitants decided to bury them. Later on, an NGO, LAPS, came, and assisted the villagers in building a palava hut with the bones inside.

Asked by the prosecution, Civilian 16 said that he had gone to Popalahun to repair the bike around 2001/2002. He knew of Gibril Massaquoi's name because he had introduced himself, and that he himself had said that his fighting name was Angel Gabriel. It had been him who had ordered the burning of the fire, even though he had retreated to his own house when the order was carried out. He couldn't name who had put the house on fire, as there were too many soldiers. According to the witness, Angel Gabriel spoke Creole, but also spoke English. The house that burned down was on the left, if going to Vahun.

When the house was put on fire, the witness also saw seven women being taken to the headquarters. He had not seen what had happened to the women, but he was sure other witnesses could have shared it with the court.

The defense questions the witness

The witness explained that the government troops didn't really wear a specific uniform – some of them used to wear camouflage. RUF commanders wore uniforms, but the simple soldiers wore regular clothes. The defense said that when the police questioned the witness, in 2019, he had said that RUF soldiers wore yellow t-shirts.

Civilian 16 saw Angel Gabriel for the first time in Kamatahun, when the house was burned down. Soldiers used to call him "Gibril Massaquoi". The defense said that in the lower court, Civilian 16 said that it was Angel Gabriel who had been on the scene of the burning house, and the witness responded that he went by both names. He had not seen Angel Gabriel again, after that incident.

About the timing of the incident, the witness had said to the Finnish police that the burning of the house and the raping of the seven women happened in September 2002, the that he had been sure of the year, but not of the month, just that the rice had been planted. The witness answered that "I'm telling you it was 2001-2202. The year of 2000 we were all just running around."

The witness could not remember when people from the TRC came to the town, but he remembered that it had been Jerome Verdier, and they had showed him what had happened there. When LAPS came, they showed them were people had been burned.

Civilian 16 told the court how Kamatahun had been burned down 2 times.

The Finnish police got in touch with the witness via someone who had travelled to the village to tell him. It had not been Employee 1, who the witness had only met once – during the lower court hearings. The defense said that in Employee 1's notebook, it had said he had been to Kamatahun a few months before Civilian 16 was interviewed by the Finnish police, but the witness said that he had not been in town back then. The witness said that he knew the two witnesses who testified prior to him.

March 10, 2023 – Day 28: Women raped in Kamatahun

On Friday, March 10, the court heard three more witnesses from Kamatahun Hassala.

The first witness testified in a closed hearing, due to the sensitive nature of the events discussed.

The second and third witnesses spoke of people being brought to Kamatahun from neighboring villages and locked in a house that was set alight. They both also testified to a group of seven women being tied up, stripped naked, and brought to a building near a blacksmith's kitchen. Both witnesses then described that they saw the women's dead bodies the following day but were unable to bury their bodies until some time after, due to the continued presence of soldiers in the village. The witnesses had deduced from what they heard and saw throughout this incident that the women had been raped before they were killed.

The hearings have closed for the week and will resume on Monday 13, at 9am.

March 10, 2023 [Liberia] Day 28: Women raped in Kamatahun

Civilian 22

Prosecution questions the witness

The witness began his testimony by recounting that the war first arrived in Kamatahun Hassala in 2001 to 2002. Civilian 22's family was in Sierra Leone, but he had stayed. Soldiers forced them to build a bridge, but as they were working on it, other soldiers attacked. On that day, there were many commanders present in Kamatahun, including 50 and Stanley. The witness explained that Kamatahun is really close to Sierra Leone, and that there were plenty of roads that crossed there, including a road in the bush, which was used by Stanley as well.

Civilian 22 recounted how many people had been killed in Kamatahun. A house had been burned with people inside it – those who died were all from different villages, not from Kamatahun. He added that the RUF soldiers and the government soldiers "were almost one people." Civilian 22 said there was also another commander, Angel Gabriel. One day seven women were brought to Kamatahun. Once there, they got them naked, they tied them, and Angel Gabriel ordered to kill them. They were taken to the blacksmith kitchen, where they were murdered: before that, they had been crying, and after that, there was silence. The witness explained that him and other civilians buried the bodies sometime after, as the war was going on. For example, Zigzag Marzah had killed more people in other parts of town. He added: "That was my home, and I was forced to be there with them." The witness stated that the soldiers looted zinc from Kamatahun and took it to Sierra Leone.

Asked how the witness knew that the people who had been burned in the house were from different villages, the witness explained that even though they were all from different villages, they all belonged to the same ethnicity, and he had known them.

Civilian 22 explained that he knew that RUF troops were present because they spoke differently than Liberian soldiers: Creole, and among themselves, Mende.

Regarding the burning of the house, he did not know how many people were burned, nor did he know why this happened. He didn't know exactly who had burned it, as there were many commanders. He had not been close enough to see it happening, but he had seen, from the top of a hill, the smoke, the flames, and heard the people crying.

Regarding the incident that saw women being brought to Kamatahun, he reiterated that the commander who had given the order to kill them was Angel Gabriel, he had heard him himself, in Creole. He said that the soldiers and the women were in the house together, and he could hear the women crying. He knew the exact number because he saw them himself.

He knew of Angel Gabriel's name in the same way that he knew other commander's names, like Benjamin Yeaten aka 50.

The witness shared that children that had been murdered were taken near the blacksmith's kitchen. He had not seen how the children had been killed them, but he regularly saw bodies of young children, rotting.

Defense questions Civilian 22

The witness described the hill from which he saw the house burning, He explained that after he saw the smoke and he heard the cries, he didn't do anything, as he did not have any power – if he had any, none of this would have ever happened.

He knew that the year of the incident was 2001/2002 because LURD had attacked in 2001, and that nobody had told him that. The defense counsel pointed out that during the hearings at the lower court, the witness had said that he had been told that the events occurred in 2001. The witness responded he did not remember. He could also not remember exactly what season it had been when the house had been burned down. The defense counsel pointed out that during the first instance proceedings, Civilian 22 had said that it had been during planting season, in May. The witness explained that when LURD attacked they had been planting rice.

Civilian 22 said, unless he was making a mistake, that it took them about 1 week between the burning of the house and the burial of the remains. The defense pointed out that when the witness had spoken to the police, he had said that they buried them the day after. Civilian 22 responded that he did not remember exactly, but that they had dug a hole and put them all in it.

He could not say for how long Angel Gabriel had been in Kamatahun for, as he had left him there. Civilian 22 stated that sometimes Angel Gabriel would come and go, but so did the witness, as the soldiers forced him to go to other villages and come back. He estimated that he had seen Angel Gabriel from a week to a month. The defense pointed out that during the lower court proceedings, the witness had said that he had seen him for three months. The witness answered saying this is why he had given an estimation, as he couldn't really tell for how long.

He could not really remember an organization called LAPS coming to Kamatahun after the war, but he remembered that someone from the TRC had come to tell them to "forget" what had happened there. They had not asked them any questions; they had just come and talk to them as a group. The witness pointed out that maybe the people from the TRC had spoken to the elders, but not with him nor others.

Civilian 22 had showed the burial of the women to white people twice, but he had also learned that white people had come once to see the burial when he had been at the mosque.

He said that he had not really talked about what had happened during the war to anyone, besides when he had been younger and people were lecturing him about the past, and when white people came to question him. He did not know at the time that those people were from Finland, and they had come with a drone to film.

On the matter of what type of clothing Angel Gabriel's soldiers were wearing, Civilian 22 responded that not everyone was using a uniform: sometimes you could see some wearing them, others were wearing navy-blue t-shirts.

Civilian 40

Prosecution questions the witness

The witness explained that in 2001-2002, Kamatahun was attacked by LURD forces. Of GOL, there were many commanders, like Stanley, and 50. He was taken by LURD forces to Popalahun, and then back to Kamatahun. Once back there, soldiers had ordered the civilians to form a line. Angel Gabriel, who was a commander, told his soldiers to kill a boy who had been in the line with the witness. Civilian 40 stated that the soldiers took the heart out. They were then ordered to carry loads to Vahun, and those who could not were put in a house. The house was then burned.

Civilian 40 stated that Angel Gabriel was the commander of the government troops, and that Stanley and 50 were not there when these orders were given. His soldiers were from Sierra Leone, he knew that because they spoke Creole and Mende. He learned about his name because before he gave orders, Angel Gabriel called it out. The witness had heard Angel Gabriel ordering his troops to kill the boy from the line – he couldn't say why he had been killed, just that "they used to kill the people for no reason." The boy had his throat slit, and his heart taken out – the heart was then taken to Angel Gabriel.

The witness shared an episode where women were taken to jail. The women were stripped and he heard them crying – Civilian 40 shared that he thought they were being raped. He stated that Angel Gabriel gave the order, as he was the commander at the time. He thought that because "any woman you the man you naked a woman and you carry her in the room and she's crying its true you are raping that woman." They had been carried to the blacksmith's kitchen – he had seen the bodies the day after, passing by. He did not want to describe how the women had been killed – but the Court insisted for the witness to describe what he saw. Civilian 40 shared that some appeared to have been beaten, and some others had sticks shoved in their vaginas.

Regarding the incident where the house was burned down, Civilian 40 stated that he had seen and heard Angel Gabriel giving the order. He could not estimate how many people had been inside, about 40 or 50.

The witness had only heard Angel Gabriel speak Creole and did not know if he had any other names.

Civilian 40 confirmed that he had also carried loads to Vahun, including ammunition. Any of the soldiers could have ordered civilians to carry loads, including small boys. The reason why civilians were moved was to do forced labor.

Defense questions the witness

Civilian 40 explained that first they had killed the 7 women, then the house was burned. The defense told the witness that during the lower court hearings, Civilian 40 had said that Angel Gabriel had put people in a house and ordered it to be burned, and his soldiers were standing by so that nobody could escape. The witness responded that this is how things had happened. He had also shared, during the first instance proceedings, that the house had been burned before the women had been killed, the next day. Civilian 40 responded that he did not have a computer, and that he was recounting things as he remembered them happening.

Regarding the boy that had been killed, he had been a civilian, but accused by the soldiers of being LURD. About this, the witness had said to the police, in 2019, that Angel Gabriel had ordered for the LURD soldiers to be killed, and for his heart to be cut out. Witness 40 had said this because this is what they had accused the boy of being, but he did not know if that was true or not.

Regarding the women, he did not know which villages they were from exactly, just that they had been near Kamatahun. The defense pointed out that the witness had said that the women had been from a specific village, but he could not remember stating that. The defense also reported that the witness had said to the police that the women had been killed with gunshots, and some had their throats cut. Civilian 40 said he had never said that the women had been shot.

He could not remember how long Angel Gabriel was in Kamatahun for, just that he had been there for a long time. The witness had ran away from Kamatahun, but returned there after the war ended, in 2003-2004.

To end the testimony, the witness described the soldiers as wearing yellow t-shirts, with “navy group” written on it.

March 13, 2023 – Day 29: An ex-government soldier testifies

On Monday 13, the Appeals Court heard a soldier that had fought with the Liberian government forces speak on events in Kamatahun Hassala.

The witness gave a detailed account of the different stages of the Second Civil War in Liberia, explaining the relationship between the Liberian government forces and the Revolutionary United Front (RUF) from Sierra Leone. He then described the events of people being gathered from other villages and being put inside a house and the house being burned. The ex-soldier added that this event had caused tensions to form between the groups.

Due to a mix-up, the Court was not able to hear the second witness. Hearings will continue tomorrow, Tuesday 14.

March 13, 2023 [Liberia] Day 29: An ex-government soldier testifies

Witness Soldier 37 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 37

The prosecution began by asking Soldier 37 about his participation in the Second Liberian civil war. The witness responded that he participated in the conflict on the government's side. He was initially stationed in Voinjama. As the war escalated, there were no assigned areas because they were fighting all over Lofa county. After the beginning of the war, there were Sierra Leonean troops, the RUF, who came over to the government's side. The witness named Sam Bockarie and Superman as two of the bosses, stating that there were many bosses at the time. When asked how civilians were treated during the war, the witness responded: "If I get to explain how the civilians were treated during the war, we will not leave here today". He explained that villages were burned, people were killed and a lot of things happened.

The witness testified that they were fighting against LURD. He did not know how the LURD rebels were treating civilians, he only knew about the troops on his own side. Soldier 37 stated that some government troops, such as Zigzag Marzah and Superman, were wicked. For example, Zigzag killed civilians that he suspected to be supporting LURD, in places such as Masambolahun, Kolahun and Foya. The witness confirmed that he witnessed such events himself. He testified that, towards the end of the year, some things also happened in Kamatahun. He could not tell whether Kamatahun had another name attached to it, but it was close to Sevelahun and Vahun. He and others were at the frontline near Kamatahun and in the evening, when they got back to the village, they heard that the RUF had killed people there. They were told that one of the commanders, the spokesman, Angel, Gibril Massaquoi, had done it. Angel and Gibril Massaquoi are the same person. He had ordered to kill people. The killings brought confusion, as Sierra Leoneans had killed Liberians.

Soldier 37 testified that he later found out that people were killed inside a burning house, a Palava Hut house and other buildings. Most of the people that were killed were civilians, mostly women. The witness explained that as they returned from the frontline, they heard that the commander had given an order to kill people and they had been killed once they arrived. This caused a lot of confusion and chaos and some people wanted to kill the commander. The

commander was then sent to Vahun. He was not sure whether the people had been killed before the house was set on fire, or whether they were killed by being burned alive inside. The house that was burned was a large house or a base, almost immediately to the left of the village after coming from Kolahun. Soldier 37 heard what had happened from Liberian soldiers who were against such acts.

According to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi was a Sierra Leonean RUF rebel, who came to Liberia in 2001 or 2002. The killing took place in 2002. Soldier 37 had not met Gibril Massaquoi before he heard of these killings in Kamatahun. He had heard the name when Massaquoi came to Liberia, but saw him for the first time in Kamatahun. He had also heard his name before the war in Liberia, when there was a conflict in Freetown. The witness was in Voinjama when he was told that a convoy was coming from Sierra Leone to Liberia to pick them up from the border. Soldier 37 heard the name Gibril Massaquoi and Mosquito at the time. He didn't see them, but knew they were from the RUF. The witness had heard the names on the radio and saw the convoy himself in late 2001 or in 2002. That was when the RUF joined the government forces in Lofa to help them in the war.

Soldier 37 testified that he had seen the houses that had been burned in Kamatahun. They were made of mud walls with concrete placed on top of them. The house that had served as their HQ was damaged, it had been shot with a rocket launcher and most of the houses in the town were damaged. The witness stated that the house had been burned when he returned from the frontline, but he could not be certain as there was a lot of confusion at the time.

Next, the witness testified about how he had gotten into contact with the Finnish police. He stated that he had not heard any news about someone being arrested in Finland before his police interview. He described how one day, he had been in the same car as Employee 1 and people were talking about the war. Employee 1 asked to speak to Soldier 37 and said that a group of white people were coming to ask about the war and asked if he would be interested to speak about his experiences. The witness agreed, and 4 or 5 months later he was interviewed by the Finnish police. After the interview, he saw on the internet that Gibril Massaquoi had been arrested for war crimes. He read the headline of an article and saw several pictures but did not read the article in detail. Employee 1 did not tell him any details and did not specify what kind of people were coming. Soldier 37 was surprised to find out that they were police officers.

Soldier 37 testified that he had seen Gibril Massaquoi himself in Kamatahun in 2000, when he took a helicopter to HQ in Vahun. He also saw Massaquoi in Kamtahun the evening of the killings. Soldiers has demanded that Gibril Massaquoi be killed after what he had done, so they had called Chief of Staff Benjamin Yeaten, who ordered him to go to HQ in Vahun.

The defense questions Soldier 37

The defense began by asking Soldier 37 whether he knew before his interview that the police wanted to know about Gibril Massaquoi. The witness denied this and stated that he was not told at the beginning of the interview about Massaquoi either. The defense pointed out that according to the pre-trial investigation report, the police had told Soldier 37 during the first minute of the interview that the suspect was a Sierra Leonean called Gibril Massaquoi. Soldier 37 could not recall this.

The defense then asked about the timing between the witness' meeting with Employee 1 and his police interview, which he estimated to have been four or five months. They pointed out that, at his police interview, he had said that he met Employee 1 three weeks beforehand. Soldier 37 responded that he may have been mistaken. He described how he spoke with Employee 1 at tearooms in car parks in both Gbarnga and Monrovia. During the car ride towards Gbarnga he did not talk about the subject in particular. After they arrived, Employee 1 had said that he was interested in talking with Soldier 37 about his experiences. The witness confirmed that he did not discuss the events of Kamatahun with Employee 1. The police had asked him about Kamatahun, but this was because he had talked to the police about battles in Lofa and in the various places in the region.

Next, Soldier 37 testified further about the RUF retreating and coming to Liberia. He explained that the RUF divided into two and the junta rebelled against Tejan Kabbah in Freetown. ECOMOG then pushed them out of Freetown and the RUF came over the border to Liberia. According to the witness, the RUF members who came to Liberia could not move freely between Sierra Leone and Liberia. Sam Bockarie's side had come to Liberia and they could not go freely to Freetown anymore. Sam Bockarie was one of the RUF members who came to Liberia, he went to Ivory Coast and launched an attack there. He came with other RUF members, such as Superman. Gibril Massaquoi was an educated man, the secretary or spokesman for the RUF, so didn't take part in the fighting. When they came to Liberia, the RUF joined the government forces.

The witness testified that Sam Bockarie's movements in Liberia and Ivory Coast were not a secret. Soldier 37 did not see the group that Sam Bockarie came with, he only was involved with the RUF in Lofa. According to Soldier 37, Gibril Massaquoi was also in Monrovia, he spent some time there, and went to and from the frontline. He clarified that when the RUF first came to Lofa, Gibril Massaquoi did not go to the frontline. In 2001, 2002, when the war was escalating, he began going to the frontline in Lofa more often. Massaquoi was most active on the frontline in early 2002. He was an RUF commander in Lofa, "not an ordinary man". He was in command of RUF troops at the time. Next, a statement that the witness had made during his lower court hearing was discussed in the court, as to whether 'Angel' had been involved with the RUF or not. The witness stated that he must have not been understood correctly at the lower court, and maintained that he was the commander of the RUF and its third highest ranking member. According to the witnesss, the RUF was called militia in Lofa and they had a yellow shirt as uniform. The militia was a mixture of Sierra Leoneans and Liberians.

Soldier 37 testified that Charles Taylor, as the head of ECOWAS, used it to trick the international community to get the RUF over the border to Liberia. The RUF had gold and diamonds that they were bringing to Charles Taylor. Taylor was negotiating with every party and was trying to get the war in Sierra Leone to end so that the RUF could return to Freetown.

The witness did not know what happened to Gibril Massaquoi after he'd gotten in trouble in Lofa. He could not say whether Massaquoi was able to go to Freetown after he had come to Liberia. He speculated that he may have done so for the negotiations.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Angel Gabriel from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

A mix up with witnesses

The afternoon session was intended to hold the hearing of Soldier 12. A person with the same name as Soldier 12, who had also been interviewed by the Finnish police, came to testify. During his testimony, it was revealed that this person was not Soldier 12. The hearing was therefore cancelled.

March 14, 2023 – Day 30: Back and forth between Monrovia and Lofa

On Tuesday 14, two witnesses testified.

The first witness spoke of her friend, who had been in a romantic relationship with the defendant. She described trips from Monrovia to Lofa, where she saw weapons stored in a secret room and wounded soldiers being brought in and out. Some trips had been taken by convoys of pickups, some by helicopter, and others by motorbike.

The second witness was an ex-soldier that had fought with government forces. He had been involved in fighting across both Monrovia and Lofa. He described the close relationship between the Liberian government forces and the RUF as the RUF supported the government on the frontline.

March 14, 2023 [Liberia] Day 30: Back and forth between Monrovia and Lofa

Witness Civilian 60 is heard

The prosecution questions Civilian 60

The prosecution began by asking about where Civilian 60 lived during the war in Liberia. The witness testified that she lived in Congo Town, Sinkor, with her friend [REDACTED], who was Gibril Massaquoi's girlfriend. According to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi used to bring ammunition to Lofa. She knew this because [REDACTED] had told her, and she had been to Lofa with her and Massaquoi. Massaquoi hosted them in a house that had three bedrooms, one of which was off limits, only Massaquoi and his boys could enter it. One day, he came from the frontline with wounded soldiers and his bodyguard left the door open. Civilian 60's friend, [REDACTED], went inside and saw different weapons in the room. Massaquoi caught her in the room and began beating both the bodyguard that had forgotten to lock the door and [REDACTED]. The women wanted to escape, so one of Massaquoi's boys took them away on a Yamaha motorcycle and they escaped to Monrovia.

The witness testified that the house was located in Voinjama. They travelled there in a convoy from Monrovia that had three pickups packed with cargo. Civilian 60 estimated that the things they were transporting were the same things that were placed in the locked room in the house. They left from Congo Town, with Benjamin Yeaten and another general, whom the witness estimated to be General Mosquito. This place was close to the Nigerian embassy where the late Foday Sankoh lived. Gibril Massaquoi was also there, but the witness did not know why. She recalled the people that travelled in the convoy from Congo Town: her friend, 'Uncle Gibril Massaquoi', Benjamin Yeaten and a skinny guy, but stated that she could not remember everyone's names. The convoy left from Monrovia during the day. This was in 2002 or 2003. Civilian 60 travelled with such a convoy only once. She could not remember the route they took from Monrovia to Voinjama and they did not stop anywhere on the way.

Civilian 60 testified that she got to know Gibril Massaquoi through her friend. This friend used to travel to Lofa with Gibril and asked Civilian 60 to join them. She introduced Massaquoi to Civilian 60. Massaquoi shook her hand and called himself Gibril Massaquoi. The witness could not

remember when she met Massaquoi for the first time, but estimated that it was before 2002, on her friend's birthday. Civilian 60 could not remember the language Massaquoi spoke.

According to Civilian 60, Massaquoi was with them in the convoy throughout the whole journey from Monrovia to Voinjama. When they reached Voinjama, he left and returned the next morning with soldiers. The witness did not find out who the soldiers were or how they had gotten wounded. She testified that they would leave at night and come back with a pickup full of wounded soldiers.

Civilian 60 had not seen or heard any news about Massaquoi's arrest before her interview with the Finnish police. She had not seen Massaquoi after she and her friend fled from the house in Voinjama.

The defense questions Civilian 60

The defense began by asking Civilian 60 whether Massaquoi lived in Monrovia, to which she responded that she did not know. She knew that Benjamin Yeaten, and another general that she speculated to be Mosquito, used to visit Massaquoi. The witness testified that she knows someone named Abdul, she had seen him and Massaquoi talking once or twice, but she did not know Abdul well.

The defense asked if Civilian 60 remembered what she had testified about Abdul in lower court. She responded that she could not remember, as she was pregnant at the time with a child whose father had died in an accident. Civilian 60 has three children in total and had two girls with a Lebanese man who is also dead. The defense pointed out that she had testified in the lower court that Abdul was her fiancé and that they had a child together. Civilian 60 responded that this child that she had mentioned in lower court had died in a car accident so she wouldn't want to talk about it. She also explained that she indeed had spoken with Abdul a few times, he had proposed to her and she had accepted. She clarified that Gibril Massaquoi was not aware of their relationship.

Next, the defense asked Civilian 60 about the time she met Defense 09. She testified that she met him at a restaurant on the border between Sierra Leone and Liberia. A group of men were chatting, and she heard the name Gibril Massaquoi. She went to go and speak with the men, and told them that she knows Gibril, as her friend has a child with him. One of the men gave her a phone number and said that a man called Abel would call her. One day, someone called the witness and asked if she knew Massaquoi. She answered yes and was told that some people would call her. Civilian 60 testified that she was scared and did not want to answer, and when the number would call, she would not answer. One time she answered and told the caller to stop calling, but she was told that there is nothing wrong. The witness testified that she found out that Gibril was in trouble during the conversation at the border. She stated that she met Defense 09 about seven or eight months before she was interviewed by the Finnish police. During the conversation at the border, someone had said that Gibril had killed one of his relatives. The name of the person who called her began with the same letter as Employee 1. This person did not mention that Gibril was in trouble, he only told her that people would call her.

Civilian 60 testified that she heard the name Massaquoi before the trip to Voinjama, at the first time they met. The defense pointed out that she had testified in the lower court that the man had introduced himself as Massaquoi, whereas today she said that he introduced himself as Gibril

Massaquoi. She had also testified in the lower court that she only knew his last name and when she had pointed at his photograph during her interview with the police, the police officer had said 'Gibril'. After some discussion of her previous testimony, Civilian 60 denied having heard the name Gibril from the police. She explained that by testifying in the lower court that she only knew his last name, she had meant that she calls people by their last names and did not hear the name Gibril from the police. She confirmed that she was not aware before her interview who the police were looking for. The defense further pointed out that thew witness had told the police during her interview that she knew it would be about Gibril Massaquoi. She explained that Defense 09 had told her about Massaquoi, and once she said that she knew him, he told her that some people would call her.

The witness confirmed that her friend was dating Massaquoi. She had a child with him, but Civilian 60 did not know if the child is still alive. She did not know when the child was born. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the Finnish police that her friend got pregnant soon after the first meeting and the girl was born in early 2002. She responded that she heard about the birth of the baby from her friend. She had been to see the child in late 2002, when the child was already growing.

Civilian 60 could not remember whose birthday it was when she met Massaquoi, but explained that she met him in a guest house. She went there to visit him and her friend. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the Finnish police that she had gone to the guest house for the first time on 18 March 2001 and she could remember the date because it was her friend's birthday. The witness remembered having said so to the police, this visit to the guest house was before their trip to Voinjama. She could not estimate how long after this that they took the trip to Voinjama. Civilian 60 testified that they went to Lofa in 2002 and the girl was born in 2001, but stated that she could not really remember. The defense pointed out that she had told the police that they left for Lofa two weeks after the first meeting, which she confirmed.

The witness testified that she went to Lofa with Gibril Massaquoi two or three times. The first time was in 2002 and the last one in 2003, she could not remember the months. It was during the last trip that she and her friend had to run away, when he was beating her friend, she stepped in, and he pushed her against a door and injured her nose. Civilian 60 couldn't remember whether it was her or her friend that went to Lofa once on a helicopter. There was then a discussion in court around the dates of the different trips to Lofa, and whether they were by convoys of vehicles covered with tarp or by helicopter.

The defense then pointed out that Civilian 60 had not mentioned Massaquoi hitting her during her police interview. The witness explained that she had mentioned it the second time and had showed everyone. She stated that she did not remember everything during the police interview, she had once forgotten about coming back on a Yamaha motorbike but could not forget it as the motorbike crashed and she still had the mark on her leg. The witness exclaimed: "The questions were too many, I was confused. I have never been in court".

Civilian 60 was not sure whether her friend was pregnant when Massaquoi beat her in Voinjama, she was getting fat at the time. Whe Massaquoi was beating her friend, Civilian 60 was outside the room. Massaquoi left her friend in a locked room, and went to the frontline, one of his soldiers came and released the friend and they all left. The defense pointed out that Civilian 60 had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi had beaten them both badly and would have

killed them both, but her friend was pregnant. She explained that she cannot remember these details, but as she had said earlier, her friend was fat.

The defense also referred to Civilian 60's police interview about the last time she had seen Massaquoi. She confirmed that she had not seen him since 2002, but in 2003 he called her friend and she had encouraged her to collect child support from him.

The defense pointed out that Civilian 60 had testified in the lower court that she did not know Massaquoi's name during their trip to Lofa. Civilian 60 explained that she had travelled with her friend to Lofa before. They had gone to a village because her friend's mother or grandmother was ill and after this trip, they began talking about her friend's boyfriend. She stated that she did not mention this in her previous hearings because was not asked about it and it was her personal business, with nothing to do with Massaquoi.

The defense referred to the witness' testimony in the lower court about her meeting Defense 09 on the Sierra Leonean border. She had previously testified that she brought up the name of Gibril Massaquoi when she was asked about Benjamin Yeaten, whereas today in court, she had stated that Defense 09 had asked her about Gibril Massaquoi. Next, there was discussion as to whether, after this meeting, she had called Defense 09, or whether Defense 09 had called her.

Further questions from the prosecution

The prosecution had a few final questions for Civilian 60. Regarding the trips she took with Massaquoi and her friend to Lofa, Voinjama was the only location that she could name. On their first trip, they had three pickups full of cargo and one pickup on the second trip. Her friend had not told her where she had met Massaquoi when she called Civilian 60 in 2003.

Witness X8 is heard

The prosecution questions X8

The prosecution began by asking about X8's participation in Liberia's wars. X8 testified that he was in the NPFL, NPP and NPRAG, all being Charles Taylor's forces. He had also participated in the war that took place while Charles Taylor was in power. He was first part of the ATU, and was then stationed on the frontline in Lofa, Bong and elsewhere. In Lofa, he was fighting against LURD rebels. This fighting took place in 2000, 2001 and 2002. When the war ended, Liberia began disarmament and Charles Taylor left. The witness was in Monrovia at the time. He testified that he was on the frontline the whole time that LURD was pushing them from Lofa to Monrovia. He was also in Monrovia. According to X8, the battles in Monrovia were called World Wars I-III.

X8 testified that government forces in Monrovia had other forces fighting besides them. There were some from Sierra Leone, who were former RUF members, called aqbah. X8 met these troops and fought with them. The witness named some of the commanders that he knew: Sam Bockarie, Yanne, Usman, Kallon, RSN, High Command, some of whom are dead now. These troops had a base near ELWA Junction, at a place called Twelve Houses. Charles Taylor had given this place to Bockarie and others when they came from Sierra Leone. They had their own doctor there, called Doctor Makona. The witness confirmed that he had been to Twelve Houses himself.

The witness testified that he fought alongside aqbah troops in Lofa, Vahun, Kamatahun, Yandehun and Voinjama, and other places which he could not recall. They also went to Ivory Coast and returned. In Monrovia, they fought at New Bridge, Waterside, Freeway and Duala. According to X8, the war entered Monrovia in 2001.

Next, X8 explained how he got into contact with the Finnish police. He testified that [REDACTED] called him and put him in contact with someone. [REDACTED]'s late brother knew X8, so he knew that the witness had participated in the war. [REDACTED] told him that there were people that would like to talk to him. X8 had heard on BBC's Focus on Africa program, after his interview with the police, that Massaquoi was going to be prosecuted in Finland and that he was from Sierra Leone. X8 had heard the name Massaquoi before in relation to the RUF as he had spent time with the Sierra Leoneans and knew most of them. X8 had met Massaquoi at Twelve Houses a few times. The witness was not very close to him as Massaquoi did not spend time at the frontline, he was closer with Sam Bockarie and Junior X.

X8 testified that when he saw Massaquoi at Twelve Houses, people were being brought from the frontline and ammunition was being sent there. According to X8, Massaquoi was keeping records. The witness stated that Massaquoi had no rank. At the time of this meeting, the frontline was at New Bridge and in Vai Town. The last time the witness saw him, Massaquoi was with Doctor Makona driving a bus towards the city. This was during World War III, which the witness estimated to be a month before the ceasefire. The witness testified that Massaquoi spoke with a Sierra Leonean accent and speculated that he was Mende.

The defense questions X8

The defense began by asking X8 about the former RUF members fighting with the government forces in Monrovia. The witness stated that there were former RUF members who came to Liberia. As part of the ATU and the militia, they were permanently stationed in Liberia. X8 spent a long time in Lofa, years. He had been in Lofa throughout the revolution, when Charles Taylor's rebellion started, and when LURD was fighting against Charles Taylor. He estimated that it began in 1999, until 2002 when the war ended in Monrovia. X8 testified that he saw Massaquoi in Lofa during that time period, but he did not know him at the time. The defense pointed out that X8 had testified in the lower court that he had not seen Massaquoi in Lofa. He explained that he had said so because he did not recognize Massaquoi at the time, but he had seen him there.

The witness stated that Massaquoi had travelled through Lofa when he went from Sierra Leone to Monrovia. He had not seen Massaquoi in any other country other than Liberia. The defense pointed out that X8 had testified in the lower court that the first time he met Massaquoi was in Ivory Coast. X8 explained that he had misunderstood the question and confirmed that he had seen Massaquoi in Ivory Coast in 2002, when he was fighting there with Sam Bockarie and Kallon. Massaquoi used to come and go, he did not have a permanent station. He visited Ivory Coast two to four times. X8 saw him with Sam Bockarie there. It was dry season, but almost rainy season, and the witness estimated that this may have been in June or July. The operation in Ivory Coast took six or seven months.

There was then some discussion as to the timing and the locations of the different times the witness saw Massaquoi in Monrovia and in Ivory Coast.

Final questions from the prosecution

The prosecution had a few final questions for X8. He explained that while they were fighting in Lofa, they occasionally went to Monrovia until they were pushed by the rebels to Monrovia. He testified that they usually travelled by car and sometimes by helicopter. He explained the two land routes: one from Vahun via United Logging Company and Bomi, and another from Voinjama to Konia, Zorzor and Gbarnga.

It was pointed out that the witness was not asked to make a photo identification during his police interview.

March 15, 2023 – Day 31: An investigator explains

Today, the Court spent the day assessing one witness. He was the Liberian investigator that the Finnish Police had contracted to help them with their investigations and has been working on the case with them since 2019.

The witness testified to the various trainings that he has received. He talked the court through the different methods that he has used to locate and contact witnesses. A few times, he explained in depth how he came to be interested in a particular person, how he managed to reach them and how he had facilitated their contact with the Finnish police.

In addition, his personal notebook was analyzed page by page.

March 15, 2023 [Liberia] Day 31: An investigator explains

Witness Employee 1 is heard

The prosecution questions Employee 1

The prosecution began by asking what Employee 1 does when he is not working the Finnish authorities. He testified that he is a human rights investigator, not a police officer. He works for an NGO called the Global Justice Research Project (GJRP) that works in co-operation with other international and human rights organizations. He also works with the US Department of Homeland Security, the Department of Justice and other branches of the US government, as well as with various other governments. He described his co-operation with foreign governments as having always been quite similar to his work in this case, he looks for perpetrators. He is contacted because of his experience, governments want to work with his NGO. Employee 1 testified that he has worked on the cases of Martina Johnson with the Belgians, Jungle Jabbah with US authorities and Kunti K with the French. They all participated in the Liberian civil war.

Employee 1 testified that he began working for GJRP in 2002, estimating that it was founded in late 2002 or 2003. GJRP co-operates with other international organizations and with various jurisdictions abroad. GJRP has a sister organization, Civitas Maxima, in Switzerland. According to the investigator, Background 1 founded GJRP and a lawyer called Alain Werner founded CM.

The investigator had received training for his job as an investigator. He had been to the International Institute of Forensic Science in the Hague. He had also received training in Liberia before going to the Hague. He had been to a military institute in the Netherlands, where he had studied working in a hostile environment, dealing with checkpoints, identifying mass graves, understanding the behavior of rebels, and the use of different weapons and ammunition. He had provided copies of the diplomas and certificates that he had received from these training courses, which had been submitted as written evidence.

Employee 1 explained that the Finnish police had requested him to look for witnesses. He was to ask limited questions, such as whether the person was in a certain area when the war started or whether they were aware of the RUF's operations there. He was instructed not to discuss this work with anyone else. He testified that he was removed from his own organization while he worked for the Finnish police, did not visit the GJRP nor spoke with anyone there. He was only

involved with the Finnish police. The police officers who gave him assignments included Thomas, Mikko, Juha and Markus. The first time Employee 1 met them was in Lofa county. He was at the Nascor Hotel in Voinjama with a Brazilian lady and met them there. He saw them, went to introduce himself and they chatted about monkeys. He told the Finnish police that he works for GJRP. The police officers had visited GJRP during their trip and they discussed Liberia's work for founding a war crimes court.

The investigator gave the Finnish police his contact information and left. A few months later, the GJRP received an email asking for him to work with the Finnish police. There were two investigators at GJRP who the police wanted to work with. After a few months, the police came to Liberia again. Their first meeting was at Royal Hotel. They signed a contract, which specified Employee 1's duties. The police then moved to Kendeja and a few days later, they had a meeting there.

Employee 1 confirmed that the meeting they had in Voinjama was completely random, he just happened to run into the Finnish police. The first meeting in Monrovia was in 2019. He received some maps and locations where he was to go and ask questions. Questions that he should ask included whether houses had been burned in the area, whether there was RUF or other military activity there, and whether civilians had been killed. The locations Employee 1 was to cover included Kolahun, Kortohun Tahamba, Sevelahun and Foya. He went first, the police went afterwards and then returned to Finland.

The investigator was not sure when he found out that the investigation was about Gibril Massaquoi. After their first trip, the police returned to Finland and sent him an email that they had missed an area. They sent him a list of villages in Lofa county, towards Vahun and Sierra Leone. When the police came to Liberia for the first time, they had photographs that they used to ask the witnesses to identify the perpetrator. At the time, they had not mentioned Gibril Massaquoi's name to him, they only spoke of the RUF and government troops. On the second trip, when Employee 1 went to Kamatahun Hassala, Kortohun and Vahun he began to hear the names of Gibril or Gabriel Massaquoi, Zigzag Marzah and Stanley. He found this interesting as he had investigated these people himself before. Employee 1 clarified to the court that he had conducted some investigations in Lofa related to these persons before the Finnish arrived and at the moment, he is also conducting an investigation related to some of these names. He found out that the Finnish were interested in Gibril Massaquoi after their second visit, when they went to Kamatahun. The police were investigating and Employee 1 was sitting in a Palava Hut. Some people came over and began talking about their interviews and that is how Employee 1 started to hear these names.

Employee 1 specified that the Finnish police had never mentioned the name of the suspect, they only mentioned the RUF. He estimated that this visit to Kamatahun was in 2020. Another time was when the defense sent him the name of witness Defense 14 for him to locate. He called Defense 14 and escorted him to the hotel in Monrovia. On the way to the hotel, he told Defense 14 that the Finnish wanted to ask him questions, but he did not know what about. Defense 14 then told him that it was probably about Gibril Massaquoi, because he was with him at the safe house. It was through this that Employee 1 became aware that the investigation was about Gibril Massaquoi. This happened during the second police trip to Liberia. The police sent him the name before they arrived.

The investigator testified further that he had heard the name of Gabriel Massaquoi or Massaquoi before the police asked him to work for them. He knew the name Sam Bockarie, that he was from Sierra Leone and a member of the RUF, and had also heard of a spokesman called Massaquoi. Employee 1 used to live near ELWA junction and was running a currency exchange. A Sierra Leonean ex-fighter wanted to borrow money from him and took him to his house so that Employee 1 could verify his home address. He took Employee 1 to Twelve Houses. There was a group of fighters staying there, most of them Sierra Leoneans. Employee 1 got to know these people and heard about the names of the Sierra Leonean commanders. He was shown around Twelve Houses and was shown where Sam Bockarie and Gibril Massaquoi used to be. The investigator explained that many Liberians knew of these people before the investigation. He himself had not heard the name Massaquoi before working for the Finnish police, not even during the investigations he had conducted beforehand. During those investigations, they focused only on Yeaten, and Sam Bockarie's name would come up in connection with the RUF.

Employee 1 described how he searched for witnesses for the Finnish police. The police would send him a list of villages to visit. He would get to a village and there would be certain formalities that he had to carry out to be able to get in contact with the people living there. He had to meet with village elders or chiefs first and explain to them the reason for his visit. To help him with this task, Employee 1 needed to work together with Interpreter 4, who could speak Gbandi, the language spoken in many of the villages. Employee 1 had met Interpreter 4 at the Ministry of Health. Interpreter 4 used to do relief work in the region, so Employee 1 called Thomas from Voinjama and explained why they would need his help. The police wanted to come to Voinjama to interview Interpreter 4 first. Mikko then came to Voinjama and interviewed him.

He then explained how the formalities in the villages work. In Kamatahun, they all met with the deputy village chief because the chief was not present. Employee 1 told him that they were there to look for people, who witnessed fighting between LURD, RUF and government troops in the area. The deputy chief told them that there were a lot of people in the village who had witnessed it, but most of them were not present at the time. The police were told to come back the next day so that they could gather the right people in the village. They came back the next day and the village elders had compiled a list of people. Most of the people on the list were there, but some had fled to Guinea or Sierra Leone. According to Employee 1, this list was given to the police who then conducted interviews without him. The same procedure took place in other locations such as Kamathaun, Kortohun and Masambolahun. Employee 1 stated: "To sum up, these village elders and chiefs were telling people 'you can tell your stories', but I don't know much about them".

Employee 1 testified that the lists consisted only of the inhabitants of that particular village. Kiantahun was different, because when Employee 1 and Interpreter 4 got there, there was nobody there. He found out from an elderly person that the village had seen war. That day, the police arrived in Voinjama and the next day, they all went to Kiantahun to interview the inhabitants right away. Employee 1 was not sure whether there was a list of people in Kiantahun, because they started the interviews immediately after arriving. Employee 1 and Interpreter 4 went there first on a motorcycle. Interpreter 4 told Employee 1 to leave their phone numbers and come back later when the villagers returned. The villagers then called and Employee 1 informed the police. Thomas decided to go to Kiantahun straight away and told Employee 1 and Interpreter 4 to go somewhere else while they did the interviews. He therefore did not know how those interviews were conducted. He found out about the people who had been interviewed by the police in Kiantahun only once the police gave him a list of people that they wanted to meet in

Monrovia, when the court was on its way to Liberia. He did not write the names of the people from Kiantahun in his notebook, he had only written down names from Kamatahun.

The investigator was asked how he had managed to find the witnesses that were not based in Lofa. He explained that he has various methods to locate people. One is to go to tea shops, where people play games and discuss current events, football, politics and past wars. He would go to these tea shops and listen to the conversations, especially when civilians would talk about their experiences. He would then approach someone in confidence, tell them about his investigation and say and that he would be interested in hearing more. Another method is to listen to people when travelling from one place to another, for example in buses. He explained that he might go out of his way to follow a person just to listen to their story and to find new witnesses. His final method is to use the stories of other witnesses to locate new potential witnesses. The original witness might provide the contact information for others or he might search for them himself. Employee 1 explained that whenever he hears an interesting conversation, he takes the person to a quieter place and ask verify that they are speaking of an event that they had witnessed themselves. He would then tell them that there are people interested in what they are talking about and ask if they would be willing to speak of their experience to others.

Employee 1 clarified that even if he is not actively investigating the event that the person is speaking of, he may still take their contact information in case it would be useful in future investigations. He testified that he never mentions the name of the alleged perpetrator, notes are never edited, names are not mentioned and potential witnesses are not shown any photographs. He only tells them that there are some people interested and asks whether they would like to meet them. He had also met people who were not willing to talk about their experiences, especially before a court or police officers. He still takes their contact information, in case he might need it in the future. Occasionally, he has tried to persuade people to come testify, but the ultimate decision to remains with the witness. He gave an example of a person who had requested money for their testimony. The investigator explained that he only tells a witness that their expenses will be paid but no reward can be given for a testimony. He explains to the person why it is important for justice that they come forward with their testimonies. Some witnesses are scared of their safety, so Employee 1 describes security measures that are in place and how they can ensure their own safety by not telling others that they are providing such information.

Employee 1 further testified that he is not aware of the crimes Gibril Massaquoi is charged with, but he knows he's under investigation for war crimes. He had not attempted to figure out what witnesses have told the police or the court, and had not become aware of the contents of witness testimonies in any other way. He does not have any of the case material and the police took his notebooks. For transparency, he had decided to share his notes with the court. He had not told anyone in GJRP or in CM who he had met during his investigations and nobody from these organizations asks him about the investigation. He had not been asked to instruct the witnesses what to say by anyone. He never became aware of which witnesses were being called by the prosecution and which by the defense.

The investigator explained that his duties during the court phase included contacting the witnesses and inviting them to court on the correct date. He would instruct the witnesses on their accommodation and sometimes escorted them to it. Sometimes, he had to travel to look for a witness who could not be reached. He had not discussed the case with them. If witnesses ask him what they will be asked, he tells them that he doesn't know.

The defense questions Employee 1

The defense began by asking about the founding of GJRP. Employee 1 estimated that he began working there in 2002, which he then corrected to 2012 after a further question. Employee 1 explained that he had completed the International Investigator Course in the Hague, and had given his diplomas to the court. This course lasted for three weeks. Most of the training that he had done had taken place in Liberia.

When Employee 1 met the Finnish police for the first time in Lofa, they had interpreters or guides with them. He knew one of them because he also used to work at GJRP. Employee 1 did not know why the Finnish police wanted him to work for them in this investigation. He was aware that GJRP and CM had investigated alleged crimes committed by Gibril Massaquoi beforehand, but they never completed their investigation. He had not participated directly in this previous investigation, but he was aware of it. He estimated that when he had joined the Massaquoi case, the information had been already sent to Finland, this was before the Finnish police came to Monrovia for the first time. Employee 1 then went to Mount Barclay, near Montserrado county, to meet a man related to this case. He could not remember the name of this man but recalled that he was tall. He could not say what information had been delivered to Finland or whether this information was still with CM. Two women from CM came to interview people in Monrovia and Employee 1 estimated that they relayed their findings to Finland. He was not interviewed by them. The investigator explained that he was involved with an interview about Gibril Massaquoi with the man he met in Mount Barclay. This man was interviewed by an employee of CM, Employee 1 just found him and brought him to the interview. His role and methods were similar with this man as with the rest of the witnesses he found for the Finnish police.

The investigator did not conduct any actual interviews before CM came to Liberia to interview people, he would only ask some basic questions as to the witness' location and their experience. He described this as a 'preliminary interview'. Employee 1 recalled being involved in three 'background hearings'. He spoke with two women on the phone and met one man in Mount Barclay. These interviews or hearings were reported to the Finnish police when they first arrived in Liberia. He was not certain how the police had obtained these documents. One of the policemen, Mikko, had told him that CM has a case that had been reported to them. According to Employee 1 this was not a standard procedure, because usually governments would conduct their investigations in Liberia either through the Liberian government or GJRP instead of sending their own officials.

Employee 1 did not know whether CM had sent the information that they had on Massaquoi to the Finnish police, he just assumed so when he saw them in Liberia. He also assumed that the background hearings or preliminary interviews had been sent to the Finnish police. When the police were in Finland, he still did not know who the suspect in the case was. He assumed that the police had been sent information about Massaquoi, but he could not be certain and did not ask. The defense pointed out that Mikael Vairio, one of the police officers involved in the case, had told the court that they wanted Employee 1 to be involved in their investigation because he had been involved in Gibril Massaquoi investigations from the beginning, even before the Finnish police received the case. Employee 1 confirmed this, but stated that the police did not mention this to him personally.

The investigator had not discussed how the witnesses were found in the CM investigation with any of the CM employees, including with [REDACTED], who was involved in the early phases of the case. The defense showed Employee 1 a written memorandum, which he explained was about an investigation into the RUF. He explained that it was possible that names such as Gibril Massaquoi, Sam Bockarie, and others were mentioned. The person referred to in this document was the man he had met in Mount Barclay. Employee 1 described how the interviews were conducted with this man and the two other people mentioned in the document. He had spoken to one of them only on the phone and speculated that GJRP might have interviewed this person further.

There was then a discussion as to whether Employee 1 had previously testified whether he had taken part in any preliminary interviews.

According to Employee 1, when he was working for the Finnish police, he could not work at GJRP at the same time, for transparency. He was not sure whether it was the Finnish police or GJRP that requested this arrangement. Sometimes when he worked with other authorities, he could work with GJRP at the same time, and sometimes he could not. Apart from the Gibril Massaquoi case, the investigator did not know of any other case where GJRP or one its employees was a victim.

For the next part of the hearings, extracts from Employee 1's notebook were analyzed in court.

When the investigator travelled to Lofa for the first time for the Finnish police in 2019 and made notes about the trip in his notebook. He testified that he did not speak with Background 1 about finding [REDACTED] while working for the Finnish police. He confirmed that he did not ask anyone about the clothing that RUF soldiers wore, as he thought that was up to the police.

The defense asked about some names and contact information noted as collected between 6 April to 12 April 2019. The investigator explained that he had written this information down after they had been to a village meeting and the police had conducted interviews. The police wanted him to remain in contact with these potential witnesses about their location and logistics, so he tried to compile this information in his notes. He had received these names from Interpreter 4, who had been interpreting most of the interviews in Lofa. According to Employee 1, the date 6 April to 12 April 2019 indicates the time when these names were gathered. When the defense pointed out that the police conducted interviews in Kortohun in 14 April 2019, he confirmed this and explained that they received this list from the village elders two days before arriving to the village and he gave the list to the police.

Employee 1 confirmed the name of Soldier 7, which was written in his notebook. The police interviewed Soldier 7 and sent him to look for [REDACTED]. He confirmed that he had asked the questions as instructed by the Finnish police, such as whether the person was in a certain place during the war and whether they would be willing to meet with the police. There was a meeting marked on 8 April 2019 that was held with the Finnish police, he was to find out whether there had been an ambush in the area and whether somebody had burned a church in the area or if there were any mass graves. He was also supposed to ask whether people were burned inside a house in Kamatahun.

The investigator was asked about some dates in his notebook that were difficult to interpret. He explained that he wrote some dates down after returning from the field and they might not be

completely accurate, the real dates could be off by a few days here and there. He had brought his notebook to court, so used the original to look the dates. He confirmed that he had met the people whose names were written under a date in 2019. He had met them in a similar way as with other villages, by speaking with the elders who gave them names of potential witnesses. He had not met every person on the list personally, he just wrote down the names he had received in the village. The village chiefs would ask the preliminary questions and provide Employee 1 and Interpreter 4 with the list of names. He further clarified that the names are "a list of witnesses from all those villages, put together and made into a list. And when you know about an investigation, if he has information about an event or a person and tomorrow you need that information, then you go straight to him. One witness might see two different events or two different perpetrators. It is possible that the one witness can be used in both cases. So, when I was talking to these people, I combined all these names for my own use".

The defense asked Employee 1 about some other names that he had written down. Employee 1 estimated that these people had spoken with their village chiefs before speaking with the police. He repeated that he had made the lists for his own use and the dates might not be accurate. He did not keep similar notes during every trip. According to Employee 1, when they got to a village and returned later, as instructed by the village elders, they would not meet all of the people whose names he had written down. The procedure for entering a village was not the same in all villages, but it always had a similar goal.

The investigator testified that he does not know the chief of Kiantahun but knew that Civilian 45 held a political position in Kamatahun. Employee 1 met them when he came to their villages with the police. He testified that he went to Kiantahun twice. The first time no one was around, apart from someone he estimated to be a teacher, so he and Interpreter 4 explained their mission and he said he would put a list together. The police were on their way to Voinjama, Interpreter 4 went to the guest house where they were staying and told them that he had received a call from Kiantahun. Thomas agreed that they should all go.

For the most part, Employee 1 did not ask direct questions about the date of the events, stating: "Once the person says I witnessed the RUF activities, I forget about the year. The year I think should be the concern of the police".

The investigator estimated that he met Civilian 61 twice. There was discussion as to a date written next to the witness' name: the year 2003 was first written down, and then the year 2001 was written over it. He testified that the witness first mentioned 2003 and then corrected himself with the year 2001. He asked whether the witness was sure, and wrote both years down, keeping both visible. He could not say exactly when he had met with this witness. The defense also asked about the year 2003 written next to Civilian 69. Employee 1 explained that this was to do with a different witness, who testified about something else and didn't want to be identified. He repeated that this notebook was for his own personal research.

The defense asked about another list of names that Employee 1 had noted with a description that he had not met them. He explained that he received names from Interpreter 4 and village chiefs. He himself had not met them, but he assumed that interpreter 4 had asked them the same specific questions that the police had given to him. The original plan was for Employee 1 to ask these questions himself, but he could not speak the local language, so he needed the interpreter's help. He would tell the interpreter that if he found any other people who could be useful, he should send their names to him, which the Finnish police was aware of. The police had

not given explicit permission for the village chiefs to ask questions to witnesses, but Employee 1 explained that this was necessary in practice.

The defense asked about a note relating to witness Defense 14. The investigator explained that the defense had asked him to find the witness. The witness had told him about Gibril Massaquoi, so he had written their names next to each other. The other notes had been written down quickly, while he was trying to get all the important information down, so Employee 1 explained them to the court. He had also written down the name of witness Defense 09, because the police wanted him to find him.

Employee 1 then explained the dates of the different trips to Lofa, but maintained that the dates, as they were written in his notebook, were not accurate. He then described how he, the police, and interpreters went together. They had two interpreters, one for English and one for Gbandi. He did not sit in the interviews but stayed in the car or walked around while they were conducted. He then re-explained his trips to Kiantahun. After some confusion as to dates, timings, and other details, the court asked the defense to move on with their questioning.

The investigator testified further that he gave all the relevant contact information he received to the police. The defense pointed out that the police had noted that they had found eight witnesses without him, but the contact information of all these witnesses was noted in his notebook. The investigator responded that he could not find all of the witnesses. Sometimes, a witness would mention another person during the interview and then the police would ask him to contact them before they spoke to them.

The defense further pointed out some witnesses that had testified that they heard the suspect's name from Employee 1. He denied telling the suspect's name to any witness and speculated that they heard the name from social media or from other witnesses. This was only his own speculation, he could not speak for other people.

Employee 1 explained that most of the ex-fighters were reached through other soldiers. For example, a high-ranking soldier may talk about other soldiers, would then bring them to testify. He could not say whether these soldiers would have spoken amongst themselves before he reached them.

The investigator testified that he did not rule out any witness before passing on their contact details to the police. The defense pointed out that every witness contacted through him mentioned the name Angel Gabriel, Angel, Gabriel or Gibril Massaquoi, which he could not explain. The defense also pointed out that most witnessed contacted in 2019 and 2020 placed the events in Waterside in 2003, which the investigator could not confirm or deny.

The defense then asked how he had contacted certain witnesses in 2021. For example, witness X1, whom Employee 1 reached through his wife. The investigator described how X1 was reluctant to testify because he was afraid of being prosecuted himself. One day, he met another former soldier and called X1 in his presence, explaining that he was looking for witnesses who knew about RUF activity in Liberia. X1 then agreed to meet. He also described how Thomas had gone to Sierra Leone and come back with some names of people for him to talk to, but he could not say where he had gotten the names from. There was, for example, a blind woman, who was willing to testify but her husband had stopped her from doing so. The defense asked about a man called [REDACTED], who he had been asked about in previous hearings, whom witness X2 had

previously said had contacted him before Employee 1. The investigator responded that he had spoken to over 200 people altogether, he could not remember them all, and could not recall meeting [REDACTED]. The defense then asked about [REDACTED], whom witness X6 had mentioned had contacted him before Employee 1. Employee 1 could not recall this person. The defense pointed out that he had told the lower court that he met [REDACTED] in Paynesville and that he drives a motorcycle. Employee 1 then recalled being shown [REDACTED]'s name, that he drives a motorcycle, and used to live in Twelve Houses. The defense and the investigator then discussed other names that witnesses had mentioned.

Employee 1 then described how he was called by Thomas after X3's interview. X3 had said that he had some photographs and Thomas had arranged for him to get them. When he went to collect those photographs, X3 said that he wanted to meet Thomas, stating that he could not get the photographs because they were with a former fighter and who wanted money for them. Employee 1 refused this and said that X3 could not see Thomas before bringing him the photographs. He then called Thomas to relay what X3 had said. Later on, he explained to Thomas that someone should go with X3 to verify the photographs. He then met the woman who had the photographs. She asked for money, to which he responded that he could not pay for something which he has not seen. The woman then came back with a black plastic bag, but he could not see what was inside. The defense then corrected Employee 1, as this incident was linked to witness X5 and not witness X3. He then confirmed that he had not seen any pictures in relation to X3 or X5.

The investigator confirmed that he is not related to Soldier 50.

Employee 1 ended his hearing by stating: "I believe in transparency. I work for justice. I don't know the perpetrator. In Liberia we say: 'I don't have fish to fry in this oil', meaning I don't have anything to do with his case, I did my best to be neutral. What we do here will go a long way to deter people that abuse human rights".

March 16, 2023 – Day 32: Child soldiers

Today the Court heard three soldiers about their experiences in connection with the Liberian Civil War.

The first witness told about his experience as a child soldier serving the government troops in Liberia.

The second witness used to work as a driver for the RUF and described his travels between Sierra Leone and Liberia during the Second Liberian Civil War.

The third witness told about being abducted as a child from Sierra Leone ny rebel forces and being brought to Monrovia, Liberia until the end of the war.

Tomorrow, the Court is scheduled to hear one witness. (Editor's note: the hearing for Friday the 17th was cancelled due to the witness being dropped by the Prosecution. The Court will resume hearings on Monday the 20th.

March 16, 2023 [Liberia] Day 32: Child soldiers

Witness X4 is heard

The prosecution questions X4

The prosecution began by asking about X4's participation in Liberia's war. X4 testified that he was a child soldier under Charles Taylor. He was 13 years old in 2003 and was born on May 3, 1990. He fought in Montserrado, Monrovia during the war, in places like Freeport and Dwala. His general was General Shayray. The witness never found out who the enemy was, but the enemy was located in Dwala and they were trying to push them out of the harbor area. According to X4, the conflicts were called World Wars I, II and III and lasted until 2003. There were some foreign troops assisting President Taylor, who General Shayray told him were from Sierra Leone. X4 had gone with General Shayray to pick up a visiting general from Lofa, when he found out that he was a foreigner. This general's name was Gibril Massaquoi. They picked him up from Voinjama in 2003. There were a lot of generals there, such as Benjamin Yeaten. They travelled to Voinjama by land, passing by lots of villages. X4 could only remember the name of Zorzor village as one of the villages that they travelled through. He could not remember where General Massaquoi was staying in Voinjama when they went to pick him up. They returned to Monrovia the same way, by land. General Massaquoi was first taken to White Flower, then by the Nigeria house and the radio station.

X4 learned the name General Gibril Massaquoi there, when it was announced that he was next in line from Benjamin Yeaten. He spoke in the same way Sierra Leoneans speak. X4 saw Massaquoi speak once, when an enemy fighter had been captured. Massaquoi came and killed him. The fighter was captured in Freeport and brought to Capitol Bypass, located near the University of Liberia. The witness confirmed that he witnessed Gibril Massaquoi kill the person himself. He could not remember the last time he saw Massaquoi. He had not heard or seen any news about Massaquoi being arrested in another country before he met one of the Finnish policemen.

According to X4, General Massaquoi was also called Angel Gabriel. There were other soldiers from Sierra Leone in Monrovia during the war, but the witness only knew of Gibril Massaquoi.

The defense questions X4

The defense began by asking X4 about the time he went to pick up Massaquoi from Voinjama. X4 testified that he was told by General Shayray to go there. They went all the way to Voinjama town. Other soldiers went with them, such as General Gaddafi and Mosquito. X4 did not know General Mosquito's real name. He spoke plain English but he couldn't say whether he spoke with an accent or not. The defense pointed out that X4 had told the police that he was tasked to pick up Gibril Massaquoi from Kolahun, Lofa. He responded that he cannot remember all the details after 20 years. General Shayray, General Gaddafi and Benjamin Yeaten were Liberian. According to X4, Massaquoi was to be picked up so that he could help the President. As a child soldier, he was not given any additional information.

X4 testified that he knew about Sam Bockarie and the reason for picking up Gibril Massaquoi had something to do with his death. He could not remember Sam Bockarie's war name. He could not remember the names of any other Sierra Leonean soldiers besides Gibril Massaquoi, as a child soldier he didn't meet the more higher-ranking soldiers. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the police that he saw Massaquoi shoot two enemy fighters in Capitol Bypass. X4 responded that he could not remember the exact number of prisoners, but he could remember that Massaquoi killed a prisoner or multiple prisoners that day.

The witness then described how he was put in touch with the Finnish police. A friend of his had called and said that someone, Employee 1, wanted to contact him. Employee 1 then called him and said that there were people who wanted to talk to him about his experience as a child soldier. X4 gave the name of his friend to the court.

Finally, the witness testified that he heard Massaquoi speak when the captured enemy fighters were killed. Massaquoi told them to go and tell Jesus that Angel Gabriel sent them. This is how he learned the name Angel Gabriel.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness X7 is heard

The prosecution questions X7

The prosecution began by asking about X7's experience of the war in Liberia when Charles Taylor was in power. The witness testified that he had personal experience Charles Taylor's rebellion and of the war in Sierra Leone. When Taylor arrived in 1990, X7 was in Lofa county, Voinjama. He and his father decided to go to Freetown, because his father was a soldier stationed at the border between Sierra Leone and Liberia. Before the war progressed, X7's father was killed. He had two wives, so X7 moved to his stepmother's home in Freetown. He stayed there until they heard that the RUF had come to Sierra Leone. X7 and his family were in Freetown when RUF arrived. He went into hiding because many people were being killed. His two sisters hid him in the house until one of them fell in love with a RUF general called Mohamed. She told Mohamed about the witness, who tried to get him to come out from hiding. He learned that X7 smoked and would

bring him tobacco. Mohamed eventually managed to get him to come outside, and became like a brother to him.

Mohamed asked him what he could do and X7 told him that he used to work as driver. Mohamed told him that their chief had a Mercedes truck with no driver. The chief was called Gabriel. Two days later, Mohamed took the witness to see the truck so that he could drive goods to Lofa, Gbarnga and Monrovia. He went to see the truck, saw that it was in good condition, and by February 14, was on his way to Lofa. The chief had a place in Voinjama, called Tegboma Quarters. X7 would transport cocoa from Voinjama to Kailahun, Freetown and Guinea. In 2001, they came to Monrovia when Chief Gabriel came to meet Benjamin Yeaten and Charles Taylor. X7 testified that he was no chief himself, he was just a driver, but he was driving the truck. When they arrived in Monrovia, Gabriel had a Kissi girlfriend, who lived in Congo Town behind the Kiss FM radio station. They had a son. X7 testified that he was not present when Gabriel met with Charles Taylor and Benjamin Yeaten. The NPFL also used his truck and sometimes Benjamin Yeaten would ask for it to transport supplies to the front lines. X7 would drive to Koidu or Kailahun and would sometimes bring soldiers over to Freetown.

The witness testified that once, when Gabriel was in Tegboma, Voinjama, X7 went with Gabriel's girlfriend and her friend to Voinjama, as they wanted to spend time with him. X7 left the women in Voinajma and went with Gabriel from Voinjama to Kolahun and Kailahun to the frontlines, and returned to Voinjama at night. The house in Voinjama had four bedrooms. One of the bedrooms was filled with arms and ammunition. A G4, a logistics person, was stationed in the house and took care of the room with the weapons. According to X7, the G4 had forgotten to lock the door and the two women had gone inside when searching for something to use for cooking. When they saw the weapons, they got scared. X7's cousin had a Yamaha motorcycle at the house and was interested in Gabriel's girlfriend. When the women discovered the weapons, they were scared because Gabriel used to beat his girlfriend. They asked X7's cousin for help and he took them from Voinjama, to Zorzor and then to Gbarnga, where they spent almost two months before returning to Monrovia in March 2002.

X7 testified that he returned to Monrovia in March 2002 and Gabriel went to see Taylor and Yeaten. The witness was not present at the meeting. Another time in 2002, Gabriel and Yeaten had an argument because Yeaten wanted to use the truck. X7 had just driven a full day and a night and said that he was too tired to drive. Yeaten wanted to execute him, so the witness escaped and left the truck there. That was the last time he saw Gabriel.

According to the witness, Mohamed was one of the RUF generals and was under Gabriel. Gabriel was the spokesman for the RUF. X7 found out about Gabriel's role in the RUF when Mohamed hired him to drive the truck. He also saw Gabriel multiple times on the BBC Focus on Africa program. He spent a lot of time with Gabriel, who was also called Angel Gabriel by the soldiers. Gabriel did not travel with X7 on the truck, he had his own jeep, but he often gave orders on where to drive. The witness received the truck in 2000 and began driving on February 14. He picked up the truck from Kailahun in Sierra Leone, where it had been parked. As of 2001, the NPFL was in control of the whole of Voinjama and Lofa area.

X7 confirmed that he came to Monrovia in 2001. They came to pick up cocoa and sandals for the soldiers to use. Gabriel Massaquoi came to meet Charles Taylor and Benjamin Yeaten in Monrovia, he was the RUF spokesman, the same person as Angel Gabriel. Most of his soldiers called him Angel Gabriel, but when he was interviewed on the BBC, he was Gabriel Massaquoi.

They came to Monrovia in separate vehicles multiple times between 2000 and 2002. The last time was around the middle of 2002. At the time, there was fighting ongoing in the Cape Mount and Bomi direction. The was not fighting in central Monrovia at the time.

The witness further confirmed that Gabriel Massaquoi had a girlfriend in Congo Town, who used to cook for the soldiers and with whom he had a baby. X7 had met her multiple times. He found out about her and her friend visiting Gabriel in Voinjama, because they were with Gabriel in another vehicle while X7 was driving the truck in the same convoy. He continued with Gabriel to the frontlines when they had dropped the women off at the house in Voinjama. The witness did not go all the way the actual frontline, but dropped soldiers off nearby. Gabriel Massaquoi also came to the frontline when they were trying to reach Freetown in Sierra Leone. When he left, X7 left the truck to Monrovia, Congo Town, in front of Charles Taylor's house. This was in the middle of 2002. He didn't stay in Monrovia because he feared for his life, so he escaped to Yekepa, Nimba county. The fight between Massaquoi and Yeaten was the last time X7 saw Gabriel Massaquoi.

According to X7, Gabriel Massaquoi spoke English and Krio. He gave the name of the friend of Gabriel Massaquoi's girlfriend to the court. The route that they took from Monrovia to Voinjama went through Zorzor, Yeala and Gbarnga. The witness testified that when he was driving for Gabriel Massaquoi between 2000 and 2002, enemy troops were in Lofa and at the Guinean border. The enemy at the time was ULIMO, there were also troops from the Liberian Peace Council and Black Berets. These groups were organized around 2001.

The witness testified that he had not heard any news about Massaquoi being arrested in another country before his police interview.

The defense questions X7

The defense began by asking about X7 moving to Freetown. The witness testified that he moved to his stepmother's house. He picked up the truck in Kailahun, but the discussions about him receiving the truck took place in Freetown. Gabriel gave the keys to X7's brother-in-law, who gave them to him. The witness recalled people dying and being killed before he picked up the truck. According to him, the RUF had killed people in Makeni. The defense referred to his police interview. The witness had said that he had witnessed a mass murder organized by Mosquito in Makeni, which he confirmed . The defense pointed out that X7 had testified in the lower court that this took place approximately a week before he received the truck and he confirmed this.

According to the witness, Mosquito was also called Master and was a general. The defense pointed out that X7 had testified in the lower court that he received the keys and the truck from his sister's boyfriend two weeks after he had asked for work, and was told to transport the boss around. The witness denied this, saying that Mohamed did not bring the truck to him. He also clarified that he has two sisters, who both fell in love with different generals, the other one was called Issa Kamara. The defense pointed out that the witness had not mentioned the RUF general called Mohamed before, to which X7 responded that he had not mentioned Gabriel Massaquoi's girlfriend and child before either.

X7 used to pick up cocoa from Kailahun and take it to the border between Liberia and Guinea. He testified that he never drove to Monrovia at the exact same time as Massaquoi: one would always arrive before the other. The defense referred to his police interview, where the witness

had said that he had come to Monrovia at the same time as Massaquoi once. The witness could not recall this. He knew that Massaquoi came to Monrovia to meet with senior officials, such as Benjamin Yeaten or Charles Taylor, but he did not know what they spoke about. He explained that Massaquoi had a diplomatic mission because he used to talk with foreign officials. Massaquoi travelled to Monrovia with his bodyguards.

According to the witness, soldiers used the name Angel Gabriel for Gabriel Massaquoi. On the BBC, he was not called Angel Gabriel but by his full name, Gabriel Massaquoi. The defense pointed out that X7 had testified in the lower court that he had not heard any other name used for Massaquoi, and he had not mentioned any other name for Massaquoi in his police interview. X7 could not remember having testified so. He clarified that Gabriel Massaquoi was his full name and "Angel Gabriel was only his war name". X7 had met Massaquoi four times. The defense pointed out that he had spoken of three times in the lower court, to which he responded that he perhaps didn't count the last trip. The witness had been in Monrovia once when Massaquoi wasn't there.

X7 could not estimate how long he had the truck for. When he received it, there was war going on in both Sierra Leone and Liberia. The defense pointed out that X7 had told the police that he had received the truck in November 2002. He responded that during his police interview, he could not remember the exact date, but he now knew the correct date because he had asked his sister. The defense also pointed out that the witness had not mentioned anything in the lower court about Massaquoi's girlfriend and her friend escaping on a motorcycle from Voinjama. X7 responded: "The last time I was here, I said I was not going to say everything, that I was going to save some for another time. Some of us were afraid and we are still afraid, maybe other people may hunt us, you know we worked with those people who can harm us". He continued: "I was a driver for Massaquoi and his friends and family are still around so not everything I will put outside".

The witness testified that he does not know Mohamed's last name. He confirmed that by referring to the man with the motorbike as his cousin, he meant a blood relative. The last time he saw Massaquoi in Monrovia was in the middle of 2002. The defense pointed out that he had told the police that he had seen Massaquoi in August 2003. He responded that this was in 2002, not in 2003. There was then a discussion as to the name of Gabriel Massaquoi's girlfriend, as the witness had given a different name to the lower court. The witness responded that in Africa, people have two different names.

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Gibril Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

Witness Y1 is heard

The prosecution questions Y1

The prosecution began by asking about where Y1 was born. Y1 testified that he was born in Sierra Leone and currently lives in Lofa. He had come to Liberia in 1999, when he was abducted by rebels. The commander of the rebels was called Gibril Massaquoi. The witness was abducted from his school in Kailahun, Sierra Leone. He could not remember when this happened as he was so young at the time. According to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi was the spokesman for the RUF. He was Sierra Leonean. Gibril Massaquoi was the one who abducted him. Y1 ended up in Liberia

because the rebels went there. Gibril Massaquoi had many heavily armed men with him. They forced him to come to Liberia with them. He could not say why the rebels came to Liberia, or how old he was when they came. He was born in 1983.

Y1 testified that they came to Liberia through Vahun and continued to Monrovia. In Monrovia, he went to Benjamin Yeaten's house. He was sent there by Gibril Massaquoi to protect Yeaten. Benjamin Yeaten was a four-star general. Gibril Massaquoi was also at Yeaten's house but Y1 did not know what he was doing there. When they came to Monrovia, there was fighting ongoing in the city, towards Dwala and Waterside. LURD rebels were coming from Dwala towards Waterside, but they did not make it all the way to Waterside as Yeaten and his troops blocked them. Y1 testified that he also went to Waterside, he was often taken there by his commander, Gibril Massaquoi. There were other men under Massaquoi's command at Waterside fighting against the rebels. When he was not in Waterside, he stayed at Twelve Houses on ELWA junction. All the soldiers from Sierra Leone, as well as Gibril Massaquoi, were stationed there.

The witness could not remember the route that they took from Vahun to Monrovia, nor how long it took. He could not remember how long after the battles in Dwala and Waterside that peace came to Liberia. He could not remember the last time he had seen Massaquoi, it had been such a long time since. He could not tell which dialect Massaquoi spoke. His soldiers used to call him Angel Gabriel. When the war ended, he did not see Massaquoi and "these men" at Waterside again.

The defense questions Y1

The defense began by asking about the commander with whom Y1 came to Liberia. He testified that his commander was Gibril Massaquoi. He also had another commander called Super. According to the witness, Sierra Leone was undergoing disarmament when he came to Liberia. The defense pointed out that Y1 had told the police that after the war in Sierra Leone, Superman said that he could not just sit and watch as the war was happening in Liberia and Superman took them to Liberia. Y1 responded that this was an arrangement between Superman and Gibril Massaquoi because they knew what was happening. He only knew that Superman and Massaquoi were "involved with the President." Both Superman and Massaquoi brought him to Liberia.

The defense further referred to the witness's police interview, where he had said that Superman abducted him. Y1 explained that he mentioned the name of Gibril Massaquoi, because Massaquoi and Superman moved together and Superman took orders from Gibril Massaquoi. He stated that Superman was killed for power. He could not remember when, but testified that it took place in Lofa. Superman's death affected the leadership of his group "because of jealousy". Massaquoi was with them the whole time he was in Sierra Leone and when he came to Vahun. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the police that after Superman's death, they felt bad and wanted to go home. He had said that Gibril Massaquoi had come into the picture when they were in Vahun. Y1 confirmed this, that Massaquoi had first sent Superman and came afterwards. The witness testified that they spent a long time in Vahun. The defense pointed out that Y1 had testified in the lower court that he had spent over a year in Vahun, which he confirmed. Massaquoi was with him in Vahun, he used to come and go. The defense then pointed out that Y1 had told the police that he came to Liberia in 2000, possibly in March. He responded that he cannot remember the exact date. The defense also pointed out that Y1 had told the police he arrived the same month Superman was killed, which he confirmed.

According to the witness, Massaquoi was always with his men after Superman's death, clarifying that he meant that Massaquoi never left for long. He would often go to Monrovia with Benjamin Yeaten and then come back to Vahun.

Y1 testified that he was involved in a car accident in Lofa. He could not remember everything but recalled that some people were killed and he was injured. He could not remember where it had occurred. Massaquoi's vehicle was in the same convoy, in a vehicle in front of the one Y1 was in. Massaquoi was not involved in the accident. The defense pointed out that Y1 had testified in the lower court that the accident took place in Waterside, on the Old Bridge and had said that he was in the same car as Massaquoi. Y1 responded that he could not remember the location of the accident, but he remembered being in a car with Massaquoi. He then stated that he was in a different car to Massaquoi. According to Y1, the last time he saw Massaquoi was not related to the accident. The defense further pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that the accident was the last time he had seen Massaquoi. He responded that he could not remember everything, as it happened a long time ago.

Y1 testified that at some point, he moved permanently from Vahun to Monrovia. Massaquoi was not with him when he came to Monrovia. He came because the fighting brought them all to the city. He could not remember having heard of people being shot in a store in Waterside or Monrovia. The defense pointed out that the witness had mentioned in his police interview that he had participated in fighting on Waterside and if he or Benjamin Yeaten saw people looting, they would shoot at them. Y1 confirmed this and stated that Gibril Massaquoi was present when people were shot in a store. He testified that Massaquoi and Benjamin Yeaten used to do that. The defense pointed out that he had told the police that Massaquoi was not there, to which the witness responded that he cannot remember everything.

The defense pointed out that Y1 had said in his police interview that Massaquoi did not use any other names, to which he responded that he cannot remember everything. The defense further pointed out that the witness had said that he didn't know anyone named Angel Gabriel. He repeated that he cannot remember everything as it happened a long time ago.

The witness described how his friend gave his contact information to Employee 1. He had mentioned another name to the police, who he confirmed was also his friend.

Finally, Y1 confirmed that he had only been in one car accident during the war. The accident took place in Lofa, not in Waterside.

It was pointed out that the witness was not asked to make any photo identifications at his police interview.

March 20, 2023 – Day 33: Sierra Leoneans in Monrovia

Today, the Court heard two witnesses about the events in Monrovia.

The first witness described his experiences serving in the NPFL during the Second Liberian Civil War. He met with the Sierra Leonean forces in Monrovia and witnessed a standoff between them and his Liberian commander after the Sierra Leoneans had killed civilians at Water Street.

The second witness spent time in Monrovia at the RUF guest house and described the arrival and stay of multiple RUF members from Sierra Leone. He also described them taking arms and ammunition from Monrovia to Lofa county.

Tomorrow, the Court will begin the day by watching a video recording of the testimony of a witness who testified at the District Court, who has since passed away. In addition, one witness is scheduled to appear before the Court tomorrow.

March 20, 2023 [Liberia] Day 33: Sierra Leoneans in Monrovia

Witness Z2 is heard

The prosecution questions Z2

The prosecution began by asking about Z2's participation in the war in Liberia. The witness testified that he was a part of the NPFL and was stationed under General Fifty in Gbarnga. He later moved to Monrovia in 1996. He stayed in Monrovia until disarmament in 2003, 2004. Before the end of the war, Z2 fought in Monrovia. There was fighting on Water Street and over the bridge to Vai Town. Z2 was near the two bridges, Old Bridge and New Bridge and on Water Street. They were fighting against LURD. The witness testified that there were troops from foreign countries, such as a special unit called aqbah from Sierra Leone, who he worked with. He testified that he was in a presidential guard and would sometimes go on missions with the aqbah troops. The commander of aqbah in Liberia was "Master C" Bockarie. After his death, Fifty promoted Angel Gabriel to command the aqbah. Angel Gabriel was a Sierra Leonean RUF commander.

The witness explained that this promotion occurred in 2002. One night, Z2 was at Fifty's house when the aqbah troops came in pickups. Fifty's house was located on a bypass in Congo Town and he had been assigned to the gate. When they arrived, they said that they had come for Fifty. A commander called Wilfren was there, and Fifty's wife invited them in, but the aqbah waited for Fifty outside the house. Then, they went inside to talk, but the witness did not know what they were discussing, as he stayed outside. The whole aqbah special forces unit came to meet Fifty. At the time, Salami was their commander. There were others present too, such as Angel Gabriel, who was wearing an 'Arabic headscarf'. The next day, the aqbah was assigned a mission on Water Street. They had previously controlled Old Bridge, while Benjamin Yeaten controlled the New Bridge.

Z2 testified that he heard the name Angel Gabriel from other soldiers when he took them to Water Street. He saw him twice: once at the guest house and once on Water Street. On Water Street, Salami gave an order to his men because there was looting going on. According to Z2, the

president had given an order to Fifty, who passed the order on, that looters were to be shot. Z2 saw Angel Gabriel on Water Street in connection to this situation. As a commanding officer, Angel Gabriel didn't go to the frontline. Z2 saw him at the Rasamy building, one of the longest shops on Water Street, located near the bridge. The witness described how Salami went to the store and ordered the aqbah men to shoot, and General Glasco got angry. Troops left their posts and came to Glasco's area to shoot. Glasco then told the Liberians to go to the Rasamy building. At the Rasamy building, Salami and Glasco were arguing. Yanney came from upstairs and was making a lot of noise. Soon, Fifty arrived and told everyone to stop. Fifty called two commanders, one of them was still upstairs, stopped the argument between Salami and Glasco and went back upstairs. Later, they all came down and he gave money to the generals. The soldiers then left the building.

The witness explained that Angel Gabriel was the leader of aqbah. He did not see Angel Gabriel at the Rasamy building during this argument, except when Fifty came to calm the situation. Z2 saw Angel Gabriel going upstairs and come back down wearing the 'Arabic headscarf'. He testified that Angel Gabriel was this commander's 'well-known name'.

Z2 testified that during the argument at the Rasamy building, there was fighting ongoing on the other side of the bridge. The war was called World Wars I, II and III. According to Z2, the war ended in August, while the argument took place in April.

The defense questions Z2

The defense began by asking Z2 about the times he saw Angel Gabriel. He testified that he had seen Angel Gabriel in two different places. On both occasions, he was wearing the 'Arabic headscarf'.

The witness described that he was contacted by a friend who told him about the program. His friend's brother told him that he would take him to Employee 1. They met with another man who took them to the hotel. Employee 1 then later called Z2 and said that he would be taken to the police. Z2's friend told him about [REDACTED] when they were sat together buying palm wine and cigarettes. Employee 1 called him and asked him if he was the person whose number [REDACTED] had given to him and told him to come to the hotel. Z2 testified that the men had mentioned before his police interview that the interview would be about the war and Sierra Leoneans and how they travelled to Liberia and back. He was not told that the case was about Angel Gabriel, only that it would be about aqbah men. The defense pointed out that in his police interview, the witness said that he already knew that the interview would be about Angel Gabriel. The witness denied this. He only found out that the case was related to Angel Gabriel when he arrived at the meeting with the police. The police wanted the names of generals and Z2 gave them a list.

The defense pointed out that Z2 had testified in the lower court that [REDACTED] had told him that one of their friends had an issue with the case, they wanted Z2 to testify, and that the issue was with a case involving Angel Gabriel. Z2 confirmed that he had testified this, but he insisted that [REDACTED] had only told him that the case was mostly about Sierra Leoneans and that he never said that the case was about Bockarie or Angel Gabriel. When Z2 left the interview, he found out from a newspaper that the case was about these men. The defense further pointed out that Z2 had testified in the lower court that he had asked his friend what the case was about, and he'd told him that it was about the three commanders. His friend had told him that the case has a

problem and that it was about Angel Gabriel. Z2 responded that his friend had not used the name Angel Gabriel, but 'one Massaquoi'. He confirmed that his friend had told him that there was an issue in the case concerning Massaquoi, his brother was working on the case. His friend never told the witness what the issue was.

According to Z2, [REDACTED] and Employee 1 were two different people, despite [REDACTED] having the same phone number as Employee 1. Z2 did not recall being asked to the case because someone needed a 'permanent witness'.

Witness Defense 09 is heard

The prosecution questions Defense 09

At the beginning of the hearing, it was explained that despite the code name Defense 09, this witness was originally called by the prosecution in the lower court and then by both parties in the Court of Appeals. It was agreed by the parties that the prosecution would question him first.

The prosecution began by asking about Defense 09's place of birth. Defense 09 testified that he was born in Sierra Leone. The war in Sierra Leone was between the RUF and government troops. Defense 09 was himself a member of the RUF. The organization was founded by Corporal Foday Sebana Sankoh in 1992. He remained its leader until his arrest in Freetown on 17 May, 2000. After Sankoh's arrest, Issa Sesay seized power. At the time, Defense 09 was in Monrovia, in a guest house that had been given to the RUF by Charles Taylor. According to Defense 09, Taylor gave them the guest house because he was strongly supporting the RUF in the war. In exchange, the RUF gave Taylor diamonds. Defense 09 knew about the exchange between the RUF and Charles Taylor, because he worked as a caretaker in the guest house in Monrovia. He would receive the RUF members coming to Monrovia.

Defense 09 testified that he was involved in situations where the RUF handed diamonds over to Charles Taylor. Such RUF members involved were Ibrahim Bah or Issa Sesay. The guest house was located in Congo Town, very near to Taylor's radio station, Kiss FM. It did not have a particular name, it was known as the RUF guest house. The witness arrived at the guest house right after the Lomé agreement in 1999. At that point, Charles Taylor had already given it to the RUF. There were other RUF members besides Ibrahim Bah and Issa Sesay staying there. Right after Sankoh's arrest, Benjamin Yeaten came and told Defense 09 that Issa Sesay and his men were coming. Defense 09 then saw Gibril Massaquoi, Defense 14 and Abdul Razak arriving at the guest house. Issa Sesay said that they were there to help with a diplomatic issue. This was in 2000, but the witness could not remember the exact date.

The witness testified that Benjamin Yeaten was Charles Taylor's head of security at the time. He took Defense 09, Gibril Massaquoi, Abdul Razak and Issa Sesay to White Flower, Charles Taylor's apartment. When Issa Sesay left, Benjamin Yeaten called them and they brought material to the front, to Voinjama in Lofa. According to Defense 09, they transported arms and ammunition there following Taylor's request. Defense 09 travelled to Voinjama with Gibril Massaquoi, Abdul Razak and Benjamin Yeaten and some other soldiers. They travelled on a pick-up with a 50-calibre mounted on it. It carried AK47 rifles, ammunition, and bombs. The witness travelled with arms and ammunition to the front in Voinjama twice. He could not recall exactly how many times Gibril Massaquoi travelled to Voinjama. He could not remember whether Massaquoi was there both the times that he himself went, but confirmed that he travelled with them at least once. The

fighting was at the border area. Defense 09 stayed in Voinjama while the others, Gibril Massaquoi and the rest of the soldiers, continued to the front. According to Defense 09, he could hear the sounds of battle, but he was not at the front. The front was on the Guinean border. Defense 09 knew that the others went to the front, because he saw Benjamin Yeaten organizing it and heard them talking about going there.

Defense 09 testified that he saw the arms and ammunition they had transported. The cargo was taken to the front at the same time as Gibril Massaquoi, Benjamin Yeaten and others went there. It did not stay in Voinjama with Defense 09. The witness could not remember whether there were civilians involved on the trip, but he could remember two women. One was Gibril Massaquoi's girlfriend and the other was Abdul Razak's girlfriend. The witness gave the court the name of Abdul Razak's girlfriend. The women came all the way to Voinjama with them. Defense 09 could not remember exactly where in Voinjama they stayed. He testified that he could not tell whether they were all in the same building, as the buildings were small and everyone was doing their own thing. He could not recall how the women left Voinjama. He could not remember exactly when this trip to Voinjama took place. He estimated that it was in 2000, but could not remember the month.

The witness did not know if Massaquoi went outside of Monrovia without him, he himself stayed in Monrovia until 2001. Massaquoi and the other RUF were renting another house in 2001, because Charles Taylor ordered them to leave the guest house. According to Defense 09, this was because the international community found out about the RUF members staying in the guest house. Massaquoi lived in the new apartment with his wife, Abdul Razak and Defense 14. Everybody moved to the new apartment that Massaquoi had rented and stayed there until leaving for Sierra Leone. Massaquoi had rented this new place because the guest house did not have enough room. It was located in Congo Town.

Defense 09 left Liberia for Sierra Leone in early 2001 with Massaquoi and the others. They drove a pickup from Gbarnga to Foya. Defense 09 then returned to Monrovia before 2007 on personal business. He came to Monrovia another time in 2007, from a SCSL safe house in Freetown. He had been assigned by the prosecutors to find some witnesses. According to Defense 09, he was staying in a safe house for his safety because he was a witness in a special court. This safe house was not guarded. While Defense 09 was staying in Monrovia between 2001 and 2006, he did not see Massaquoi in Monrovia, but saw Defense 13. Defense 09 testified that when he, Massaquoi and the others returned to Sierra Leone in 2001, Defense 13 remained in Monrovia. These days, Defense 13 is in Sierra Leone.

The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi was a "strong RUF commander" at first, and, due to his hard work, he became the spokesman. Defense 09 knew Massaquoi personally and had seen Massaquoi while he was staying in the safe house in Sierra Leone. This was in 2007, Massaquoi was on his way back from church. Massaquoi was alone. He showed Defense 09 where his safe house was located and Defense 09 visited it.

The defense questions Defense 09

The defense began by asking Defense 09 about his return to Sierra Leone and his subsequent trip to Monrovia. They pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that he had come back to Monrovia in February 2002, which he confirmed. As to Massaquoi's diplomatic mission, the witness explained that it was about arranging some international things. He had no further

knowledge about Massaquoi's role in the mission, or about his participation in the peace negotiations for Sierra Leone. The witness did not know whether Massaquoi had travelled abroad when he was staying in Monrovia. He could not remember whether Defense 14 was with them when they travelled to Voinjama or whether he had gone to Voinjama or Lofa any other time. The Defense pointed out that the witness had said in his police interview that he stayed in Monrovia while Gibril Massaquoi and Defense 14 went to Voinjama with Benjamin Yeaten. Defense 09 confirmed that he had said so but clarified that he had meant Abdul Razak instead of Defense 14. The police did not check his statement afterwards.

The defense also pointed out that Defense 09 had not mentioned to the police about being involved in trips to Voinjama or Lofa. The witness explained that he had not mentioned it to the police because they did not ask. He had mentioned the trip that Massaquoi and Defense 14 took to Lofa but not his own trips, because he was not asked. He was not asked about Massaquoi's presence on the front line during the police interview, but he was asked in court today. He explained that the police asked him where he went and he had answered that he had gone to Voinjama.

Defense 09 could not remember the clothing Massaquoi was wearing during the trips to Lofa. The witness himself wore civilian clothes. He gave the court the code name of another RUF commander in Voinjama. The arms and ammunition were not given to Defense 07, because Benjamin Yeaten was the head of security, so they were taken directly to the front by Gibril Massaquoi and the other soldiers.

The witness could not remember the month they moved out of the guest house in 2001. He could only recall meeting Massaquoi at the safe house after his return to Sierra Leone. The defense pointed out that Defense 09 had told the police that he had met Massaquoi in Makeni in early 2002, which he confirmed. The defense also pointed out that Defense 09 had used a different name for Abdul Razak's girlfriend in the lower court. He responded that he had forgotten that name but they were the same person. He could not recall any other names used for Massaquoi but said that commanders used to change their names. He confirmed that Gaffa was a name that Massaquoi used to hide his identity on the radio. He did not recall the name Wildfire being used for Massaquoi.

Defense 09 testified that he knows Sam Bockarie, who was superior to Massaquoi. The two did not have a good relationship. Bockarie came to Liberia, disobeying orders by Sankoh and Sankoh then named Issa Sesay as the leader of the RUF. The witness could not remember exactly when Sam Bockarie came to Liberia, but it happened soon after the Lomé Peace Agreement was signed. Sam Bockarie did not return to Sierra Leone after that. Massaquoi did not go to Liberia with Bockarie, he came to Monrovia in 2000 after Sankoh's arrest. Defense 09 was not aware of Massaquoi living anywhere else in Monrovia besides the RUF guest house and the apartment he had rented.

The witness stayed in the Special Court safe house from 2007 to 2009. The defense pointed out that Defense 09 had told the police that he began co-operation with the Special Court in 2006 and lived in a safe house until 2007. Defense 09 explained that he got in touch with the court in 2006 and moved to Freetown in 2007. He had gone to the safe house in 2007.

Defense 09 explained that he was called by someone in Freetown and was told that Gibril Massaquoi's lawyer wanted to speak to him. He was not willing to talk at the time, but later came

to Monrovia because he has a child in the city. He was then contacted by the Finnish police, who said they got his phone number from Alain Werner. Defense 09 got to know Werner in 2007 when he was working in the SCSL. From 2007 to 2010, Defense 09 remained in contact with Werner. In 2010, Defense 09 did not know where Werner worked, but he later found out that he had founded Civitas Maxima. Defense 09 co-operated with Werner from 2010 onwards on another matters. He still works with Civitas Maxima, but not with anyone from Liberia or Sierra Leone. Defense 09 does not receive a salary, but a stipend from Civitas Maxima.

The witness testified that he was aware of a case against Gibril Massaquoi before his police interview, as he had been called and told that the lawyer of Gibril Massaquoi wants to talk to him. He did not know about the case before this phone call. He got in contact with Thomas when he came to Monrovia. Defense 09 knows Employee 1, he had not discussed his testimony or Gibril Massaquoi in general with Employee 1. He had met Employee 1 when he came to the guest house that he'd arranged for him. He had given his phone number to Employee 1. Defense 09 had not co-operated with Civitas Maxima before going to the safe house in 2007. Alain Werner was not involved in sending Defense 09 to search for the witness in Monrovia.

Defense 09 could not estimate how long he spent away from Monrovia after his return to Sierra Leone. The prosecution pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that he left Monrovia in late 2001 with Massaquoi and others and said that he returned to Monrovia in February 2002 but could not remember whether Massaquoi had returned with him. Defense 09 responded that he cannot remember the exact time they left Monrovia. The defense then pointed out that he had told the police that Massaquoi left Monrovia in early 2001. Defense 09 confirmed that he had said this to the police.

March 21, 2023 – Day 34: Torture in Klay

Today, the Court began the session by watching a video recording of the testimony that a recently deceased witness had previously given at the District Court.

The rest of the day was spent hearing one witness. He was the victim of torture allegedly perpetrated by Gibril Massaquoi, who was instructed to obtain a confession from him regarding a suspected plot to overthrow the then-President Charles Taylor. The witness described his arrest and initial interrogation by Charles Taylor, and then the multiple places where he was taken and held prisoner. He gave a detailed account of the acts of torture that the defendant had either ordered or carried out personally. The witness, who had always denied the allegations, was held for a number of days and only released once a foreign government and international NGOs had put pressure on Charles Taylor to do so.

Court proceedings will continue tomorrow, Wednesday March 22.

March 21, 2023 [Liberia] Day 34: Torture in Klay

Witness X8's lower court recording is viewed

The court began the session by viewing witness X8's testimony from the lower court on a video recording, as the court was unable to hear him in person. Trial monitoring from the witness's hearing before the lower court can be found **here**.

Witness Background 1 is heard

The prosecution questions Background 1

The prosecution began by asking about Background 1's work. The witness testified that he works for the GJRP, an organization he founded in 2012. The GJRP is an organization that documents war-related crimes. It seeks to bring justice to the victims of Liberia's two wars in foreign jurisdictions. The witness testified that during the second Liberian civil war, he worked as the editor for the Analyst Paper newspaper and was a press reporter for the European Union in Liberia. He covered human rights issues, such as Liberia's involvement in the war in Sierra Leone by its sending soldiers for the RUF. Charles Taylor was Liberia's president at the time. He testified that Taylor did not like his coverage of these issues because he was jailed seven times by the police on Taylor's orders. The last time he was jailed was on Monday 24 June, 2002.

The witness then stated: "The most traumatic experience of my life was along with some other people at an underground cell in Klay, Bomi County, and the subsequent tortures that followed". He was held in a prison at the Klay checkpoint. The checkpoint had a gate, with a building on the left and an administrative building where immigration authorities and the police used to work, on the right. Opposite to the administrative building was a weighing station, where unprocessed rubber was weighed. To the northern part of the complex was an underground building which was not originally meant as a prison, but in which he and other people were held. It was July, the rainy season and there was water up to their knees. Every day or every other day the prisoners were brought out, their heads were covered, and they were taken inside a building to be interrogated: "And there I experienced the worst nightmare in my life. I got tortured, and beaten,

tied to my hands behind my back and, sorry we got females here, but electrocuted in my private parts". The woman who was electrocuting him was acting on orders.

Background 1 specified that he was arrested and taken to Klay on Liberia's Independence Day. He could tell the date as he heard soldiers in the area and people along the road to Klay talking about it. He was transferred from Zone Six, to Brewersville, to Klay, on the same day and people along the road were talking about Independence Day.

The witness testified that he was interrogated multiple times in Klay, he could not say how many times in total. The first interrogation took place on the same day he arrived in Klay, on 26 July 2002. He arrived right as the sun was setting and was interrogated for the first time late at night. That night, he was interrogated by Mr Gibril Massaquoi. Mr Massaquoi began by introducing himself as Angel Gabriel, Gibril Massaquoi. He asked him if he knew what Angel Gabriel means. Background 1 responded yes, that it was the name of an angel of God. Then Massaquoi told him that he was going to ask questions and if he did not tell the truth, he would kill him.

According to Background 1, Massaquoi wanted answers to the same questions that President Taylor had asked him. President Taylor wanted Background 1 to admit that he, President Ellen Sirleaf, Robert Perry, Alhaji Kroma and Abraham Mitchell had conspired to overthrow Taylor and to kill him. The witness then narrated the torture that he suffered. He explained: "He began to hit on me and he ordered me tied, what we call in Liberia, tabay. This was just before entering the administration building police office. When I did not talk they moved me into the building and then he said he will do something that will make me to talk and I cried. He brought a lady and this time I was blind folded and I was moved into that small building. I didn't wear a shirt, but I wore trousers, and he pulled down my pants and electrocuted my private parts and I yelled, and I told him that the security people who brought me had lied on me. I told him I was Mandingo, but I was not a rebel fighter and I told him that I did not ask God to make me Mandingo, he made me what he choose to make me. And he tortured me, because of the pains and anguish and the shame, because he had a lady doing that to me, I couldn't remember anything he was saying again after that. This affected me. I do not like to really talk about how it affected me. And I did not say anything, because there was nothing for me to say, because I was a journalist, I did not carry a gun. In short, Mr. Gibril Massaquoi introduced himself to me. I was not alone in the underground cell. There were many people, some soldiers, some civilians. All of which had been arrested because of me, but many of them were Mandingo".

Background 1 further testified that during this first night in Klay, before he was moved to the second building where he was tortured, in addition to Gibril Massaquoi, a man called Joe Tuah was present. He explained that Joe Tuah beat and tortured him, and he is still afraid of him. The witness described that initially they were outside, Joe Tuah was there and started beating him. Then he was taken back to the underground cell. From there, he was taken out by Gibril Massaquoi. He was taken outside right in front of the underground cell, where the first interrogation took place. After that, he was taken in front of the building and then inside. Inside on the right, there was an office area with people inside, but Background 1 was taken to the left, where his torture began. Massaquoi took him to this room and the torture and electric shocks took place there.

The witness confirmed that he met Massaquoi outside the building. He was blindfolded and could hear noise to his right. As the blindfold was removed, Massaquoi was still talking, so he connected the Sierra Leonean accent that he had heard before to him. The witness' blindfold was

removed inside the building, in the room where Massaquoi had taken him. In addition to Massaquoi and the female torturer, Joe Tuah came to the door and left but did not come inside. Joe Tuah beat him outside the building and Massaquoi continued inside the room. Gibril Massaquoi would ask a question and if he didn't get the answer he wanted, he would beat him. The witness could not remember if Massaquoi used anything besides his hand to hit him.

Background 1 testified that he was tied by tabay outside the building. It was Massaquoi who tied him. He demonstrated tabay to the court, showing how a person's hands are tied behind their back so that their elbows touch. He stated that he still has a scar from being tied up with a rope similar to a clothesline. The witness testified that his genitals were electrocuted inside the room. The female torturer was acting on Massaquoi's orders. Massaquoi would ask the questions and if he did not answer, he would order the woman to electrocute him. The witness heard the orders every time. He could not say what machine was used to electrocute him, but described electrodes and sparks coming out of it. He could not remember how many times he was electrocuted: "I was in so much pain I couldn't remember". He could not tell who the woman was. She was speaking in Mano, was not wearing any uniform and was not armed. The witness was certain that Gibril Massaquoi was the had the power of command because he was giving orders to the woman.

The witness had heard Massaquoi's name before 26 July 2002. He had learned the name from the press, as the RUF's spokesman. Background 1 had written about the RUF many times before his detention in Klay, but had not written specifically about Mr Massaquoi. He confirmed that while he was being electrocuted, there were only Massaquoi and the woman in the room. He was certain about Massaquoi's identity, and had not seen him anywhere else. Background 1 did not confess to anything as he had nothing to say. He was crying uncontrollably and after a while, they stopped and took him back to the underground cell. A doctor was brought to treat his elbow. Every time Benjamin Yeaten came to Klay, he would be given a long-sleeved shirt and was told that if he told Yeaten about his torture, they would kill him. It was Joe Tuah who told him not to tell Yeaten.

Background 1 testified that when Joe Tuah was beating him outside the building, there were other people present. It was dark, so he could not tell who they were, but he came to recognize Gibril Massaquoi by his accent, and when he introduced himself to the witness. He did not hear the names of the other people there. They were not civilians, most of them did not have a uniform but had weapons, in what the witness described as a 'military environment'.

The witness left Klay on a helicopter. He landed in the middle of the day on a highway and was blindfolded again. He was taken to Foya's landing zone and from there to Kpello, a small village near Foya. There, he was handed over to Chinese Jabber and then to Mr Peterson. This took place late in August. Chinese Jabber was the commander of Liberian troops in Foya. Background 1 was then transferred to a prison in Foya. He was released on Saturday 7 December 2002. Some Liberians were protesting his detention and the American embassy, Amnesty International and Human Rights Watch were pressuring President Taylor. Taylor finally agreed to release him on the condition he be flown into exile. That same day, the witness was driven to an airport and flown to Ghana and later to the USA.

According to Background 1, his work is viewed favorably as the current and previous Liberian governments have been unwilling or unable to implement the recommendations of the TRC. The co-operation of victims and witnesses has created possibilities for justice in Liberia, despite no

Liberian being held responsible in the country. There are many different groups trying to sabotage GJRP's work. He described that his testimony as a witness was leaked from a special court, which might affect future witnesses' willingness to co-operate with courts and put his own life in danger. There are also people in the US, who have instigated former fighters to commit evil things. For this reason, he avoids travelling after 5 pm. The leak of his witness testimony put his and his daughters' lives in danger and he believes that it was leaked due to this Massaquoi case. He stated: "There are people who would do anything to stop the forward movement of justice".

The witness then testified about the accusations made against him and the GJRP. He explained that they have been accused of paying or coaching witnesses, which he denied, they only cover expenses incurred. According to Background 1, some people feel that they are the only ones who can do such work and try to protect their interests by preventing others from working on these issues. He further explained that the GJRP is accused of telling the witnesses exactly what they need to say. Background 1 stated: "I want this honorable court to remember about 250,000 Liberians and non-Liberians got killed during the war. Those people have relatives. There are people who saw these things. There is no shortage of witnesses for someone to pay some to testify". A victim, such as the witness himself, knows what happened to them.

Background 1 testified that he has not been personally involved with this case. The Finnish police chose independently how to investigate the matter. Nobody from GJRP stayed in contact with Employee 1, who was given to the Finnish police to help. GJRP had conducted its own investigations before the Finnish police became involved. The witness described how they collect evidence relating to war and crimes which is then, depending on the jurisdiction, sent forward to states, who decide what to do with it. According to the witness, GJRP followed this procedure in the Massaquoi case. He had not been personally involved in the investigations that preceded the work of the Finnish police. He explained that he doesn't usually do fieldwork unless he has specific knowledge about something. He had been asked by the police to get into contact with some people who were in prison with him. The day Employee 1 was transferred over to the Finnish police, everyone at GJRP was instructed to not speak to him about anything Massaquoi-related.

The witness testified that he knows that the things Massaquoi did, such as torture, are considered war crimes. He has no knowledge of the charges or the content of witness testimonies in this case besides what he could read in newspapers. He had not read any official documents by the Finnish authorities, such as the police report. Neither Employee 1 nor anyone else from GJRP or Civitas Maxima had told him about the contents of such documents.

The defense questions Background 1

The defense began by asking Background 1 about the people that were detained with him in Klay. He provided some names to the court and explained what he knew about them. They were all there on 26 July 2002, when he was taken to Klay. He testified that he told them what had happened to him the next day, as he returned to the cell.

The defense pointed out that the witness had first testified in the lower court that he did not know who had given the order to electrocute him, but a woman had done it. The witness explained that there had been a general order and he was unaware who had given it. Inside the room, it was clear that Massaquoi was giving orders. The defense pointed out that Background 1 was asked about this many times during his first hearing and he had answered that he could not

tell who gave the order to the woman. He repeated that he knows Massaquoi gave the order to the woman, but in Klay, there was also a general order issued by someone else. Massaquoi was not Liberian, so he could not have done such things without a superior order. The defense also pointed out that Background 1 had testified in his first hearing that Massaquoi could have prevented the woman from electrocuting him and also that the woman was under Massaquoi's command and control, which he confirmed.

The defense further pointed out that Background 1 had testified that Joe Tuah had hit him and had given Massaquoi advice. Background 1 confirmed that Joe Tuah spoke with Mr. Massaquoi, but he did not hear what they were talking about. The defense also pointed out that he had testified that Tuah had ordered Massaquoi to take him to the room to be tortured. Background 1 responded that Massaquoi was taking him to the room when Tuah came to talk to Massaquoi. He could not hear what they were talking about, he could only hear Massaquoi giving orders to the woman inside the room. He did not know who was the superior out of Tuah and Massaquoi. The defense pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that he believes Tuah to be superior to Massaquoi, to which he replied that this was only his belief and he could be mistaken.

Background 1 testified that when he was taken back to his cell after the torture, he told the other prisoners who had tortured him. He did not talk about it right away as he was too scared and in too much pain. He mentioned it the next day to a few people, not everyone. He mentioned that he had been tortured to a couple of 'reliable guys'. The witness explained: "In my culture a different lady does not touch your private and electrocuting on the privates in my culture is abhorrent." He had used both the names Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi when describing the person who tortured him. The witness provided the names of the people who he told about the torture, who have the same ethnic background as him. He stated: "I did not want it to spread. Thus, I told a few confidantes, in my culture it's shameful". This occurred the next day when they were in the dark, underground cell with water in it.

The defense referred to the witness' testimony in the Special Court for Sierra Leone. He had mentioned that he had been electrocuted and that he had been tortured and interrogated by Benjamin Yeaten, Joe Tuah and their SS men. Background 1 replied that this was a different interrogation to the one on 26 July, he had been interrogated over 20 times. He had been electrocuted more than once, at least twice. The torture he was referring to in his testimony to the Special Court was different to the one that occurred on 26 July. Both happened in Klay. He described the other time as 'milder', as if to 'tease' him. Yeaten was there but did not do it himself. When Yeaten was present, the witness was not electrocuted on his genitals. The defense pointed out that according to Background 1's testimony at the Special Court, he was electrocuted on his genitals by Yeaten and his men, which he confirmed. The witness demonstrated to the court how Yeaten and his men gave him electric shocks directed at his genitals but with his trousers still on.

The defense asked why the marks of his torture had to be hidden from Yeaten if he was also involved. The witness clarified that only the signs of the tabay had to be hidden from Yeaten but he did not know why. He had not mentioned Gibril Massaquoi in his hearing in the Special Court, as the lawyer had not asked about it, his lawyer had told him what to focus on. He stated that he had mentioned Gibril Massaquoi's name in the context of the worst torture.

Background 1 testified further that Gibril Massaquoi introduced himself as Gibril Massaquoi, Angel Gabriel. This took place in Klay. The first time he mentioned his name was on the stairs

leading into the building. Inside the building, Massaquoi mentioned his name numerous times, he could not keep count of how many. He gave an example: “When I was crying, he said look at me, you are talking to Angel Gabriel”. The first time, he wanted him to confess to a conspiracy against President Taylor. The witness could not explain why Angel Gabriel introduced himself. He mentioned the name Gibril Massaquoi first. The witness explained that in Islam, God has two arch angels; Michael and Gibril, which is an Arabic name, or Gabriel. He did not know where Gibril Massaquoi had gotten his name from, but the two names represent the same angel in many religions. Massaquoi had said that Gibril means Gabriel, Angel Gabriel.

The defense referred to a passage of the witness’ testimony at Charles Taylor’s trial, which had been submitted into evidence: ‘I also saw someone there, (…) Gibril Massaquoi. He told me, when he tortured me, if I knew what Gibril meant, I said yes, because I understand Arabic. It means Gabriel. He said OK, I am your angel for your Gabriel’. The witness explained that at the time, in 2009, he lived in Boston, USA and travelled to the Hague for Taylor’s trial. GJRP did not exist at the time. It was founded three years later in 2012, when he moved to Liberia. He testified: “It was I who was dehumanized and tortured, it become my conviction to help other people who were also tortured”.

The defense pointed out that he had not used the name Gibril Massaquoi in Taylor’s trial, he had only mentioned that the person was Sierra Leonean and had asked him if he knew what Gibril means. There was lengthy discussion on this point. Background 1 maintained that Massaquoi had introduced himself: “This guy was very proud of his name and what he did. He puts others down and put himself up like an Angel. Gibril Massaquoi would not have hidden his name, never”.

The defense further pointed out that Background 1 had testified at the Special Court that Gibril said that he had been instructed by Joseph Tate to make him talk. The witness responded that Joseph Tate died in a plane crash before June 2002, every journalist in Liberia knew this. He speculated that this might have been about some other interrogation, as he had been arrested so many times. He was certain that Joseph Tate died before 2002.

There was further discussion about what the witness had testified in previous trials regarding the names that Gibril used to introduce himself. The witness then clarified that the police chief at the time was Paul Mulbah, not Joseph Tate.

The defense then pointed out that during an interview conducted by Civitas Maxima in 2018, Background 1 had said that Gibril Massaquoi was the person using the electrocution machine, and that Joe Tuah was also present and used the machine. Background 1 responded that he had already mentioned that there were multiple instances of torture. The interview with Civitas Maxima was very detailed and culturally difficult for him, as the interviewer was a woman. He maintained that he is certain that it was Gibril Massaquoi.

The defense pointed out that the witness had mentioned in the Civitas Maxima interview that he was taken to Klay on 26 July 2002 and that he had been there for at least a week and undergone at least two rounds of torture before Gibril came. Background 1 responded that before Independence Day on 26 July, he had been arrested at Zone Six in Brewersville. There must be a mistake in the CM interview notes, as he was taken to Klay on 26 July and Gibril Massaquoi tortured him on that day. That was the first time he had been tortured in Klay. Before Klay, he had been tortured in many instances in the various prisons he was kept, at least twice, as he was there for more than a month. The witness listed other locations where he had been tortured:

Zone 6, Zone 5 in Congo Town, Red Light, Zone 7. The defense then brought up the fact that Background 1 did not mention the woman in his interview with Civitas Maxima but spoke about her later in his interview with the Finnish police. The witness repeated that it was culturally difficult to discuss this with a woman with whom he worked.

Background 1 testified that he does not know Civilian 20 and knows many people with the same name as Civilian 19. He stated that he believed he had given a report to Civitas Maxima on how Civilian 20 had been contacted for this trial, as they do with every witness. He had not been involved in pre-interviews relating to Gibril Massaquoi. These interviews covered only basic information as to whether the witness has any information about a particular incident or person as well as their contact information. Background 1 did not recognize Civilian 20's name and repeated that he does not conduct these pre-interviews himself. He had not been present in a preliminary interview conducted for Civitas Maxima about Gibril Massaquoi. The witness could not remember when or how he was first in contact with the Finnish police. He had met Thomas and another policeman, to help convince the Liberian government to allow the Finnish court to operate in Liberia, and to allow the Finnish police to investigate in Liberia.

The defense asked about the Finnish police's first trip to Liberia. Background 1 testified that he was not involved in this case, as he is a victim in the case. GJRP worked with with the police on all practical matters. The Finnish police chose for Employee 1 to work with them, they made the decision independently. According to Background 1, when Employee 1 was not working for the Finnish police, he was working at GJRP. Employee 1 did not tell them anything about the case. The witness could not remember if they had an agreement to not talk about anything related to Gibril Massaquoi, but Employee 1 had strict instructions not to work on the case unless asked by the police. The Finnish police told Employee 1 these instructions when he began working for them, but Background 1 did not know the content or nature of the instructions.

The defense asked about another employee at GJRP. Background 1 explained that this employee had not been involved in monitoring the first trial. Due to security concerns, GJRP had hired security guards to secure the area used for the trial and he was their supervisor. Background 1 had not been involved in discussions about how to find [REDACTED]. They are from the same county, but the witness does not know where he lives. He could not remember discussing finding [REDACTED] with the Finnish police.

At the end of his hearing, Background 1 addressed the court, saying: "I want to thank everyone here. This is a great story for Liberia. We have thousands of victims, like me, who don't have this kind of opportunity for justice. I want to thank the police and the judiciary in Finland. God bless you and thank you".

It was pointed out that the witness identified the defendant as Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 22, 2023 – Day 35: A former child soldier testifies

This morning, a former child soldier from Sierra Leone came to testify. He had been captured by rebel groups in Sierra Leone at a young age, fighting first in Sierra Leone and later in Liberia. He described fighting and the mistreatment of civilians across Kolahun and surrounding areas such as Kamatahun, before moving to Monrovia. Once in Monrovia, he described further fighting across the city, including at Waterside.

The witness later described being in Monrovia at the ceasefire which ended the Second Civil War, where fighting factions packed up their weapons to give to the UN. At this point, according to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi had already left Liberia.

There are no hearings scheduled tomorrow Thursday 23, so the Court will reconvene Friday 24, 9am.

March 22, 2023 [Liberia] Day 35: A former child soldier testifies

Witness Soldier 12 is heard

The prosecution questions Soldier 12

The prosecution began by asking about Soldier 12's participation in fighting in Liberia. The witness testified that he was in the government troops, in the Jungle Fire unit. He joined Jungle Fire in 1999 in Voinjama, when he was 18 years old. His commander was Benjamin Yeaten. The witness named some other commanders: Superman, Issa, Salami, Yaney and Sam Bockarie. Before joining Jungle Fire, Soldier 12 was in the RUF. He joined the RUF as a child, he was abducted in Kono. He estimated that he was 12 years old when he was abducted. The witness listed the names of some of the RUF commanders in Sierra Leone: Superman, Sam Bockarie, Issa Sesay, Kumba Gbodema and Gibril Massaquoi.

The witness testified that he came to Liberia when his commanders in Sierra Leone ordered them to come to Liberia to help Charles Taylor. At the time, there was fighting against LURD rebels in Kolahun but not in Voinjama, where Soldier 12 joined Jungle Fire. Other towns where fighting took place included Foya, Masambolahun, Kamatahun, Bolahun, Vahun, Kungbohun and Camp Alpha. The witness had been to all of these locations.

Soldier 12 testified that Gibril Massaquoi was their commander. He met him the first time in Sierra Leone as a little boy. Gibril Massaquoi was the one who abducted him. When the witness moved to Liberia and joined Jungle Fire in 1999, Gibril Massaquoi was among the commanders who also came to Liberia. Massaquoi had been in the towns and villages where the witness had mentioned fighting had taken place. In these towns and villages, Massaquoi used to go to a room and talk with Benjamin Yeaten, Sam Bockarie and Issa. Massaquoi treated civilians badly. The witness testified that he cut the arms off some civilians, killed others, and stole valuables from some others. Massaquoi put some civilians inside a house, locked the door and set the house on fire in Masambolahun. The witness was there and saw it happen. He could not remember how many people were inside the house.

In addition to Lofa county, Soldier 12 was stationed in Bomi Hills, Bopolu, Klay and Bah during the war. He was stationed in Klay between 2002 and 2003, there was fighting there at the time. He was later transferred to Grand Gedeh. When the war ended, Soldier 12 was in Waterside, Monrovia. He moved from Lofa to Monrovia in 2003 with Benjamin Yeaten, Salami, Yaney, Siome, Ranger and Adjutant. The witness saw Gibril Massaquoi in Monrovia in 2002 or 2003. He saw him five or six times in Monrovia at White Flower, President Taylor's house. When he saw Massaquoi at White Flower, he was stationed in Klay but had gone to Monrovia to pick up supplies. Massaquoi was not with him on this mission. He was a commander in Monrovia, and Soldier 12 and others just picked up the supplies and went back.

The witness did not know any other names for Gibril Massaquoi. While he was in Monrovia, there was no fighting going on in the city. Right before the war ended, there were battles in Vai Town, Freeport and Waterside. Soldier 12 was also involved in these battles, on the government's side.

Soldier 12 testified that when he moved from Sierra Leone to Liberia, the war in Sierra Leone had already ended. There was a ceasefire and the UN was present there. When the witness came to Liberia, he was not with Gibril Massaquoi, he came with Sam Bockarie. Massaquoi came to Liberia after them, in the 90s. Massaquoi was not in Kamatahun when Soldier 12 was there, he was in Kolahun at the time. When Soldier 12 was stationed in Klay in 2002 or 2003, he saw Massaquoi come there briefly and continuing his journey as he was not stationed there. Soldier 12 personally saw Massaquoi in Klay when he was stationed there himself.

During the fighting right before the end of the war in Vai Town, Freeport and Waterside, Soldier 12 saw Massaquoi at White Flower. These battles were called World Wars I-III. The witness could not remember the last time he saw Massaquoi in Monrovia. After he had been in Waterside, the UN came and they put their guns down. Massaquoi has already left the country at this point. The witness speculated it was because they were afraid that the soldiers would ask them for their benefits.

The defense questions Soldier 12

The defense began by asking for the witness' current age. The witness testified that he is 23 years old. The defense pointed out that Soldier 12 had told the Finnish police in his interview that when the ceasefire took place in Sierra Leone in 2000, he moved with Sam Bockarie, Superman, Gibril Massaquoi and their boss Issa Sesay to Liberia to help Charles Taylor. Soldier 12 confirmed this, explaining that they came to Liberia the same way, but not at the same time as they arrived within a week from each other. He testified that Sam Bockarie came to Liberia because Charles Taylor had asked him to come and help him, that's why they all came. When they came to Liberia, they first stayed in Kolahun for 2 to 3 years. Gibril Massaquoi was not based there, he travelled back and forth between Sierra Leone and Liberia because he was high-ranking. From Kolahun, Soldier 12 and his troops went to Voinjama, where they stayed for a year. Massaquoi used to be there with them, but he was travelling back and forth and he was not stationed in Voinjama. The witness confirmed that he stayed in Vahun for a year and three months and often saw Massaquoi there.

The defense pointed out that Soldier 12 had testified in the lower court that they had initially arrived in Vahun and stayed there for over three years. Soldier 12 confirmed that they had gone to Vahun first after arriving in Liberia. He and his commander stayed in Vahun for a year and three months, but it was their assigned station for three years. The defense further pointed out

that Soldier 12 had just mentioned staying in Kolahun for 2 or 3 years, while in the lower court he had testified that they had been in Kolahun for 2 or 7 months. The witness explained that they were not stationed in Kolahun at the time, they were going back and forth between Kolahun and Kungbohun. They were stationed in Vahun and they would patrol between three towns, Vahun, Kolahun and Kungbohun. Whenever they went to Vahun, they would see Massaquoi there.

The witness described how they continued from Voinjama to Masambolahun, then to Kamatahun. He could not estimate how long he had stayed in Masambolahun and Kamatahun. They were patrolling at the front line and did not return to Vahun for a while. The witness then confirmed the numerous villages that he had told the Finnish police that he had gone to patrol. He confirmed that after seven months in Kolahun, the RUF moved to Vahun for about a year. From there, they were moved to Monrovia to fight. Soldier 12 confirmed that he had returned to Vahun from Kolahun and was in Vahun for a year. From there, they were moved to Monrovia. They were in Kamatahun during the dry season.

Soldier 12 estimated that he stayed in Waterside for about a month. The Jungle Fire unit didn't have a uniform. They wore jeans and a t-shirt with the words 'Jungle Fire – Man moving, man dropping' printed on it. The shirts did not have a particular color, some were grey, red or blue. Sam Bockarie was with them in Liberia, but he left to fight in the Ivory Coast. Soldier 12 did not know how Sam Bockarie died. He died in 2003. Soldier 12 was in Nimba with his troop while Sam Bockarie was away in the Ivory Coast. They received word that Charles Taylor had ordered Benjamin Yeaten to kill Sam Bockarie, because Taylor was afraid that Bockarie was going to kill him. Soldier 12 was in Ganta when he found out that Yeaten had killed Bockarie. After receiving the news and after the war had ended, Soldier 12 and others went to Kambea. This was in 2004. They left because they thought people would come after them. The witness went to Kambea to look for work.

The witness explained how the Finnish police had gotten in contact with him. One of his brothers took him to an older brother called Employee 1. Employee 1 told him that someone in the country was looking for RUF fighters from Sierra Leone to talk about their experiences and so Soldier 12 went. His brother gave him directions on how to get to the place. Employee 1 told him that there are white people who wanted to talk to former Sierra Leonean fighters. He told him to go to them to find out what they wanted. The brother who told him about Employee 1 worked on the side of the road, and the witness provided his name to the court. The witness knew [REDACTED], but he was not involved in getting him to testify. The defense pointed out that Soldier 12 had testified in the lower court that his brother who had helped him was called [REDACTED], which he denied.

The defense further pointed out that Soldier 12 had testified in the lower court that he had not spent three years with Gibril Massaquoi in Vahun, as he sometimes went to the frontline while Gibril Massaquoi remained in town because he was a commander. When Soldier 12 would return from the frontline, Gibril Massaquoi was always in town. Soldier 12 confirmed this.

It was pointed out that the witness identified someone other than the defendant as Massaquoi from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 27, 2023 – Day 37: Schedules rearranged

Over the weekend, the Court had to rearrange the schedule of the witness hearings as a number of witnesses had been dropped by both the prosecution and the defense.

Today Monday 27, the Court heard the recording of a testimony that one of the witnesses had previously given at the District Court. Appeals Court hearings will continue tomorrow, Tuesday 28.

March 27, 2023 [Liberia] Day 37: Schedules rearranged

The recording of witness Defence 23 is viewed

The court first watched a video recording of the testimony of witness Defence 23 before the lower court.

The rest of the hearing was cancelled, as the scheduled witnesses could not be reached.

March 28, 2023 – Day 38: Witness allegedly approached for testimony

On Tuesday 27, the Appeals Court heard one witness testify. He testified that he had been approached by Hassan Bility, who had allegedly offered him money and asylum in Europe to provide false testimonies in the cases of different Liberian nationals before foreign courts. The witness testified to having no connection to Gibril Massaquoi and stated he had not participated in the Second Liberian Civil War.

For the second part of the day, the Court watched the tape of a hearing that a witness had given before the District Court.

March 28, 2023 [Liberia] Day 38: Witness allegedly approached for testimony

Witness L1 is heard

The defense questions L1

The defense began questioning L1, a defense witness, by asking if he could recall why he had been asked to testify. The witness responded that it was because of Background 1, whom he knows well. They had gotten to know each other a long time ago, on Jamaica Road in 1991 or 1992. They grew up in the same community, and Background 1 was the reason he joined ULIMO. When Alhaji came, people were encouraged to become fighters to 'liberate the Muslims'. According to L1, Background 1 was the secretary of Alhaji, the rebel leader of ULIMO. This took place in 1992 when ULIMO was at Poe River.

After the 1990s, the witness had been in contact with Background 1 when he was arrested in District Five by Taylor. Background 1 told him that he had been arrested because he had been recruiting people to kill Taylor. He told L1 to go into hiding. The witness could not remember the exact date of this meeting, but estimated that it took place in 1998 or 1999, when Taylor arrested Background 1. At the time, Charles Taylor was already the President of Liberia.

After this arrest, L1 described meeting Background 1 after he came back from the USA, 3 to 5 years ago. Background 1 had arranged the meeting and picked him up from Nepsor. He wanted the witness to testify against people who had fought in the war. Background 1 said many things, such as Gibril Massaquoi being indicted, and things about Jungle Jabbah and Alieu Kosiah. Background 1 gave him 200 dollars and told him that if he testified against Gibril Massaquoi, that he gutted someone in Foya, he would give him 20 000 dollars and asylum somewhere abroad, but not the USA. According to L1, Background 1 was trying to recruit multiple people to testify this way, some of them have already 'died of frustration'.

The witness testified that he and Background 1 went to Mamba Point Hotel for this meeting. At the time, he had not heard any news about Gibril Massaquoi or his arrest, he only knew of Jungle Jabbah. He declined Background 1's offer but kept the 200 dollars he had given him, and Background 1 left him on Carey Street. L1 testified that he had not heard of Gibril Massaquoi at the time, he heard the name for the first time from Background 1. Background 1 did not show him any photographs. According to L1, he had also asked [REDACTED] to testify against Jungle Jabbah, but he had died from 'frustration'. This made the witness scared of Background 1's proposition.

L1 explained that he met Background 1 several times after this meeting. Once at General Langasah's funeral about two years ago, and again at Sekou House on Duport Road, where Background 1 was talking to another general. Background 1 had told the general that [REDACTED] should leave where he was living in London. At the funeral, Background 1 had exclaimed that L1 did not seem to want money as he had declined his offer. The witness had discussed the proposition with a few friends, such as L2 and L3.

The defense showed L1 some photographs from the pre-trial investigation police report, but he did not recognize them.

The witness testified that he had heard about Background 1's other attempts of recruiting witnesses from the people that he had approached, they would discuss between themselves. He used to meet with these people at the veterans' office.

Finally, L1 described his previous interviews with the Finnish police. According to him, the police got his contact information through Peter Solo. Dr. Alan White called him, and then a woman from Finland called, telling him that the police would come and meet him. According to L1, Dr Alan White knew to call him through Peter Solo. Alan White also sent him some messages on WhatsApp, which he had shown to the Finnish police. Alan White had been the prosecutor in the Taylor case, L1 did not know him personally beforehand but had heard of him on the BBC. Alan White asked him whether he knew much about Background 1, which he had confirmed. Alan White then said that Gibril Massaquoi's lawyer would call him. Massaquoi's lawyer called him and told him that the Finnish police would call him.

The prosecution questions L1

The prosecution began by asking about L1's role in ULIMO. The witness testified that he was a fighter in ULIMO during the 'ULIMO war' in Liberia. He began fighting in 1992. He was not fighting when Taylor was president. During the first war, they were fighting against Taylor. L1 did not see the RUF during the war. He had lived in Lofa between 1994 and 1997 in Voinjama, Zorzor, Salayea, and Foya. In 1994, he went to Gbarnga and in 1997, he left Lofa and came to Monrovia.

Background 1 had told the witness that he was a journalist and had studied at the University of Liberia. Background 1 welcomed Kromah at one point, L1 had photographs. When asked what he believes Background 1 does for a living, the witness responded that 'he blames people for what happened during the war', but stated that he did not know the details of his work. He explained that Background 1 had taken people to the United States to testify against Jungle Jabbah and promised them money, but had not paid these people, which frustrated them. According to L1, Background 1's job does not relate to searching for witnesses as he is just compiling lies. L1 stated: 'The best people to prosecute he knows them. He was Secretary to one of them'. According to L1, Background 1 knows that he only fought in ULIMO, and only during Liberia's first civil war.

L1 had also fought in Monrovia, in Octopus and during the 6 April war in 1996. He knows Jungle Jabbah aka Mohammed Jabatteh very well, as he used to be his commander. Jungle Jabbah was a high ranking ULIMO official, he was a deputy to Dumboya, the commander-in-chief. Jungle Jabbah was a ULIMO commander in charge of Popolu during the first Liberian civil war. Jabbah used to beat soldiers who harassed civilians. He was a world-famous rebel who knew the Quran. For example, if someone was captured, they should not be killed. Background 1 knew that L1

knew Jungle Jabbah personally as he was there with them. He had also asked L1 to testify against Jungle Jabbah, during the meeting where he gave him 200 dollars. He wanted him to go to the United States to testify, but L1 told him that he did not want travel to the US as he didn't want to go to jail for fighting in the war. When the prosecutor pointed out that the Jungle Jabbah case took place in 2017, the witness explained that Background 1 told him that Jungle Jabbah would be appealing his judgment. He added: 'The man is just enriching himself through people. He has an estate in Brewersville'.

L1 testified further that he knows Alieu Kosiah. Kosiah is his boss. He was L1's commander in ULIMO at Tody. L1 and Background 1 also discussed Alieu Kosiah when they spoke about Jungle Jabbah. Background 1 asked him to falsely testify against Kosiah. He wanted him to testify that Kosiah fought in Lofa despite him never fighting there. L1 could not fully understand what Background 1 asked him to do because of his deep voice. The witness testified: 'If the people can really go in the community and ask people one at a time there is not one of them that can trust Background 1. If I had the money, I could sue him because he made me go and fight a war'.

The testimony Background 1 asked him to give about Jungle Jabbah was that he killed people and made people open the stomachs of pregnant women. This was the same story to he was supposed to tell about Gibril Massaquoi. The witness understood Background 1 when he spoke Mandingo, he only had issues when he spoke English. Background 1 asked him to testify that Alieu Kosiah and Jungle Jabbah fought in Lofa. Background 1 brought up Gibril Massaquoi during their meeting at Mamba Point. He asked L1 to testify that Massaquoi killed people, committed mass murders and opened the stomachs of pregnant women in Lofa. He wanted him to say that the RUF attacked Foya, which the witness did not believe to be true.

Background 1 had asked many people to provide fake testimonies in the Massaquoi case. When asked to provide the names of some of these people, the witness stated and repeated: 'I believe civilians standing here and civilians standing there, you will not see civilians hanging around when fighting is going on', and 'I know when the war crimes court comes here, I will be the first to testify. Many people know about this, but they are afraid to come and testify'. After intervention from the Presiding Judge, the witness provided a few names. These people were not witnesses in the Massaquoi case but were involved in the Jungle Jabbah and George Boley cases.

The witness met with Background 1 at Mamba Point from a teashop. He was living in Monrovia at the time and has lived in Monrovia ever since. Background 1 gave L1 the 200 dollars because he wanted him to testify. The 200 dollars were to encourage him to provide a fake testimony. Background 1 told him to go and testify against Gibril Massaquoi and say that he opened people's stomachs in Foya. He had said that the 200 dollars were not a bribe but an encouragement, just a payment for transportation costs.

According to L1, Peter Solo was a high-ranking official in ULIMO and LURD, he was the former commander-in-chief in Grand Jeddeh. He did not know how Peter Solo and Alan White knew each other. The prosecution showed the witness a picture of some WhatsApp messages, which he confirmed were messages between himself and Alan White. In one message, Alan White asks L1 to provide a list of witnesses Background 1 had recruited to testify against Gibril Massaquoi and Agnes Reeves. The witness explained that Dr. White was not aware of the veterans' office L1 used to go to, it was Peter Solo who connected the office and the veterans to Alan White. Agnes Reeves was not discussed at the veterans' office, Peter Solo asked L1 about her. The witness only knew that Agnes Reeves was suing Background 1, and Background 1 had asked him to testify

against her as well. Background 1 had asked him to testify against her in the same meeting at Mamba Point where he asked about everyone else. He wanted him to testify that Agnes Reeves fought against Mandingos and that her husband killed Mandingos. There were numerous other people that Background 1 had asked to provide fake testimonies against Agnes Reeves, the witness gave some of their names to the court.

L1 recalled Alan White sending him links to articles in the WhatsApp messages, which he had sent over to the police. He could not remember what the articles said. He stated that he had not been in contact with Alan White in the last year, as he had been living in the bush. The witness had not read the articles that Alan White had sent him and nobody had told him about their contents. He could tell they were about Background 1, because he had opened the links, had seen Background 1's picture and could spell his name.

The witness did not know when Jungle Jabbah's appeal was rejected in the United States. When he had the meeting with Background 1, Jabbah had been sentenced and Background 1 told him that he would attempt to appeal.

The recording of witness Z1 is viewed

Next, the court viewed the video recording of witness Z1's testimony before the lower court.

March 29, 2023 – Day 39: Defense witnesses testify

Today Wednesday 29, the Court heard three witnesses that had been called by the defense.

The first witness was a journalist, who had been staying in Buedu, Sierra Leone. He had come across many people that had fled from different villages in Liberia and were on their way to refugee camps in Sierra Leone. The witness had interviewed some of these people, regarding events such as that which had taken place in Kamatahun Hassala. A copy of this report was submitted as written evidence for the Court to review.

The second witness was a key figure in the RUF external delegation. He had stayed in the same guesthouses in Monrovia as Gibril Massaquoi and the two had worked closely together. This witness maintained that while the defendant had initially been a front-line commander, during the peace process he had taken on a diplomatic role.

The final witness was a soldier for the Liberian forces. He testified to meeting Gibril Massaquoi first in Foya, and then in Monrovia. He described coming across a number of dead bodies next to a bridge in Waterside, Monrovia. When he asked Massaquoi what had happened, Massaquoi allegedly responded that they had been looting.

The Court will hear two more witnesses tomorrow Thursday 30.

March 29, 2023 [Liberia] Day 39: Defense witnesses testify

Witness L5 is heard

The defense questions L5

The defense began the hearing by presenting a report that witness L5 had drafted and sent to the United Nations. The defense then asked about the witness' background. The witness testified that he was born in Masambolahun, Lofa. He moved to Monrovia in 1968. The witness confirmed that he had drafted the document handed to him by the defense. It was titled 'COHPACKOD' and was drafted when the witness went from Monrovia to Sierra Leone. The witness explained that at the time, the Minister of Defense was accusing the people of Kolahun district of being rebel sympathizers. L5 wrote an article in the Inquirer newspapering debunking these accusations and as a result, the Ministry of Defense ordered his arrest. L5 then had to flee to Sierra Leone. As he got to Sierra Leone, he observed what was happening at the border between Sierra Leone and Liberia. He could not remember exactly when he went to the border, it happened a long time ago. At the time, war was ongoing in Liberia.

The witness testified that he went to Buedu, a border town between Sierra Leone and Liberia. He saw refugees coming from Liberia and going to Sierra Leone and he gathered information from them. He would meet people coming over the border and discuss their experiences with them. L5 estimated that he spent about two weeks in Buedu and then went to Kenema. He could not remember the year, but estimated that this took place in the 1990s, as the crisis was coming towards them. Charles Taylor was the president of Liberia at the time. After he gathered information, L5 went to Kenema to put it all together. It took him about two weeks to complete the report. He confirmed that he had dated the report 21 May 2002 and had sent it to Kofi

Annan, the Secretary-General of the United Nations. He explained that he gathered the information at the border and drafted the letter to Kofi Annan right afterwards, he had a meeting with Amnesty International in Kenema. He estimated that he had gathered the information earlier in May. The defense showed a section of the document which was dated "March-April 2002". The witness explained that the interviews were conducted within this time period and the document was drafted in May.

L5 estimated that he met many people, approximately 20. These people had come in contact with the rebels, especially in Kamatahun, where a massacre had occurred, and were coming straight from Kamatahun to Sierra Leone. Some of them were from other villages, and were taken to Kamatahun, put inside a building, and burned alive. Some of the people he spoke with were there to witness the burning of people in Kamatahun, such as [REDACTED], who was there when his relatives were burned. The witness estimated that in total, he met about 15 people who witnessed houses being burned. According to L5, people were taken from Kailahun, Yamatahun, and Kiantahun, and brought to Kamatahun. He explained that people were 'free to talk', about their experiences, as they had managed to flee from Liberia and were already in Sierra Leone.

The witness confirmed the 'Kamatahun, Hassala clan' mentioned in the document. The leader of the rebels was stationed in Kamatahun. According to him, this was the location where most of the things done by Zigzag Marzah took place. People told him that Zigzag Marzah was the person responsible for burning the people. They said that he captured people, put them inside a house and set the house on fire. Zigzag Marzah was an NPFL commander. L5 had also heard the name Pepper and Salt, but he was not in Kamatahun. The witness confirmed that he had interviewed some people that he knew beforehand.

L5 could not remember how many people were burned in Kamatahun. The people he interviewed only mentioned the NPFL, he could not remember if they mentioned RUF or LURD. He testified that the 28 names listed in his article were people who came from Kamatahun and other areas, most of the people listed in the article were killed in Kamatahun. Most of these names were given to him by people who had been there to witness the killings. There were also some people who had come to Kamatahun after the burning had taken place. They said that people such as [REDACTED] were there when the people were killed. L5 testified further that Zigzag Marzah was Mosquito's commander, he gave orders to him and others. Mosquito was one of the killers, he killed some people by shooting and some with a cutlass.

The witness confirmed that he spent two weeks at the border conducting interviews. He returned to Liberia after the Accra peace negotiations, estimating that this was in 2003. He had heard the name Stanley, it was mentioned by people coming from Liberia. They told him that Stanley was transporting fighters. L5 had not heard the names Massaquoi, Angel, or Angel Gabriel. He had been to Lofa many times after returning to Liberia after the war. People had spoken a lot about the war, including the commanders responsible for atrocities such as Stanley and Zigzag Marzah. L5 had spent time in Masambolahun from 2004.

The prosecution questions L5

The prosecution began by asking about where in Buedu the witness interviewed people. He responded that there was no particular spot in Buedu where he would wait, he was just meeting people on the street. He saw people coming and approached them to talk. He could not remember how many people came from Liberia to Buedu, there were a lot of people. Most of

them passed to other towns and villages, such as Kailahun. There were many refugee camps in the area. L5 would approach a person and ask them for an interview. He would then take the person to a house or building nearby, where they could talk. People were constantly coming over the border, he did not speak with everyone. He took notes and wrote his article based on these interviews.

L5 testified that he had not checked his notes for the names Massaquoi, Angel or Angel Gabriel before appearing in court. He heard the name Gibril Massaquoi from the BBC when the case started. His understanding of the names not being mentioned was based on his own experience and what he learned when he was in contact with people. The witness confirmed that about 15 people told him that they were in Kamatahun to witness people being burned inside a house. Nobody told him how many people in total were in Kamatahun at the time, they only said that there was a big crowd, a lot of people. L5 confirmed that he was told that people were brought to Kamatahun from other villages such as Kiantahun. He did not know how many people lived in Kamatahun at the time.

The witness testified that at the time, he didn't know of the RUF. He didn't remember having learned whether the RUF had been in Lofa at the time. The prosecution pointed out that L5 had testified in the lower court that people had mentioned NPFL and LURD, and although the RUF had not been mentioned, they had been there with the NPFL with their base further away in Foya. L5 responded that he had not met any people in Buedu with contact with the NPFL or RUF. He had heard that the RUF was in Foya at the time, but he did not know any details.

L5 explained how he got in contact with people coming from Liberia. He would ask questions and they would answer. They would tell him what village they were from and tell him what happened. The name Zigzag Marzah was repeated everywhere. He would ask people where they were coming from and the interview would proceed from there. [REDACTED] gave him a detailed description of what happened in Kamatahun, that people were put inside a building and burned. The witness confirmed that his story was recorded accurately. L5 could not remember the first time he went to Masambolahun after returning to Liberia but stated that he had been there several times after the war.

Further questions from the defense

According to L5, the NPFL was fighting ULIMO in Lofa. He repeated that he had not heard the name Massaquoi except in connection with the lawsuit on the BBC. He could not remember how many people were put inside the building in Kamatahun. The defense pointed out that in his article, it is mentioned that of 75 people were killed. The witness estimated that this was what [REDACTED] had said. He could not remember how many people he interviewed in total. The defense pointed out that he had told the Finnish police that he had interviewed about 75 refugees, which he confirmed.

Witness Defense 14 is heard

The defense questions Defense 14

The defense began by asking how witness Defense 14 had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he met Gibril Massaquoi in late 1999 in Segbwema. Massaquoi was introduced to the witness by Foday Sankoh, the leader of the RUF, who told him that Massaquoi

would come to Freetown to work with them. At the time, Massaquoi was on the front in Segbwema as an RUF commander, and Defense 14 was the protocol chief for Foday Sankoh.

Defense 14 moved with Sankoh to Freetown in early 2000 and Massaquoi joined them there. The witness was working at Sankoh's office on Spur Road in Freetown. He handled protocol, and Massaquoi was Sankoh's personal assistant. According to Defense 14, Massaquoi worked directly under Sankoh and relayed instructions from Sankoh to the front. They were working at Spur Road in 2000, before May. He met Gibril Massaquoi every day at the office, they worked from eight o'clock in the morning until five o'clock in the afternoon. They worked there until the attack on Foday Sankoh's residence on 8 May 2000. Sankoh's residence was in the same building with the office.

The witness described how a large crowd gathered outside the office in the morning, they were chanting and shouting slogans. They began throwing stones and tried to cut off the power. Gunshots were also fired at the house. As the gunfire increased, UNAMSIL peacekeepers left the area, despite being responsible for Sankoh's safety. Defense 14 and the others were left alone inside the house. Gibril Massaquoi, some women and Superman were there with Sankoh. They escaped from the back of the house to the bush. According to Defense 14, they were chased and shot at in the bush. They were trying to find their way into Makeni, it took them about two days in the bush to reach there from Freetown. At some point, the group split, and Defense 14 came to Monrovia, while Gibril Massaquoi went to Makeni.

Defense 14 testified that after the Lomé peace agreement the RUF signed a lot of documents to stop the hostilities and continue the peace process. The RUF participated in many meetings in Freetown after Sankoh arrived. The disarmament process was already underway before the attack on 8 May. The witness estimated that regions such as Makeni and Segbwema had been disarmed by then. In 2000, Massaquoi was appointed as member of the RUF external delegation, after the ECOWAS Heads of State meeting. Between the Lomé agreement and the 8 May attack, Massaquoi was an RUF commander and was involved in disarmament. The 8 May attack disrupted the peace process as Foday Sankoh had escaped and was nowhere to be found and many RUF leaders involved in the process were imprisoned. The UN and ECOWAS attempted to get the peace process back on track and the ECOWAS heads of state had a meeting on 26 July 2000 in Monrovia. Defense 14 testified that he met the ECOWAS leaders in Monrovia at the Executive Mansion, a lot of communiqués were signed that day. The witness was told that the ECOWAS leaders wanted the peace process back on track and he was asked to tell them what had happened in Freetown during the 8 May attack and where Sankoh was. The witness named other RUF leaders present at the meeting: Eddie Kanneh, Jonathan Kposowa and Ngulu Baka.

After the meeting, the ECOWAS leaders instructed them to go to Kono to Issa Sesay, who was the RUF battlefield commander at the time and the deputy to Foday Sankoh. The RUF held a meeting in Kono in late 2000. They decided to elect Issa Sesay as the interim leader of the RUF to continue disarmament. Gibril Massaquoi was elected to the external delegation after this meeting in Kono. This delegation consisted of Defense 14, Gibril Massaquoi and Abdul Razack. They were given a mandate to ensure that the ceasefire remain in place and the disarmament process get back on track. The delegation was stationed in Monrovia. They got to Monrovia in 2000 near the end of the dry season. Their task was to agree on details with the ECOWAS heads of state and to communicate with the RUF leaders on the field in Kono and Makeni, which the witness described as a 'diplomatic role'.

The delegation communicated with the RUF in Sierra Leone through a satellite phone. They lived in a guest house in Lower Congo Town and later moved further up Congo Town to another apartment. The witness named the people living in the guest house: himself, Abdul Razak, Gibril Massaquoi and one of Gibril's friends, Defense 13. There were no employees at the guest house. The delegation lived there from 2000 until 2001. After a few months, they moved to another apartment. There were also other people staying in the guest house, such as a woman called [REDACTED], a friend of a radio operator who was also staying there. In the second house, Defense 14 lived with Abdul Razak, Gibril Massaquoi and Defense 13. They stayed there for three to four months.

Defense 14 testified about the trips that the delegation took abroad. Their first trip was to Mali in late 2000, they went to meet the President of Mali. Gibril Massaquoi was the head of the delegation. They travelled from Monrovia to Mali. This was the only trip they took abroad while staying in Monrovia, it lasted for one day. The witness explained that Abuja I was a ceasefire agreement signed in November 2000. Gibril Massaquoi was part of the delegation that went to Abuja. They flew from Monrovia to Abuja and stayed for two days. After that, they had a meeting with the ECOWAS secretariat and the government of Sierra Leone. According to Defense 14, the meeting in Mali resulted in the Abuja I agreement. Massaquoi took part in both trips. While Massaquoi was the head of the delegation in Mali, the head of the delegation in Abuja was Jonathan Kposowa.

The delegation met with Charles Taylor while staying in Monrovia. Defense 14 testified that they met him twice. The first trip the delegation took to Sierra Leone after coming to Monrovia was after the meeting with the ECOWAS heads of state on 26 July 2000. The witness had never travelled to Sierra Leone from Monrovia with Massaquoi and did not know if Massaquoi had ever done so. While they were staying in Monrovia, they met every day as they lived in the same house, their rooms were opposite each other and they ate breakfast and dinner together.

Defense 14 knew of Defense 09, he was an RUF fighter. Defense 09 used to live in the first guest house, but he had no specific tasks, he used to come and go. The witness did not see Defense 09 a lot in Monrovia, estimating that he saw him once a week. He was not aware of Defense 09 travelling with Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 09 did not visit the second guest house.

According to the witness, Defense 13 was a friend of Massaquoi, describing her as a 'personal friend'. He was aware that she had gotten pregnant at some point but could not estimate when: 'I was not concerned about that, it was their privacy, I did not pay attention. I have my own privacy'.

The witness testified that after Abuja I, the external delegation, including Massaquoi, travelled to Sierra Leone. They stayed in Freetown until Abuja II in May 2001. He explained that they were in Freetown because most of the results were to be implemented there, not in Monrovia. He did not know if Massaquoi went to Monrovia during this time they were staying in Freetown. Defense 14 explained that Benjamin Yeaten worked for Charles Taylor, he was in the President's Special Service and was in charge of intelligence. The witness testified that neither he, nor the external delegation, met Benjamin Yeaten in Monrovia. He was not aware of Defense 09 meeting with Yeaten either. He was not aware of Massaquoi ever travelling with Benjamin Yeaten to Lofa.

Defense 14 explained that the delegation did not stay in Monrovia after moving out of the second guest house. They returned to Sierra Leone by land. They drove on pickups through Voinjama and

onwards to Sierra Leone. At the time, there was no fighting in Voinjama or Lofa. There had been some fighting before in Voinjama, but the witness was not aware of any fighting occurring after they had travelled back to Sierra Leone. The witness settled in Patton Street in Freetown and Massaquoi lived in Thunder Hills, in Kissi. This was in 2001. Peace had been declared in Sierra Leone and disarmament was underway. Defense 14 met Massaquoi while he was living in Kissi, Massaquoi was living with his family. He also met Defense 13 twice in Freetown in 2002. He was not aware whether Defense 13 and Massaquoi were in contact at the time.

After the signing of Abuja I, Defense 14 worked on the disarmament process in Sierra Leone. The RUF participated in tripartite meetings with the UN, ECOWAS and Sierra Leonean government. These meetings were held monthly in Freetown, and Massaquoi participated in all of them. The RUF was completely disarmed by late 2003, after peace had been declared in Sierra Leone. According to Defense 14, Massaquoi lived exclusively in Freetown after the delegation returned from Monrovia. At some point, he was evacuated by the UN and taken to a safe house. After the peace negotiations had been completed by late 2002, both Defense 14 and Gibril Massaquoi were in Freetown. Gibril Massaquoi was in Freetown and had been taken to a safe house. After the end of the war, the RUF became a political party, the RUFP. Defense 14 and Gibril Massaquoi both participated in the foundation of this party, Massaquoi was the spokesman for the party. The witness was not aware of Massaquoi doing anything else at the time.

According to Defense 14, Gibril Massaquoi had the code name ‘Wild Fire’ that was used during the war in Sierra Leone. He also had the nickname ‘Gibo’ or ‘Giro’. The witness knew Sam Bockarie, he had met him in Liberia. Sam Bockarie was dismissed from the RUF in 2000, before the 8 May attack. The witness recalled that Bockarie had a bitter quarrel with the leader Foday Sankoh. Sankoh said that Bockarie was not following his orders and he fired Bockarie from the RUF. Bockarie was to be arrested, so fled to Monrovia. He had some troops with him, but the witness could not tell how many men he commanded in total. Gibril Massaquoi did not come to Liberia with Sam Bockarie.

The prosecution questions Defense 14

The prosecution began by asking about Gibril Massaquoi’s role as an RUF commander in late 1999. Defense 14 testified that Massaquoi was a battalion commander and he had his own troops under his command. He carried a weapon, as commanders do. When they were working together at Sankoh’s office in Freetown, Massaquoi relayed orders to the front, the areas under RUF control. Massaquoi used a radio to relay these orders from the office. Massaquoi did not have a satellite phone at the time. He would sometimes use Sankoh’s satellite phone, if the radio was not working.

Defense 14 testified that the delegation was stationed in Monrovia to engage with external and international actors, such as the ECOWAS heads of state. Charles Taylor was requested by the UN to mediate peace in Sierra Leone. According to the witness, ECOWAS decided to place the RUF delegation in Monrovia and they gave the delegation its mandate. He estimated that this decision was the consensus of the five ECOWAS heads of state, including Taylor. The delegation had to work with ECOWAS to bring the peace process back on track was because the 8 May attack had derailed it. The RUF did not respond militarily, or in any other way, to the attack, and they were not discouraged from continuing disarmament as the process was already underway. The witness explained that the attack on Sankoh’s house derailed the peace process because the RUF leader was nowhere to be found. Without a leader, things didn’t move forward. According to Defense

14, the attack occurred because the RUF had been fighting with some UN peacekeepers before and had arrested some of them. He stated that both the RUF attacking the peacekeepers and the attack on 8 May contributed to the peace process being threatened. He could not say how many peacekeepers were captured by the RUF, but agreed that there could have been hundreds of them. He could not say what happened to the peacekeepers.

The witness confirmed that he came to Monrovia after the 8 May attack, while Gibril Massaquoi went to Makeni. The rest of the delegation came to Monrovia after the meeting with the ECOWAS heads of state on 26 July 2000. The witness and Gibril Massaquoi returned to Sierra Leone together in 2001. He could not remember exactly when, but it was in early 2001. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that they had left Monrovia in early 2001 but then, after reviewing his statement to the Finnish police, had said that they left in late 2001 or early 2002. The witness responded that they left in 2001 before Abuja II, as they were in Freetown before Abuja II. Gibril Massaquoi had not told him that he would have been in Monrovia in summer 2001. Defense 14 testified that when they both left Monrovia, there was no fighting going on in Liberia. They went to Sierra Leone by land through Voinjama, Lofa. When they came to Monrovia in 2000, there was no fighting there. There were a few skirmishes in the countryside, in Lofa county. LURD had attacked government troops and were being pushed back and forth. The witness was not aware of the RUF participating in these skirmishes. He was not aware of the RUF fighting or being militarily active in Liberia.

Defense 14 testified that he had heard the name Ibrahim Bah. He was not aware of Ibrahim Bah being in Monrovia at the same time as the RUF external delegation. The witness met with Charles Taylor twice while, and the whole delegation was present. They discussed the travel arrangements to Mali and Abuja, as Charles Taylor was organizing the trips. He was not aware of any RUF representatives discussing diamonds, weapons, or ammunition with Charles Taylor. He repeated that he spent every day with Gibril Massaquoi when they were staying in Monrovia. Charles Taylor had given them the satellite phone to communicate with the RUF in Sierra Leone. Everyone in the delegation used the satellite phone. Defense 14 never saw any weapons in the guest houses they were staying in. He was not aware of any actual or former RUF members ever participating in a war in Liberia.

Further questions from the defense

Defense 14 was not aware of Sam Bockarie and his troops being involved in the skirmishes against LURD in 2000. The RUF external delegation prepared for the Abuja I meeting beforehand, and had a day before the meeting in Nigeria. They were communicating with their interim leader, Issa Sesay, before the meeting. The witness did not participate in the Abuja II meeting, but Gibril Massaquoi was there. He estimated that Massaquoi spent two or three days there. The witness explained that Massaquoi was a commander and had troops under his command ‘in the beginning’, in Makeni. When they came back from the Abuja I meeting, Gibril was a diplomat and no longer involved in fighting. Massaquoi was in Makeni after the 8 May attack in 2000. He also lived in Makeni at some point on Azzolini Road. He then moved to Freetown, to Thunder Hill, Kissi. The witness confirmed that the RUF was completely disarmed by early 2003.

Witness Soldier 15 is heard

The defense questions Soldier 15

The defense began by asking about Soldier 15's background. The witness testified that he currently lives in Liberia and has never lived outside the country. He participated in the Second Liberian Civil War with government troops. At the time, it was 1998 and Charles Taylor was president. The war was being fought in Lofa, Bomi and Monrovia. In Lofa, the witness fought in Kolahun, Voinjama and Zorzor. Benjamin Yeaten was the chief of general staff, the overall commander of the government forces. Soldier 15 himself was a commander. They would change locations, sometimes spending a month or two fighting and then returning to Monrovia. In addition to Benjamin Yeaten, also known as Fifty, there were other commanders in Lofa such as Sam Bockarie, and other guys from Sierra Leone. Sam Bockarie came in 1999. He had many troops under his command, such as Mohamed Massaquoi, Gibril Massaquoi, Superman and a minister called Martin, who died on Bomi Road. According to Soldier 15, these people came with Sam Bockarie to Liberia. They pulled out from Koindu in Sierra Leone and came to Foya. Then, they all went to Monrovia.

Mohamed Massaquoi was one of Sam Bockarie's fighters. He was a battalion commander, he died in Foya. The witness recalled that he died in 1999 or 2000, but he could not remember the month. Soldier 15 was not part of the RUF, he fought in the AFL. Mohamed Massaquoi fought in Koindu, Buedu and Freetown in Sierra Leone and then came to Liberia, where he fought in Foya, Kolahun and Voinjama. Soldier 15 knew of Mohamed Massaquoi's activities because they were in the same area and used to sit and talk together about the past and what was happening at the front. He explained that Mohamed Massaquoi never mistreated civilians in front of him, he had civilians who cooked in his house and he fed them. According to Soldier 15, Mohamed Massaquoi was in Lofa from 1999 until 2000, when he died. He was shot on the frontline in Foya, in a Kissi town called Kpendu. Mohamed Massaquoi had RUF fighters under his command, he was part of the RUF fighters that came with Sam Bockarie to Liberia. Mohamed Massaquoi spoke Mende and Krio. Mohamed Massaquoi had an assistant whose fighter name was Action.

The prosecution questions Soldier 15

The prosecution began by asking about Soldier 15's fighting experience in Monrovia. Soldier 15 testified that he fought in Monrovia. It was not Mohamed Massaquoi who came to Monrovia with him – he died in the bush – but Gibril Massaquoi and Action. Gibril Massaquoi fought in Dwala, Freeport and Waterside Bridge with Fifty. Soldier 15 was with Gibril Massaquoi at these locations, their units fought together. Gibril Massaquoi spoke Krio. The witness got to know his first name because they used to sit and talk together. They were together from 1999 to 2003. The first time Soldier 15 spent close time with Gibril Massaquoi was at Twelve Houses, ELWA Junction. Bockarie was introducing people and Gibril Massaquoi was introduced to him.

Next, Soldier 15 testified about an incident in Waterside. He described how civilians broke into a store by the first bridge coming from West Point. Gibril Massaquoi and the Sierra Leoneans had a base at the junction. As the civilians were breaking into the store, the witness saw four to six bodies. They asked who had killed the people and were told that Gibril Massaquoi and his men had done it. They then complained to Fifty. The witness confirmed that he saw the bodies himself. The bodies were outside the store. Gibril Massaquoi also killed two other people towards Water Street. Soldier 15 asked about the bodies from the civilians near the store who told them that the Sierra Leoneans and Massaquoi had killed the people. This was the same day that Salami was killed on the bridge. Soldier 15 saw Gibril Massaquoi nearby around the time he had seen the bodies. When he saw the bodies and was talking with the civilians about the incident, Gibril Massaquoi was between the junction and Old Bridge, near West Point. The

witness asked Gibril Massaquoi why the civilians had been killed and he responded that they were looting. According to Soldier 15, Gibril Massaquoi's base was by the Old Bridge.

The witness testified that the store was located in Waterside, it was the first store after the market building. When coming from Vai Town over the bridge, it was on the right. The discussion between Soldier 15 and Gibril Massaquoi about the civilians took place after he saw the bodies by the store. The witness also clarified that he did not mean that Gibril Massaquoi had killed two people on Water Street, but that he had seen two bodies there and Gibril Massaquoi was in control of that area. He testified that he saw the bodies next to 99 Steps and estimated that they were civilians, not soldiers. According to him, Gibril Massaquoi was responsible for their deaths as he was the commander in charge of the soldiers in that area. The Sierra Leoneans, the RUF, had been assigned there. The witness had asked civilians, and they said that Gibril Massaquoi had killed them. He also confronted Massaquoi about it, who said that the civilians were looting.

When Soldier 15 saw the bodies in Waterside, the government troops were fighting against LURD. The war in Monrovia was called World Wars I-III, anytime the LURD forces would enter the city, it was called a World War. These killings took place during World War III. LURD was on the other side of the bridge in Vai Town at the time. The witness estimated that after he discovered the bodies, the war did not last even a week before the UN arrived.

Further questions from the defense

According to Soldier 15, World Wars I-III took place in 2003. The defense pointed out that Soldier 15 had testified in the lower court that he had seen Gibril Massaquoi in Monrovia in 2001, while he testified now that he only saw Massaquoi in 2003 in Monrovia. Soldier 15 responded that he saw Gibril Massaquoi in Foya from 1999 to 2001 and did not see him after 2001 until 2003 when he saw him in Monrovia. The witness confirmed that he had heard of High Command, he used to serve under Fifty and was assigned to the Sierra Leonean group. He was also in Waterside; he is Sierra Leonean and a member of the RUF. The witness confirmed what he had told the Finnish police, that Mohamed Massaquoi died in Foya in September 2001 while fighting against LURD.

It was pointed out that the witness did not identify anyone from the series of photographs presented to him at his police interview.

March 30, 2023 – Day 40: Witnesses submit evidence

On Thursday 30 March, the Court heard two defense witnesses.

The first witness had been working with the Special Security Service with Benjamin Yeaten in Monrovia. The witness stated that he had been arrested for allegedly conspiring against the President and was taken to Klay where he was interrogated and tortured. He testified to having been tortured only by Liberians soldiers and had not seen Gibril Massaquoi during the period of his detention. This witness had made written notes about his arrest, detention and torture and his notebook was submitted to the Court.

The second witness had been captured as a child and forced to join a rebel group. He testified to travelling from Sierra Leone to Liberia and staying at a safehouse in Monrovia with the rebels. One day when the rebels were fleeing the house, the witness came across some photos placing Gibril Massaquoi and other key commanders in Kamatahun, which he had kept. Later, once the witness had heard about the Gibril Massaquoi trial on the news, he submitted the photos to the Finnish police.

The Court will hear two more witnesses tomorrow, Friday 31.

March 30, 2023 [Liberia] Day 40: Witnesses submit evidence

Witness H1 is heard

The defense questions H1

The defense began by asking about H1's experience of the Second Liberian Civil War. H1 testified that he served at the SSS, the Special Security Service. His commander was Magical Day-Day, aka Peter Paye. H1 served in the Advanced Reconnaissance team under President Charles Taylor. He served between 1998 and 2000 and continued to work in the team after the end of the Second Civil War until 2008.

The witness testified that he was arrested in 2002 due to allegations that he was collaborating with dissident groups and LURD rebels. He was arrested on 14 July 2002. Around 10 pm, he was taken to the Military Police headquarters and by around 1.30 am that night, he was taken to Benjamin Yeaten's base on Back Road in Congo Town. Another person, [REDACTED], who was also a member of the SSS, was arrested alongside him. They spent approximately an hour at Back Road and were then driven to Klay by Benjamin Yeaten and his bodyguards. The witness then named some of the bodyguards: Joe Tuah, the Deputy Director of the SSS, and Lieutenant Jallah, who was accompanied by his army of about 30 men. They arrived in Klay around 2.30 am. They were taken out of the car and placed in a pit. The next morning, they were brought out to face Benjamin Yeaten, who asked them questions. Yeaten saw them eating and took their food away and asked the guard angrily why he had given them food. Around 8 or 9 pm, Yeaten's men brought in six or seven other prisoners. H1 named Background 1 and other others. [REDACTED] was brought to Klay before the other group. Background 1 and the others were brought two days after the arrival of [REDACTED] on 17 July 2002.

H1 described that the pit they were kept in was located at Klay junction, at an old rubber processing station. He drew a picture of the area and showed it to the court. All the prisoners were put in one cell. They were occasionally taken outside to eat. The food was not hygienic, it was put inside a bath bucket and the prisoners had to eat out of the bucket. H1 saw Benjamin Yeaten more than two or three times. He was interrogated in Klay, more than four to six times. They were taken out of the pit to be interrogated and then brought back to the pit. The interrogations were done by Joe Tuah and the Special Forces, 7 to 8 people altogether. H1 estimated that the Special Forces were NPFL. The witness gave the names of some of the Special Forces, Sam Selesie, Dopu Menkason. According to H1, NPFL members were Liberian.

The witness testified that he was treated inhumanely during the interrogations. He was tied by tabay and still has marks from where the ropes sank into his skin. H1 described: 'At times they will carry a person outside and we will hear gun sounds and they will say they will do the same thing to you if you don't answer, to instill fear in us'. The witness confirmed that Background 1 had been interrogated in Klay, but Background 1 had not told him about his interrogation. He estimated that Background 1 was interrogated in a similar way to everyone else: they were tabayed and electrocuted during the interrogations. He clarified that he had not been electrocuted himself, but he had heard from the other prisoners that they had been. [REDACTED] had told H1 that his penis had been electrocuted. Background 1 had also told him that he had been electrocuted. Background 1 did not elaborate further. When the prisoners were taken outside together and then taken one by one into a room, Background 1 came back and told them that he had been electrocuted. H1 estimated that Background 1 was brought to Klay on 16 or 17 July 2002, a few days after H1 had been brought there on 14 July.

The prisoners were all taken to different places from Klay. Some were taken to Vahun, some to Foya and other places. H1 was taken to Saclepea, Background 1 was taken to Foya, he was taken away before everyone else. Four or five prisoners were flown out of Klay at the same time on a helicopter. H1 was taken from Klay to the former president's farm a day after Background 1 had left Klay. He was then taken to a police station in Gbarnga and further to Saclepea.

H1 testified that the same people interrogated both him and Background 1 in Klay, explaining that there was a team that had been set up just for interrogations. He estimated that Background 1 was interrogated for the first time on the day after he was brought to Klay on 16 or 17 July. He did not know whether Background 1's penis had been electrocuted more than once, he had only heard him talk about it once when he said that Joe Tuah, Benjamin Yeaten and other guys were giving him electric shocks to the penis. H1 saw Background 1 again in October 2002 in Monrovia, when they were arrested and brought to the National Bureau of Investigation offices on Gurley Street. H1 had not seen Background 1 recently, Background 1 had only called H1 once and wanted to see him, but they did not meet.

The witness had heard of Gibril Massaquoi, he used to be a spokesman for the RUF. H1 has not met Gibril Massaquoi. He testified that he had made notes of his experiences after his release. He has been writing them for five to seven years, when something would come back to him. Some of his notes deal with the events in Klay. The witness showed his notes to the court. He testified that he had begun to write his notes in 2003, around November. H1 confirmed that he had personally written the section in the notes dealing with torture, beating, tabay and electrocution. He confirmed that he had written all the notes contained in the notebook. The witness could not remember exactly when he had written the notes about the torture in Klay, but testified that he had written them between 2003 and 2009 or 2010.

The prosecution questions H1

The prosecution began by asking H1 about the SSS. H1 testified that his commander was Magical Day-Day aka Anthony Paye and Benjamin Yeaten was the highest-ranking commander. He did not have any knowledge of Benjamin Yeaten's co-operation with foreign soldiers or Sierra Leonean soldiers, repeating that the interrogation had only been carried out by Liberians. He confirmed that he had been arrested on 14 July 2002. The prosecution pointed out that he had told the Finnish police that he had been arrested on 19 July 2002. H1's notes were examined, and it was pointed out that he had written down that he had been arrested on 14 July 2002.

H1 explained that he was never interrogated with Background 1. The interrogations were conducted one at a time, with everyone waiting outside while one person was interrogated. He knew every person on the Special Forces interrogation panel, some of them are not alive anymore. H1 could not tell how many times Background 1 was interrogated. He estimated that interrogations took place for six to seven days in total and clarified that they did not take place every day, sometimes they were left in the pit for multiple days in between interrogations.

The witness estimated that Background 1 was taken from Klay in September, while he himself was taken to Saclepea on 3 September. Background 1 had told him one time that he had been electrocuted on the penis by Joe Tuah and Benjamin Yeaten. Background 1 mentioned this outside the interrogation building, not inside the pit. He did not tell this to just H1, he said it to the whole group of prisoners, to warn them.

Further questions from the defense

H1 confirmed that he knew all the interrogators before coming to Klay. There were no women amongst them.

Background 1 called him about a year and a half ago and wanted to meet him. He told him that he would like to see him in town, but never called back.

Witness X9 is heard

The defense questions witness X9

The defense began by asking X9 about his interview with the Finnish police in October 2021. The witness confirmed that he had been interviewed twice. He had been in the same room as the court hearings, with the police, Thomas Elfgren and a woman. The witness had heard from the radio that the Finnish police was in Monrovia, accusing Gibril Massaquoi and seeking the truth about the matter. X9 then contacted [REDACTED], a person that he knew from before and who was working for a human rights organization. He told the witness that people were in Monrovia and gave his phone number to a person in charge of the case. The witness was then asked to come to the interview. The witness was under the impression that [REDACTED] worked with Background 1 at the organization, which had a gap with the people in court. [REDACTED] did not say whether his organization was related to the Massaquoi case. The witness did not know the name of the organization, he just knew it is a human rights organization led by Background 1.

According to X9, the reason for his second interview was that he had mentioned in the first interview that he had photographs to show the Finnish police, so he was asked to come back and

show them. When he came back for the second interview, he brought two photographs with him. The first was of Gibril Massaquoi and the second showed a group of people in it with Gibril Massaquoi standing in front.

The witness testified that he does not have a computer. He does not know how to use a computer or edit photographs. The witness identified the photographs he had brought to the Finnish police, as well as some additional photographs, one of which he hadn't brought. The defense pointed out that the Finnish police had noted that X9 had brought all the photographs included in the document, which he denied.

X9 was asked about the photograph with the group of people, and how he had gotten it. He explained that he was in Sierra Leone during the war, he was abducted on his way to school by rebels, and was recruited as a soldier. They crossed into Liberia through Kailahun and went to Lofa, Kamatahun. He spent most of the time there. The children were not fighting but carried the soldiers' loads and prepared food for them. From Kamatahun they went to Voinjama and then to Monrovia. When they arrived in Monrovia, they went to the YMCA and were divided into the apartments across the street. The witness was assigned to Gibril Massaquoi and brought to Twelve Houses at ELWA Junction, while the rest went with Sam Bockarie, aka Mosquito. One day, X9 and others were left in the apartment by the soldiers, who were escaping from someone. While they were packing up everything in the apartment, he found this photograph. He did not know the people in the photograph, but they were fighters who were in Kamatahun. X9 was not there when this photograph was taken. He could recognize only one person from the photo, the fourth person on the left. X9 gave this person's name to the court. The person on the top right corner of the photo is Gibril Massaquoi. The witness did not notice anything strange about the photo. He estimated that it was 2000, 2001 or 2002 when he found the photo in Monrovia. It was around the time the soldiers left.

The defense asked X9 about two other photographs. He identified the person in one of the photos as Benjamin Yeaten and the person in the other as Gibril Massaquoi. He did not know where these photos were taken. He had also found these photos when he was packing up the house in Monrovia. X9 confirmed that he had not brought one of the photographs to the Finnish police. He had originally brought just one photograph, and Elfgren had asked him if he had any other ones. He had told Elfgren that he had more, and Elfgren had asked him to bring them all. X9 speculated that one of the photographs may have been with the others, but he could not recall bringing it.

The prosecution questions X9

The prosecution began by asking about the organization in which [REDACTED] and Background 1 worked. The witness repeated that he does not know the name of the organization, he only knows that it is a human rights organization led by Background 1. X9 had not received any of the photographs from [REDACTED], Background 1 or any other representative of the organization. He found all the photos from the same house at the same time, when the soldiers left them there. He and the other children left as well, as they thought the army might come for them too. They took everything they wanted from the apartment and left. The witness found the photos in the chief's bedroom, Gibril Massaquoi's bedroom. He kept the photos until the interview with the police, but he did not get them back after the interview.

X9 testified that he contacted [REDACTED] after hearing the news on the radio as he knows that he works at the human rights organization. He asked [REDACTED] if he knows anything about the case. When asked why he wanted to get involved in the trial, he responded: 'I should have my first degree or masters, they took us from school, no more opportunities to go back to school to continue. We lost our parents in the war. If we have the opportunity to prosecute, we can do it.' The witness had not discussed anything related to this testimony with [REDACTED], Background 1 or anyone at the organization. The photographs he had brought to the interview were 'regular photographs'.

Further questions from the defense

The witness repeated that he had heard about the case on the radio and contacted [REDACTED], who helped him get in touch with the police. The people present during the interview were Elfgren and one of his colleagues, a Finnish woman. The defense pointed out that according to the investigation report, [REDACTED] was also present during the interview in case X9 could not understand Liberian English. The witness denied this and said [REDACTED] brought him to the interview and waited outside the room. The defense further pointed out that X9 had been recorded saying to the police that [REDACTED], who belongs to the same community as X9, had called him a few days before the interview and asked him if he speaks the same dialect as Mr Gibril Massaquoi, if he knew anything about Mr Massaquoi and if he could prove it. X9 had responded that he knows something about Mr Massaquoi and he has a photograph of him. [REDACTED] had asked him if he could bring the photos and do something for him, to which X9 had answered that since [REDACTED] is his big brother, he would do so. The witness responded that he had told the police that he had heard about the case on the news and he then called [REDACTED] to ask about it, who then asked X9 if he could come and meet these people. X9 repeated that [REDACTED] had not called him, he had called [REDACTED].

An audio recording of X9's police interview was played in court. The defense asked X9 whether he had heard himself on the recording saying that [REDACTED] had called him. The witness responded that [REDACTED] had called him back, after he had initially called him. He had called to ask about the news and afterwards, [REDACTED] called him and asked if X9 could do something for him. The witness confirmed that Mr Massaquoi speaks Mende.

X9 testified that he had found the picture with the group of soldiers and Massaquoi at the house in Monrovia. X9 knew a village called Mende Gumah, it is in Kailahun, he had travelled through there during the war. He had not found any photos in that village. The defense asked the witness about another photograph that was discussed during the first interview. He responded that he had brought the group photo and another photo that had not been presented to him. The defense pointed out that he had told the Finnish police that he had found the photo of Gibril and the people behind him in Sam Bockarie's house when they all left. He had also told the police that he had been there when the photo was taken, when the soldiers returned from the front. He responded that he had been there when the photograph had been taken and that he had brought it to the Finnish police.

The witness testified that he could now remember bringing the other photograph. He had also found it in the apartment. The defense pointed out that the photo was taken in Sierra Leone in 1999 and can be found online. The witness responded that he didn't know about that, he just found it at the apartment. The defense pointed out that he had just said that he was there when the photo was taken, to which he replied that he found it at the apartment.

X9 testified that he had brought the two remaining photos to the police. He was not aware of the photographs having been manipulated.

Further questions from the prosecution

X9 repeated he had contacted [REDACTED] after hearing about the Massaquoi trial on the radio. After he had called [REDACTED], he had called him back.

Further questions from the defense

X9 had asked [REDACTED] if he knew anything about the Massaquoi trial. [REDACTED] then asked him the same question when he later called him back. The defense pointed out that the witness had told the Finnish police that he had found the photo with the rebels posing in a village called Mende Gumah. X9 testified that Mende Gumah is in Kailahun but he did not find the photo there.

March 31, 2023 – Day 41: Defense witnesses provide context

On Friday 31 March, the Court heard two defense witnesses. Both had been in close contact with Gibril Massaquoi since the 90s, when the defendant was an active member of the RUF in Sierra Leone. They both described his role as the personal assistant to the leader of the RUF, the late Foday Sankoh. Both witnesses gave detailed accounts as to Massaquoi's relations with other key figures within the group.

Both witnesses testified to accompanying Massaquoi on numerous trips between Freetown, Abuja, and Monrovia. The defendant and the witnesses had gone on these trips to meet with state leaders and international organizations to work on the peace process and solidify ceasefire and disarmament.

March 31, 2023 [Liberia] Day 41: Defense witnesses provide context

Witness Defense 12 is heard

The defense questions Defense 12

The defense began by asking how the witness got to know Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 12 responded that Gibril Massaquoi is his biological brother. He testified that Mr Massaquoi was in Lunsar in early 1999. He had been arrested in 1998 by the AFRC and was released when the West Side Soldiers attacked Freetown and freed the prisoners. Massaquoi then escaped with [REDACTED] to the mountains and went to Lunsar via Makeni in early 1999. The witness estimated that Massaquoi was released from prison in mid 1998. In early 1999, he was in Lunsar and Makeni with his friend Dennis Mingo, aka Superman. At the time, Foday Sankoh was in Lomé, Togo and he called Superman as he was trying to reach Issa Sesay. Superman had to leave Makeni because of an assignment he received from Foday Sankoh. Near Makeni, he met with Issa Sesay's troops. Due to a misunderstanding between Superman and Issa Sesay, the two groups began fighting each other. Defense 12 could not say whether Gibril Massaquoi had been involved in the fighting. After Superman returned, he decided to send Gibril Massaquoi to Lomé to meet Foday Sankoh. This was the early phase of the peace process and Foday Sankoh wanted to know what was happening on the ground, as he was in Lomé. This was the first quarter of 1999. The Lomé peace agreement was signed some point after the meeting between Massaquoi and Sankoh.

Defense 12 further testified that when Foday Sankoh returned to Sierra Leone, he asked Gibril Massaquoi to be his personal assistant. Before this, Gibril had been a frontline commander in the RUF, stationed around Makeni and Lunsar. When Sankoh appointed him as his personal assistant, Gibril Massaquoi left all frontline functions and became an administrative person. The witness was a frontline commander in the RUF himself, stationed around Bombohun and Kailahun. He found out about Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts through radio messages. Every command post had a radio receiver and information was passed across different fronts. For example, the witness learned through the radio that Gibril Massaquoi had been appointed a special assistant to Foday Sankoh and that he had been relieved of all frontline responsibilities.

The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi worked as Sankoh's special assistant in Freetown, at Sankoh's residence on Spur Road. He went to Freetown in October 1999. He moved with his family – his wife, Elisabeth Mansaray, and children. Elisabeth moved from Bo to Freetown and

Gibril moved from Lunsar. Defense 12 went into detail about Gibril's work as a special assistant. He was responsible for the RUF's correspondence and for sending all the material related to the peace process. He was in charge of the RUF's documentation and information management. He worked almost every day of the week, especially on weekends and Sundays. At the time, the witness was working for UNAMSIL in Bo County as a ceasefire observer. He travelled regularly to Freetown to give reports and information. On these trips to Freetown, he usually met with Gibril Massaquoi. He estimated that he travelled to Freetown monthly.

Gibril Massaquoi's assignment as a special assistant included travelling. The witness recalled Massaquoi and Sankoh travelling to South Africa once, estimating that this was in early 2000. According to Defense 12, Gibril worked on Spur Road until Sankoh's residence was attacked on 8 May 2000. He was not there on the day of the attack, but he heard from VHF radio that Sankoh's residence had been attacked and RUF members had been killed in the attack. Foday Sankoh had been arrested and some people had escaped to the mountains with the security forces chasing them. The witness named some of the people present at the residence during the attack: Foday Sankoh, Denis Mingo, Gibril Massaquoi, Captain Musa from UNAMSIL and Abdul Swaray. Gibril was among those that escaped to the mountains and the witness heard on the radio that he managed to go to Lunsar via Makeni. The witness described the consequences of the attack: "The peace process did not hold, because the leader was captured, and from that time also there were a lot of disturbances against the peacekeeping forces that were in Sierra Leone". Many UN peacekeepers in Sierra Leone were harassed and their equipment was stolen as it was felt that they were not protecting the RUF. The RUF and UNAMSIL blamed each other for the attack and the international community finally forced the RUF to return to the 7 July agreement that had been signed in Lomé.

After the attack on Sankoh's residence, Foday Sankoh never returned to lead the RUF. Issa Sesay became the leader of the organization soon after Sankoh's capture in a meeting in Kailahun, around mid-2000. The witness testified that Gibril Massaquoi and Issa Sesay did not have the best relationship at the beginning, as Issa had once arrested Gibril in Makeni and he was only released with the help of UN troops. When Foday Sankoh returned to Spur Road after the signing of the Lomé agreement, their relationship improved. When Issa Sesay had been elected as the interim leader of the RUF, he called all RUF senior members and commanders to a meeting in Kono in September 2000, where Gibril Massaquoi was appointed the head of the RUF external delegation. The witness named other members of the delegation: Defense 20, Defense 05, Abdul Razak and Defense 14. The task of the external delegation was to get the peace process back on track. This meant that the delegation needed to meet with ECOWAS leaders and to resign the peace agreement Foday Sankoh had signed, since he had been arrested and was not in charge of the RUF anymore. The delegation left for Monrovia in October 2000 to have a meeting with ECOWAS leaders. The delegation came to Monrovia because it was safe there at the time and they could travel easily from Monrovia to wherever they were needed.

Defense 12 could not tell how long the delegation stayed in Monrovia, but he knew that the delegation had some preliminary talks with ECOWAS before going to Abuja. It was thought that President Charles Taylor thought would be able to influence the RUF into returning to the peace negotiations as he had been accused of supporting them in the past. The witness learned of the delegation's activities in Monrovia through the RUF's radio system. From Monrovia, the delegation went to Nigeria, where the Abuja I agreement was signed on 10 November 2000. The Abuja I agreement was a 30-day ceasefire between the RUF and the Sierra Leonean government. Gibril Massaquoi was the head of the delegation and travelled to Nigeria. Defense 12 could not

tell how long he stayed there. After signing the ceasefire agreement, he returned to Sierra Leone, where he was involved in the tripartite negotiations between the UN peacekeepers, the Sierra Leonean government and the RUF. The witness speculated that the delegation went through Monrovia after the Abuja negotiations on their way to Sierra Leone. He could not remember whether Massaquoi returned to Monrovia after he had participated in the tripartite negotiations.

The witness also testified about his own activities in Liberia between 1999 and 2003. Before the beginning of the disarmament process and the signing of Abuja II in May, rebels attacked the Liberia-Sierra Leone border. Defense 12 and Defense 03 were tasked by Issa Sesay to bring reinforcements to NPFL troops in Liberia. They went through Koindu in Sierra Leone and met the NPFL troops in Mendekoma, Liberia in early 2001. They brought about 70 armed men to reinforce the NPFL. They met the commander in Mendekoma and handed over the troops they had brought. Defense 12 could not remember the name of this NPFL commander. He testified that he did not participate in combat in Mendekoma or elsewhere in Liberia, this was the first time he had been to the country. He estimated that he spent two days in Mendekoma and returned to Sierra Leone after completing his mission. He confirmed that the armed men that he and Defense 03 handed over to the NPFL commander were RUF. He also confirmed that before this, there had been RUF troops in Liberia. A commander, Eagle, had been sent by Issa Sesay to attack the rear around Voinjama. Eagle's other flank between Foya, Mendekoma and Sierra Leone was open as the NPFL did not have enough men to secure the area and that is why Issa Sesay ordered Defense 12 and Eagle to bring troops to Mendekoma.

Defense 12 did not know if there were any other RUF commanders in Liberia when Eagle was stationed there. He had heard that Eagle was fighting in Kolahun, Foya and Vahun. According to Defense 12, Eagle was in Liberia because the peace process was almost at the disarmament stage and there were "distractions" coming towards Sierra Leone. Eagle was ordered to conduct a flanking attack, to prevent these distractions or soldiers from reaching Sierra Leone. This was in May 2001.

Defense 12 did not know if Gibril Massaquoi had fought in Liberia. Gibril Massaquoi was one of the leaders of the tripartite meetings that were held in almost all regional and district headquarters in Sierra Leone, to better convince the fighters to give up their weapons. Disarmament started in Lunsar in 1999 on Foday Sankoh's orders and continued in May 2001. The tripartite meetings were held in order to get the disarmament ongoing again. The witness testified that he was disarmed in Tongo Fields in 2001. Disarmament continued throughout 2001, and in 2002 there were elections in Sierra Leone.

According to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi stayed in Freetown after returning from Liberia. He could not remember the exact time of Massaquoi's arrest in Makeni, but recalled that the UN flew him to Freetown after the arrest. The second time Gibril was in Freetown, he lived in Kissi, Thunder Hills. The witness estimated that he moved there in late 2001. Gibril lived there with his family, consisting of his wife and children, whom the witness named. At the time, Defense 12 was living in Bo, Tongo Fields and Freetown. Every time he was in Freetown, he would meet with Gibril, estimating that this was about twice a month. They also met once in Waterloo and twice in Bo, when Gibril came to visit on family business. Gibril participated in the paramount chief elections by assisting the campaign of their eldest sister, Defense 18. In late 2001, the RUF became a political party and Gibril Massaquoi was participating in these arrangements in Freetown. Gibril also had a fishing project in Gbondapi, sponsored and financed by the DDR for Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration. He was looking for land to acquire and staff for

the project. The project was never implemented as Gibril was taken by the Special Court as a witness to a secure location and Defense 12 had not seen him since. Defense 12 could not say where the Special Court took Gibril.

Defense 12 testified that he personally saw Gibril Massaquoi participate in the campaigning of the paramount chief elections. The Massaquoi family had almost monthly meetings about the campaign, which Gibril attended. The Sierra Leonean 2002 general elections took place around the same time as the paramount chief elections. According to Defense 12, Gibril Massaquoi was also involved with the general elections, as the RUF had been transformed into a political party and Gibril was responsible for making arrangements for the party. The witness was not aware of any other role Gibril Massaquoi may have had in these elections.

According to the witness, Gibril Massaquoi was living with his wife Elisabeth Mansaray, his children and Michael Bona, his cousin, at the safe location the Special Court had arranged for him. Gibril Massaquoi also had a girlfriend, Defense 13. The witness could not tell when Defense 13 and Gibril Massaquoi had met, nor for how long their relationship lasted. They had a son, but he could not say when the son was born.

According to Defense 12, Gibril Massaquoi was also called Gaffa, which was his code name. Every commander in the RUF had a code name. Gaffa was a code name used in Sierra Leone. The witness had not heard of a person called Angel Gabriel. He knew Sam Bockarie, the second in command in the RUF after Foday Sankoh. According to the witness, Sam Bockarie left the RUF and escaped to Liberia in December 1999 when he refused Sankoh's orders. Gibril Massaquoi did not move to Liberia with Sam Bockarie. Gibril Massaquoi never had armed troops under his command in Liberia, as all of his frontline responsibilities ended in 1999 when Sankoh asked him to be his special assistant. The witness testified that: "When you are an assistant, you do not carry arms or take part in armed battle, you are more of a civilian in administration". When Issa Sesay was the leader of the RUF, Gibril Massaquoi did not have armed troops under his command.

The prosecution questions Defense 12

The prosecution began by pointing out that Defense 12 had told the Finnish police that when Gibril went to Lunsar after the 8 May 2000 attack, he had troops in Lunsar under his command. The witness responded that he remembered telling the police that Superman was the battlefield commander in Lunsar, and Gibril was with him. With Superman as the commander in Lunsar, he couldn't say that another commander could be present. The witness explained that the attack on Sankoh's residence was caused because NGOs and civilians in Sierra Leone did not believe that Sankoh was committed to the peace process and they wanted him to move faster with it. He confirmed that the RUF attack on the UN peacekeepers took place immediately after the attack on Sankoh's residence. When the prosecution pointed out that, according to public sources, the attacks against the UN peacekeepers took place before the attack on Sankoh's house, the witness responded that he could not tell whether it occurred before or after. According to Defense 12, the RUF looted the property of UN peacekeepers and took them as hostages.

Defense 12 testified that the peace process was on shaky ground after the 8 May 2000 attack was because the Lomé agreement no longer existed. When Sankoh was arrested, the RUF no longer had a centralized leadership. The senior members met in Kailahun and Issa Sesay was appointed

the interim leader of the organization. According to Defense 12, there were some RUF members who thought that there was no reason to continue the peace process after the attack and this was the reason for the peace process being threatened. The RUF was also pressured by the international community and ECOWAS, which led to Sesay's appointment and the creation of the external delegation.

The witness could not tell the exact route the external delegation took from Sierra Leone to Monrovia, only that they travelled through Kailahun in Sierra Leone. Gibril Massaquoi had not mentioned the route they took. Defense 12 could not say whether there was fighting going on in Liberia when the delegation travelled to Monrovia. Monrovia was chosen because ECOWAS leaders thought that Charles Taylor would have the best chance of getting the RUF back to the peace process.

According to Defense 12, Issa Sesay ordered him to bring reinforcements to Mendekoma and told him that the peace process was on track and that the RUF was facing a lot of international pressure to disarm, while their flank was being destroyed. That is why Defense 12 and [REDACTED] were told to bring the reinforcement troop to Mendekoma and to hand them over there. At the time, the NPFL was fighting LURD rebels. Battles were going on when Defense 12 arrived with the troops to Mendekoma in early 2001. He described that Mendekoma had been burned down. He could not tell which party, LURD or NPFL, had burned the village. According to the witness, Eagle was sent to Liberia because Issa and the RUF leadership were thinking that leaving their flank vulnerable would only create harm for civilians. Eagle was sent to Voinjama to cover the RUF's flank and to protect Sierra Leone from attacks in order to secure the peace process. Issa Sesay was afraid of the LURD rebels attacking Sierra Leone. The troops withdrew when they heard that the peace process was underway.

The witness could not remember for how long Gibril Massaquoi stayed in Monrovia with the external delegation before going to Abuja. He could not remember whether Gibril had been to Monrovia after he left Abuja and had returned to Sierra Leone. When asked how he could know that Gibril could not have commanded troops in Liberia when he could not remember his whereabouts, Defense 12 explained that Gibril was busy with the tripartite meetings after his return to Sierra Leone: "How can I say for a high-profiled diplomat who has been in a peace process to be a warlord at the same time?"

Defense 12 could not remember for how long Gibril Massaquoi stayed in Makeni before he was arrested by Issa Sesay in late 2001. After Gibril returned from Abuja, he lived in Freetown and participated in the tripartite meetings. In 2001, Defense 12 himself lived in Tongo, Kenema District, Sierra Leone. He met with Gibril once in 2001 in Tongo and once in Makeni. The witness' knowledge of Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts was based on the peace process: "His movement was based on the peace process, because that was the time the peace process was fragile and RUF was forced to go back and at that time it was hell on him as the duty of the leader of the external delegation." He estimated that the paramount chief elections in which Gibril helped his sister to campaign took place in 2001 or 2002 and the preparations for the fishing project took place around the same time. He testified that he was not in the same town as Gibril, whom he said was living in Freetown in 2002, while he lived in Tongo, Bo and Freetown. The chiefdom in which the elections took place is called Gallinas Perry.

The witness confirmed that he had not heard of a person called Angel Gabriel. He remembered having spoken of this name with the Finnish police, who had asked him if Gibril was called Angel

Gabriel. He recalled telling the police that he does not know why people call Gibril Angel Gabriel and he explained to the court that his family had been following the trial and the news being published online and in print. Defense 12 did not have any information as to Charles Taylor's relationship with the RUF.

Defense 12 could not remember exactly what happened when Gibril was taken by the Special Court. He only knew that Gibril was being protected as a witness. Information about Gibril's co-operation with the Special Court spread because some of his family went with him and some didn't.

Witness Defense 05 is heard

The defense questions Defense 05

The defense began by asking Defense 05 how he knew Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 05 testified that he met Gibril Massaquoi during the war in Sierra Leone in 1991. He was abducted in his home region and later met Gibril Massaquoi. Gibril Massaquoi returned from Lomé in 1999 and stayed with Defense 05 and others in Freetown. Gibril was a part of a delegation throughout the war. The Lomé meeting was held in 1999, it was a peace agreement signed with Foday Sankoh. Defense 05 had not been to Lomé himself, but he met Foday Sankoh in Abidjan. After the Lomé agreement signing, Gibril Massaquoi went to Freetown, where he worked as a special assistant to Foday Sankoh. Gibril Massaquoi worked on Spur Road, Defense 05 also worked and lived there at the time. Gibril Massaquoi arrived at the office every morning and stayed until 10, 12 o'clock. They saw each other every day. They both worked there until the attack on 8 May 2000.

The witness named the people present in the office on 8 May 2000 including himself, a Nigerian, Captain Musa, Gibril Massaquoi and Foday Sankoh. They first received word that there had been an attack against the UN, which led to Foday Sankoh, Mr. Papay, sending a delegation to Lunsar to find out what was happening. They heard on the radio that the UN had gone to disarm RUF members in Makeni and shooting had broken out. They also heard that UN peacekeepers had been taken as hostages by the RUF. According to Defense 05, Foday Sankoh was very worried about the situation. As a reaction to this, people began attacking the office on Spur Road. The witness saw four bodies. They could not leave the building because they were being shot at. Finally, they managed to escape from the backyard over the fence. Those who escaped included Gibril Massaquoi, Foday Sankoh, Superman and some other men. Some others were arrested. They all went together at first but later they got separated. Defense 05 met Gibril Massaquoi in Makeni after spending three weeks in the bush. The witness heard that Foday Sankoh had been shot in the leg and was arrested during the attack.

Defense 05 testified that after the attack and Sankoh's arrest, everyone was confused and did not know what to do. This ruined the earlier peace agreement signed by Sankoh. Everyone began attacking the RUF: Sierra Leonean Army, the kamajaro. Foday Sankoh never returned to lead the RUF, Issa Sesay was appointed as the new leader. This took place in 2000 in a meeting in Kono. Defense 05 participated in the meeting, with Gibril Massaquoi, Superman and Morris Kallon. A delegation was also appointed at the meeting, as Issa Sesay had been contacted by Charles Taylor who had asked for a peace negotiation. This was how Abuja I and II got started. Gibril Massaquoi became the leader of the delegation and Defense 05, Abdul Razak and Defense 14 went to Monrovia. They travelled to Monrovia because Charles Taylor had contacted the RUF for the

negotiations. They travelled in late 2000, during the rainy season. They travelled from Koindu to Foya, Voinjama, Kolahun and Monrovia. This was the only route they knew to be secure. RUF soldiers secured the route, led by Eagle in Voinjama. Defence 05 was with Gibril Massaquoi in Makeni and Eagle was in Kailahun when Eagle was tasked to clear the road to Foya. The witness knew of Eagle's movements through radio. He was not sure if Eagle was the only RUF commander in Lofa, but when they got there, they were told that Eagle was the commander. The witness explained that he did not see anything during the journey, because he was sick and stayed in the car. He could therefore not say if there were any other RUF commanders in Lofa at the time. The witness could not remember how long it took for Eagle to clear the road for the delegation.

According to Defense 05, the delegation met with Eagle in Voinjama. They were not attacked during their travel to Monrovia. They left from Kono in the morning and arrived in the evening. In Monrovia, they stayed in a guest house. The next day, Gibril Massquoi, Issa Sesay, Morris Kallon and Defense 14 went to a meeting with Charles Taylor. After the meeting, Issa, Defense 05 and Morris Kallon returned to Sierra Leone, while Gibril Massaquoi, Defence 14 and Abdul Razak stayed in Monrovia, as they were the actual delegation. The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi used to go back and forth between Sierra Leone and Monrovia as the delegation leader. He participated in Abuja I and Abuja II negotiations. He could not tell when Gibril Massquoi returned to Sierra Leone after he had left Monrovia. The witness did not attend the Abuja I meeting. These negotiations were about disarmament and Foday Sankoh's release. The delegation was travelling back and forth and meeting ECOWAS leaders. The witness could not tell the exact timings of these trips, but estimated they took place in late 2000. He could not remember when the disarmament process began in Sierra Leone, but it was after the peace process. Defense 05 himself disarmed in Kono.

Once disarmament started, Defense 05 met with Gibril Massaquoi in Makeni. He met Gibril Massaquoi whenever he went to Makeni. Defense 05 also met Massaquoi in Makeni after the completion of the disarmament process. The first elections were held in Sierra Leone in 2001 or 2002, after disarmament. Defense 05 met Gibril Massaquoi before the elections, but not after them. After the elections, he met with him in Freetown in a place called Light.

According to Defense 05, Gibril Massaquoi had a code name, Gaffa. When he was discussing the name Angel Gabriel with the Finnish police, it was the police who brought up the name Angel Gabriel. Defense 05 knew Sam Bockarie. He knew that Gibril Massaquoi and Sam Bockarie had problems with each other. Bockarie left Sierra Leone to go to Liberia after the Lomé agreement, as he did not want to disarm. Gibril did not go with him, he was in Spur Road, Freetown.

The prosecution questions Defense 05

The prosecution began by asking about Gibril Massaquoi as a commander in the RUF. According to Defense 05, Gibril Massaquoi was a commander with Superman in Northern Sierra Leone before the first peace agreement in 1996. He remained a commander until a ceasefire during the AFRC regime, when Johnny Paul Koroma overthrew President Tejan Kabbah. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had told the Finnish police that Massaquoi had been a frontline commander between 1999 and 2000 in Makeni and Lunsar. He replied that Gibril Massaquoi became a frontline commander again after the 8 May 2000 attack, when they returned to Makeni. Defense 05 testified that there was a satellite phone at the Spur Road office, which Gibril used to relay messages to and from Foday Sankoh.

Defense 05 confirmed that he had heard that the RUF had taken UN peacekeepers hostage. He could not remember when Gibril Massaquoi returned to Sierra Leone after the delegation had travelled to Monrovia. They did not travel through Vahun on their way to Monrovia, but travelled through Koindu, Foya, Kolahun, Voinjama. According to Defense 05, Eagle cleared the road for the delegation. He described the road clearing as a military operation of resisting attack and pushing the enemy away but could not give any further details. Charles Taylor's soldiers were in Lofa and they were attacked, but the witness did not know by whom. Eagle went to Lofa with armed soldiers. Charles Taylor had contacted Issa Sesay for the peace negotiations and Eagle's operation was related to this. Eagle's and Taylor's troops were fighting side-by-side against the same enemy to clear the road.

Defense 05 did not know for how long Gibril Massaquoi stayed in Monrovia after he had gone to Sierra Leone and returned to Monrovia. Defense 05 testified that Defense 09 was the caretaker of the guest house in Monrovia. He was staying at the guest house and taking care of those staying at the house. Defense 05 did not remember seeing a person called Ibrahim Bah in Monrovia.

The prosecution pointed out that Defense 05 was asked by the Finnish police if he has heard of Angel or Angel Gabriel and he said that Angel was Gibril Massaquoi's code name. Defense 05 replied that he did say this to the police, but when he was thinking about the issue at home, he remembered that Gibril's code name was Gaffa instead. The prosecution pointed out that Defense 05 had earlier testified that the police brought up the name, to which Defense 05 replied that he was asked whether he knew that Angel Gabriel was Gibril Massaquoi.

Defense 05 confirmed that Gibril returned to being a frontline commander in the Makeni-Lunsar area with Superman after the 8 May attack. Superman was the senior out of the two. The witness then repeated some of the different places that Gibril Massaquoi travelled to during the peace process.

April 3, 2023 – Day 42: Former RUF members testify

Today Monday 3 was the first day of the last week of this phase of the Appeals Court's hearings in Monrovia. The Court heard 3 more defense witnesses who had travelled from Sierra Leone to testify.

The first witness described spending a lot of time with Gibril Massaquoi during their time in the RUF. He was asked about events between 1999 and 2003, Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts in Sierra Leone and trips to Liberia that the two had made during this time.

The second witness described being a bodyguard to the RUF leader Foday Sankoh. He spoke about the attack on Sankoh's residence in Freetown, during which he was also captured. The witness spent multiple years in prison during the 2000s.

The third witness also knew Mr Massaquoi from the RUF. His questioning focused on the code names and war names Mr Massaquoi used in Sierra Leone. Also discussed was whether other people in the RUF had used similar war names to those that some witnesses had alleged that Mr Massaquoi had used in Liberia.

Tomorrow Tuesday 4 is the last day of this phase of hearings. The Court is scheduled to hear 2 more defense witnesses from Sierra Leone, before flying back to Finland. Hearings will recommence after the Easter break, on Wednesday, April 12.

April 3, 2023 [Liberia] Day 42: Former RUF members testify

Witness Defense 21 is heard

The defense questions Defense 21

The defense began by asking how Defense 21 had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. He testified that he had known Gibril Massaquoi since 1999, when Massaquoi had gotten out of prison with the help of the West Side Boys. They met in Lunsar, where Defense 21 saw Massaquoi with Superman aka Dennis Mingo. The witness testified that Massaquoi did not have any ongoing arguments with anyone at the time. Massaquoi was a spokesman before his prison term in 1996 and after being released, he worked on administrative and media tasks. Massaquoi did not have a military rank, but the witness heard him being called Commander. According to the witness, everyone who had an administrative role was called a commander. Massaquoi worked as a spokesman and as the head of media and communication. In the RUF, there were different commanders. Some were media commanders, others were battlefield commanders. Gibril Massaquoi was not a battlefield commander after his release, "he was just a commander."

The witness named some RUF battlefield commanders during the 1990s: Morris Kallon, Colonel Jalloh, Base Marry, Superman, and Rambo. Issa Sesay was a field commander and a former leader of the RUF, a battlefield commander. Non-combatant commanders included Gibril Massaquoi, who worked as an administrative and media commander and Edward Collins and Omrie Golley, who were media commanders.

Defense 21 stated that he had never been an RUF member himself. He used to work in intelligence and as a mediator between the RUF and the Sierra Leonean government. Within the RUF, he had been in contact with Gibril Massaquoi, Abdul Razak, Omrie Golley and Kenneth. Defense 21 was involved in the NCDDR, the National Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration Council by training ex-fighters. He also had a project for agricultural development. Defense 21 testified that his connection with Gibril Massaquoi was based on a task given by his boss, who sent him to keep contact with the RUF as a liaison officer for President Tejan Kabbah.

The witness testified that Gibril Massaquoi was in Lunsar and Makeni in 1999 after his release from prison. He was trying to mediate the peace process. Defense 21 met him in Makeni. Gibril Massaquoi had been appointed to lead a delegation in Kono in August 2000 until February 2001. After his release from prison, Gibril Massaquoi remained in Lunsar and Makeni until late 1999 or early 2000, when the UN flew him to Freetown. Before the attack on 8 May, Massaquoi worked as Foday Sankoh's personal assistant. There was a discussion in court as to the year that Massaquoi began this role. The witness explained that Massaquoi worked on Spur Road at Sankoh's office. He met Massaquoi during this time period, sometimes weekly, sometimes monthly, describing him as a personal friend of his. The witness was not present on Spur Road when the attack took place on 8 May 2000. He learned about the attack from the news. Gibril Massaquoi was lucky and managed to escape with his colleagues to Lunsar. Defense 21 met him in Lunsar after the attack. According to him, the reason for the attack was the arrest of peacekeepers by Issa Sesay and others. Foday Sankoh was captured in the bush and he held in Pademba Road Prison. After the attack, Issa Sesay led the RUF.

Defense 21 testified that between 1999 and 2001 he moved back and forth between Lunsar, Makeni and Freetown until the beginning of disarmament. In Makeni, he and Massaaquoi lived together in the defense headquarters. In 2000 Gibril Massaquoi was Sankoh's personal assistant, he negotiated peace treaties and went to Kenema to participate in the tripartite meetings in August 2000. Between August 2000 and February 2001, Massaquoi was a delegation leader and he visited Monrovia, Mali and other places. Massaquoi went to Monrovia with Abdul Razak and Defense 14. The witness was not involved in these travels, but he met with the members of the delegation in Makeni in connection to his mediation tasks and learned about their movements there. Defense 21 was not aware where Massaquoi's residence was located during the negotiations in Monrovia but stated that he had a rented apartment. Before the 8 May attack, Massaquoi rented an apartment in Murray Town, Western Freetown. When Massaquoi returned in February 2001, he worked for peace, led the delegation and participated in almost all the tripartite meetings. Defense 21 testified that they were together at the time. Massaquoi's last visit to Monrovia was in February 2001. The witness could not remember exactly when the tripartite meetings began but estimated that it was during 2001.

The witness explained that he was staying and travelling with the RUF delegation and Massaquoi during the tripartite meetings. This is why he knew that Massaquoi participated in all of the tripartite meetings except for one meeting in Makeni in November, because he had been flown to Freetown, because Issa wanted to kill him. Defense 21 testified that he personally called Major Oladipo to prevent this from happening and Gibril Massaquoi was flown to Freetown in October 2001. Issa Sesay wanted to sabotage the peace process. After his evacuation from Makeni, Gibril Massaquoi lived in East Freetown and from there he moved to Thunder Hill. Defense 21 testified that he frequently met Massaquoi at the time, they were close friends. Massaquoi lived with his wife Lizzie and two of his children. The witness met Massaquoi weekly in Freetown. Massaquoi participated in human rights meetings, the reintegration of soldiers, and the return of refugees.

The NCDDR had projects to provide training to former fighters and Massaquoi had a fishing project in Gbundapi that was never completed. Massaquoi was with the Special Court when the project was supposed to be implemented. The fishing project was accepted in late 2000 and it was supposed to be implemented in 2003. Defense 21 completed his own project. Massaquoi was given this project after his evacuation to Freetown. He had made preparations for it, he had staff and funding ready.

Defense 21 testified that Gibril Massaquoi did not participate in political activities in Sierra Leone. After his evacuation from Makeni to Freetown in late 2001, Massaquoi did not have a role in the RUF. He participated in human rights meetings and had a conflict with Issa Sesay. The witness estimated that the war in Sierra Leone ended in 2000 or 2002. Gibril Massaquoi cooperated with the Special Court as a witness. Defense 21 had been involved in one meeting between Massaquoi and Alan White, the prosecutor of the Special Court, maybe in early 2003.

The witness had been to Liberia in 2002 right after the elections in Sierra Leone to pick up Massaquoi's daughter. The child was eight years old when Defense 21 came to pick her up, he met her mother on his trip, who told him that she was born in 1994. The witness did not bring anyone else from Liberia to Sierra Leone. It was a difficult time as Klay Junction was being attacked. The witness picked up the child from the city center in Monrovia, a person called [REDACTED] gave him the child. The witness confirmed that Gibril Massaquoi had a girlfriend, Defense 13, in Monrovia. He did not meet Defense 13 on his trip to Monrovia, but, in Freetown, she had given him the address to pick up the child. Defense 13 had that address because she had lived in Monrovia before. She has a son, who was born in 2001 or 2002 in Freetown. Defense 21 knew that this child was born in Freetown because he had visited Defense 13's home in Tengbeh, Freetown. He confirmed Gibril Massaquoi as the father of the child. The witness gave the name of the mother of the child whom he had picked up from Monrovia, and stated that she passed away beforehand. Gibril Massaquoi did not go get his daughter himself, because he was in Freetown he could not access Monrovia anymore. This was because the Special Court had begun its work and Charles Taylor had killed some of his commanders, such as Mosquito and Superman. In Makeni, it was the mother of the child who had asked him to get the child from Monrovia, as she was very sick.

According to Defense 21, Gibril Massaquoi was afraid for his life at the time. He was placed in the safe house by the Special Court on 10 March 2003. The witness knew the date, because he went to the Criminal Investigation Department and Issa Sesay and Morris were arrested. He had met Lizzy, but never saw Gibril Massaquoi again. Defense 21 went to visit Gibril in 2008 a few days before he left for Finland. The house was in the Light District in Freetown. The defense pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that Gibril had also visited his home, which he denied. At the safe house, there were some armed guards, some of them knew Defense 21. The witness also met Gibril three times in his convoy, and the last time they met was just before Gibril left for Finland.

The witness was not aware of any truck that Gibril Massaquoi might have owned or had under his command. He had heard of a man transporting rice and cocoa to Voinjama in a car, but he could not remember the name of the driver. The witness had not heard of [REDACTED], but he had heard of a driver called [REDACTED], who was a civilian transporting foodstuffs in Sierra Leone, between Magburaka and Makeni. Base Marry was the commander in Magburaka at the time. According to Defense 21, Gibril Massaquoi did not smoke tobacco.

The prosecution questions Defense 21

The prosecution began by asking Defense 21 to confirm what he had said about Gibril Massaquoi not being a military commander after his release from prison. The witness confirmed this, and explained that Gibril Massaquoi fought once in Makeni, when he had to defend himself from an attack by Issa Sesay in 1999. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi had fought alongside Superman with his men until early 2001 in Lunsar. The witness confirmed this, saying that this was where Gibril Massaquoi had to defend himself against Issa Sesay. Lunsar was not a battlefield, disarmament began there in 1999. The witness then corrected the year 2001 to 1999. He described the fight between Massaquoi and Superman against Issa Sesy: "When Massaquoi came to Lunsar, he and Superman they went to Issa Sesay and he said their Leader Foday Sankoh was calling him and he was not responding. Issa attacked them, it was an in-fight between Superman and Issa Sesay, a fight between the two commanders, a battle of supremacy between the two".

Defense 21 confirmed that he had never been a member of the RUF. His information on these internal affairs of the RUF was based on him being in Makeni and Lunsar as part of the peace process. He was providing training to RUF fighters and disarming them, so he got to know a lot of things about the RUF. He clarified that he was tagged as an RUF collaborator. This was the reason he had to escape from Freetown to Lunsar after the 8 May attack: "At that time angry youths were just catching people with no former trial and just putting a tire on them and burning them." As he was not an actual soldier, he had to be careful about the accusations of his cooperation with the RUF.

The witness lived with Gibril Massaquoi in Makeni from 2000 until October 2001, when Massaquoi was flown to Freetown. They were not together every day, but they saw each other most of the time. Sometimes Gibril went on his peace missions and they would not see each other for a while, but they were together whenever they were both in Makeni. The periods in between were not long, less than a month at a time. Defense 21 was not a part of the delegation, so he did not go with Massaquoi on his peace missions. When the delegation went to Monrovia in August 2000, they met with ECOMOG and ECOWAS. The witness testified that he was told that they went to discuss the peace process, but nobody mentioned
discussing diamonds or ammunition.

Defense 21 confirmed that he did not participate in the tripartite meetings. His information about Gibril Massaquoi's participation in these meetings was based on what Massaquoi had told him. He was with Massaquoi until he boarded the UN helicopter to go to the talks. Massaquoi was picked up from Makeni by helicopter four times between 2000 and November 2001. Issa Sesay and Massaquoi had a conflict about the peace process after the Lomé agreement, before the elections, because Issa wanted to go to Kailahun with soldiers and disturb the peace process. Issa also accused Massaquoi of being a member of the SLPP in November 2001 and he wanted to kill him.

The witness then described Massaquoi's fishing project: "It was late 2002 and early 2003. He had trained staff to train the ex-combatants in fishing in Gbundapi". Massaquoi did not train these fighters himself, he had staff to do the training. Massaquoi himself was preparing the project and writing a proposal for the NCDDR in late 2002 in Freetown. The witness could not say how long it took to write the proposal. Gibril Massaquoi never returned to Monrovia or Makeni after his return to Sierra Leone in February 2001. Defense 21 had not heard of Massaquoi being in Liberia

in summer 2001. He did not go with anyone to pick up Massaquoi's daughter from Monrovia in 2002 and they returned to Sierra Leone alone. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that he had also picked up Massaquoi's wife in Liberia.
He responded that Massaquoi's wife was not in Monrovia but in Freetown at the time, he just went to pick up Massquoi's daughter.

According to Defense 21, Massaquoi could not come to Liberia in 2002 as he was not a part of the RUF anymore, he had problems with the RUF leadership and had no protection. The witness had heard that Mosquito, aka Sam Bockarie, had been killed in Liberia by Charles Taylor in 2002. This was before he went to pick up Massaquoi's daughter. The witness explained that he himself was 'indirectly' arrested when the arrest of Morris Kallon and Issa Sesay took place. He described the incident: "I was mediating between Issa Sesay and Massaquoi. So they said the Director of the CID invited Gibril Massaquoi to the CID headquarters. So I went along with Massaquoi to the CID and that was where we saw the police and they arrested Morris, Issa and all of us, but later we were all released, March 10, 2002. That day, Issa was arrested and Gibril was taken to safety".

According to Defense 21, the guard who knew him at Gibril Massaquoi's safe house was Defense 08. When he was coming back from Liberia to Sierra Leone in 2002 with Massaquoi's daughter, he travelled from Freetown, to Zimmi, to Bo Waterside and back. He had to take this route by the coast, because LURD rebels had attacked Klay Junction.

Final questions from the defense

The defense referred to the witness' interview with the Finnish police, where he had stated that there had been a serious clash between Gibril and Superman, and Issa Sesay and Rambo. People were killed, including Rambo. The witness confirmed this. Gibril returned to Lunsar after this clash in late 1999. According to Defense 21, Gibril was never against peace.

Questions from the court

The court asked the witness to clarify what he had testified about the safe house. Defense 12 explained that the last time he met with Gibril Massaquoi was two days before he left for Finland. He had visited Gibril Massaquoi many times in the safe house as he was a family friend. Massaquoi also came out of the safe house with an escort, but he did not visit the witness' home. He saw Massaquoi's convoy three times. These encounters took place when Defense 21 was on his way to Massaquoi's safe house and happened to see him in the convoy. The witness visited Massaquoi in various safe houses between 2003 and 2005.

According to Defense 21, after his evacuation from Makeni to Freetown, Gibril Massaquoi did not return to Makeni.

Witness Soldier 41 is heard

The defense questions Soldier 41

The defense began by asking how Soldier 41 had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he had met Gibril Massaquoi during the RUF war in Sierra Leone in 1991. They were both members of the RUF. Later, Massaquoi became an RUF frontline commander, he had this position from 1994 to 1997. When the AFRC came in 1997, Johnny Paul seized power from

President Kabbah. Johnny Paul called in the RUF and the two groups ruled Sierra Leone for about nine months until they were removed from power. Gibril was not a commander at the time, because he was not appointed as a minister.

The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi left Makeni in Northern Sierra Leone and went to Corporal Foday Sankoh in Lomé. He returned to Makeni after the signing of the Lomé agreement between the Sierra Leonean Government and the RUF on 7 July 1999. It was agreed that the RUF should move on to political activities and have an administrative structure, so Foday Sankoh appointed Gibril Massaquoi his personal assistant in Freetown. The witness saw Massaquoi leave for Freetown in October 1999. He was a bodyguard for the late Foday Sankoh along with others such as including Defence 05 and Akem Turay. They all came to Freetown in October and worked at 56 Spur Road. Gibril Massaquoi lived in Murray Town, but he came to work at Sankoh's residence every day. Soldier 41 saw Gibril Massaquoi every day.

Solider 41 testified that he worked on Spur Road until the events of 8 May 2000. He listed the people present at the house that day: Gibril Massaquoi, Superman, Momoh Rogers and other bodyguards. They all scattered and Gibril Massaquoi found a way to get to Makeni with Superman. Soldier 41 was arrested and detained in Pademba Road Prison. He was released on 6 September 2007. The witness knew Sam Bockarie, he was an RUF field commander until the signing of the Lomé agreement in 1999. After that, there was an internal problem and Sam Bockarie came to Liberia. Gibril Massaquoi did not come with Sam Bockarie to Liberia.

The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi was also called Gaffa, it was a code name used on the radio. Some people called him Gibo, short for Gibril. Soldier 41 had met Massaquoi once after getting out of prison. They met in 2007 in Freetown at the Youyi building near the Light District. He met Massaquoi, his wife and children inside a house, an upstairs building. Soldier 41 understood that at the time, Massaquoi was working with the Special Court for Sierra Leone, but he did not know any details. He had heard that the Special Court was ensuring Massaquoi's safety. He did not see any security guards at the house. The defense pointed out that Soldier 41 had testified in the lower court that he had met Massaquoi in Freetown in a building that had Sierra Leonean security guards inside arranged by the Sierra Leonean police. Soldier 41 confirmed this, he was not sure why the security guards were from the Sierra Leonean police since the Special Court had its own UN staff.

The prosecution questions Soldier 41

The prosecution began by asking about 1999, when Soldier 41 had said that they had had a large group of people coming to receive Foday Sankoh in Monrovia. The witness explained that they lived in Congo Town, because they had been given a place there. When they left, Defense 09 took care of the place from October 1999 until Charles Taylor escaped from power.

The arrest of the peacekeepers took place before the attack on Sankoh's residence on 8 May 2000. The RUF had arrested them in RUF controlled areas. When he was in prison, Soldier 41 had heard that Gibril Massaquoi came to Liberia in relation to the peace process. He heard that when the peace process collapsed, Gibril Massaquoi and others went to Makeni and started to renegotiate it. Soldier 41 explained that they sometimes had a radio in prison and people would sometimes bring news from all over the country. He found out about Massaquoi's participation in the peace negotiations through radio broadcasts.

Soldier 41 explained that Gibril Massaquoi used the code name Gaffa since he became a commander. He was using it when Soldier 41 was arrested on 8 May 2000. After the Lomé agreement, Gibril Massaquoi did not use any code names, because he was a politician. The witness was certain of this, because he had met his former comrades after getting out of prison and they would have told him if Massaquoi would have used any other code name.

The witness saw Massaquoi during the same month when he got out of prison. He only met with Massaquoi once before leaving Freetown. When asked how he knew that Defense 09 stayed at the building in Monrovia until Charles Taylor's surrender, he responded that that was where they had left him.

Witness Soldier 43 is heard

The defense questions Soldier 43

The defense began by asking how Soldier 43 met Gibril Massaquoi. He testified that they met when they were fighting for the control of Sierra Leone in 1991. Gibril Massaquoi was arrested in 1999 after the attack on Freetown and was in prison. Massaquoi was with Foday Sankoh in 1999, their cooperation began that year. When Foday Sankoh was in prison in 1999, Massaquoi was in Makeni as an administrative leader. The defense pointed out that Sankoh was arrested in spring 2000, which the witness confirmed. Soldier 43 was in Tongo at the time. He knew that Massaquoi was in Makeni, because Makeni was the RUF's headquarters at the time and all senior leaders were there. Issa Sesay was in charge of the headquarters in Makeni.

The witness described Issa Sesay and Gibril Massaquoi's relationship as 'bitter'. Soldier 43 and others were arrested in October 2001, because they supported Gibril. Issa Sesay accused Gibril of instigating younger commanders to oppose him. Issa did not want to disarm. The problem between the two RUF leaders arose when Gibril was flown to Tongo by the UN.

Soldier 43 testified that Gibril Massaquoi and Foday Sankoh went together to the Abidjan peace agreement negotiations. When Sankoh was arrested in Nigeria, Gibril was there with him. The defense pointed out that Sankoh was arrested in Nigeria in 1997, which the witness confirmed. After 1999, when Foday Sankoh was in Freetown, Gibril Massaquoi was with him. Soldier 43 was not in Freetown, but he had heard of this from someone working in the peace committee.

The witness could not remember Gibril Massaquoi travelling outside Sierra Leone after Sankoh's arrest. He knew Sam Bockarie, he was one of their commanders. He left the RUF in 1999 and came to Liberia. The witness heard that he died there. Gibril Massaquoi did not come with Sam Bockarie to Liberia, as they were not on friendly terms. When Bockarie left for Liberia, Massaquoi was in Makeni as an administrative chief. According to Soldier 43, they used to call Gibril Massaquoi Godson for all the challenges he had to face during the war.

Soldier 43 had heard of Angel Gabriel, he was an RUF soldiers. He was located at the Rutile Mining Company in Sierra Leone. He was lower ranking than Soldier 43, he was the younger brother of the witness' wife during the war. The witness provided Angel Gabriel's real name to the court. After coming to court, the witness had asked his friends for this name. He confirmed that he participated in combat in Sierra Leone as an RUF fighter. According to Soldier 43, he fought from 1991 to 1997 or 1998. Angel Gabriel is still alive, the witness heard that he

now lives at the border. Soldier 43 had also heard of another Angel Gabriel, but he had died in 1994 or 1995. Soldier 43 had met him personally, he was Temne, they trained together in 1991.

The prosecution questions Soldier 43

The prosecution began by asking about Soldier 43's stay in Tongo with Massaquoi. The witness testified that this was around the 20 October. Massaquoi came to Tongo to talk to the men there, as peace had been signed. He told them that their struggle was coming to an end and advised them to not listen to Issa Sesay, who was in control of the mines. The RUF needed money to change into a political party. Soldier 43 was located at a diamond mine in Tongo. Issa Sesay had told Gibril Massaquoi to not go to Tongo, but he had gone anyway. Issa then accused Massaquoi of treason. Soldier 43 explained that Issa wanted the profits of the mines for himself and Gibril told them that they should not listen to Issa, who just wanted to enrich himself.

The witness testified that the diamonds from the Tongo mines went to Issa Sesay. He had once heard that Issa had gone to Liberia with the profits from the mines and Charles Taylor had him arrested. There were rumors going around the frontlines that Issa was taking large amounts of diamonds to Charles Taylor. According to Soldier 43, Taylor was like a father figure to the RUF, because he had helped the RUF at the beginning of the war in Sierra Leone, stating that the RUF came from Liberia to Sierra Leone. Foday Sankoh had brought the movement to Sierra Leone. Between 1999 and 2003 the relationship between RUF and Charles Taylor's NPFL was not as good, ULIMO was present at the border. The RUF was present in Liberia from 1991 to 1996 or 1997. They had a supply route going from Sierra Leone to Voinjama before Mosquito left the RUF. Soldier 43 had not been in Liberia to personally witness the use of this supply route. He testified that he had been in Liberia in 1991 and 1992 fighting with the NPFL but had not been in the country since 1996 or 1997. Gibril Massaquoi was also on the Liberian side of the border at the time. He was delivering food to the soldiers who had been ambushed.

When asked how he knew that Gibril Massaquoi had not travelled abroad after Sankoh's arrest, Solder 43 explained that Massaquoi was an administrative person and commanders like himself always knew where he was. He could not remember Massaquoi travelling abroad after the problem in 2001. Massaquoi had not told him that he had travelled to Liberia in summer 2001, he could only remember Massaquoi travelling to the peace talks with Sankoh.

According to Soldier 43, the Angel Gabriel who had died in 1994 or 1995 was not a commander, he was a corporal. This Angel Gabriel did not fight in Liberia before his death. As for the other Angel Gabriel, the witness speculated that he finished fighting in 1997 or 1998 because that was the last time he saw him. The witness had seen him fighting with the RUF in different parts of Sierra Leone. He speculated that this Angel Gabriel is currently alive and in Liberia, because he had spent lots of time at the border area. The witness had also heard from Angel Gabriel's that his sister, the witness' ex-wife, was in Liberia. Soldier 43 finally testified that he could not tell where this person currently is. According to Soldier 43, Gibril Massaquoi knew this Angel Gabriel. Soldier 43 had spoken about Angel Gabriel with the current president of the RUFP. He began asking about this name after the first trial.

Final questions from the defense

Soldier 43 further testified that in 1998, the RUF was present all over Sierra Leone. His commander was [REDACTED].

April 4, 2023 – Day 43: Final day in Monrovia

This Tuesday 4 April was the last day of this round of hearings in Monrovia.

The Appeals Court heard two witnesses, both from Sierra Leone. The first witness had worked with the Witness Protection Unit at the Special Court of Sierra Leone. He described the high security arrangements surrounding the safehouses and highlighted the fact that no one living inside them could have left without prior agreement and with a security detail. The second witness was a family member of Gibril Massaquoi, who testified to him being in Sierra Leone at different periods across 2001 to 2003, to help her with her Paramount Chief election campaigning.

The Appeals Court will be flying back to Finland over the next few days. There will be a break for Easter, and then the hearings will continue again in Turku.

April 4, 2023 [Liberia] Day 43: Final day in Monrovia

Witness Defense 08

The defense questions Defense 08

The defense began by asking Defense 08 about his work for the Special Court for Sierra Leone. The witness testified that he began working for the Special Court in 2003. Before that, he worked as a police officer. He worked for the Special Court until 2010 as a security guard. He protected Gibril Massaquoi from March 10, 2003. He was guarding a safe house on Pipeline, the first one that Gibril Massaquoi was placed in. It was located on Wilkinson Road, after Congo Cross.

Defense 08 had sent photographs of this safe house to Saleem Vahidy, he had taken them himself. The defense showed the photographs to the witness, they had been included in case file. The witness identified the fence and barbed wire in the photographs and confirmed they were there when Gibril Massaquoi lived in the house. He was brought in on 10 March. The witness began working on 7 March. Gibril Massaquoi lived in the building for one year. There were other people being protected by the Special Court at the time. Different people had different security levels. Gibril Massaquoi was a high-profile witness, a key witness. His protection was different from those who were just monitored: he had security guards in the safe house. Those without security guards were still checked on every day, despite not having full-time security.

The witness explained that Gibril Massaquoi had 24-hour security every day of the week from the very beginning. In the morning there were two security guards, one of them was armed. They had three shifts, morning, afternoon and night. The morning shift ran from 7am to 2pm, and the night shift began at 8pm. Gibril Massaquoi came to the safe house with his family. This included his wife Elizabeth, his children, and Michael Bona. Defense 08 did not know Gibril Massaquoi or his family before they came to the safe house. He knew the other guards before he started working at Massaquoi's safe house, they were all former policemen.

Defense 08 described that with every shift change, the guards would mark down the change of guards in a logbook and they would check that the witness and their family were present in the

safe house. This check was conducted every time the shift changed. Gibril was called Goofy in the logbook. They would write down that Goofy and the family were safe in the logbook. There was only entrance to the property: a bigger gate for cars and a smaller gate. The gates were normally locked. The house itself had two doors, a front door and a back door. These doors were also locked.

The witness testified that Gibril Massaquoi could not move freely from the safe house in 2003. He did not leave the safe house unless he was called by the Special Court office to a meeting. The deputy chief at the office would receive all requests for Gibril to leave the safe house. The security guard on duty would send the request to the office. Defense 08 testified that Gibril never left the safe house at his own request without a security guard. On request, he could leave the property with guards. Sometimes the guards took Gibril to a meeting with his lawyer or just drove him around the city. If the Special Court wanted to meet with Gibril, the OTP [Office of the Prosecutor] sent a request to the VWS [Victim and Witness Section], who then directed the request to the guards on duty at the safe house. It was either the chief of WVS, Saleem, or the deputy chief, who notified the guards that they needed Gibril at a certain time. The guards would then notify Gibril, so that he could be ready to leave when needed. Somebody on staff would drive Gibril to the meetings with OTP. The duration of these trips depended on the OTP's needs, but according to Defense 08, Gibril never stayed overnight. Gibril never spent the night outside the safe house.

Defense 08 testified that, in 2003, he only had one day off per week. For six days a week, he was either guarding a safe house or working at the office. He saw Gibril every day, even if he was working at the office, he would still go and check on every witness daily. He added that it would have been very risky for Gibril to leave for several days. They had 24-hour security and the guards checked the apartment twice a day.

Gibril Massaquoi's role as a high-profile witness was based on his testimony and role as a witness. It was decided by the OTP. The witness testified that if Gibril left the safe house, he would have been killed. He was threatened by his colleagues, but the witness could not say who they were. In 2003, they took Gibril outside the safe house only once every two or three months, as the situation was very tense. After his testimony, Massaquoi was not allowed to go outside without a request. They took him to drink palm wine in 2003, but the witness could not provide an exact date. Massaquoi never broke the rules of the safe house. Defense 08 could not say if Gibril had left the safe house to go to a funeral after 2003. Gibril Massaquoi was given a weekly allowance that he had to sign for. When the first safe house began, there was a cook that cooked for the family. She worked there until the end of the trial. Massaquoi received the allowance personally in cash, he had to sign for it. The security guard working at the office brought the money every Friday.

Defense 08 testified about the threat to the safe house. He was not there, but his colleague was present at the house. His colleague was attacked at the third safe house in Kington. The attacker was armed and there was a struggle with a security guard, who was injured. Gibril Massaquoi and his family remained safe during the attack. After the attack, they changed safe houses.

The witness repeated that when he started working at the safe house, there were two guards per shift and one of the guards was armed. Later, when they changed the safe house after the attack, there was an armed guard permanently stationed outside. Over time, up to 15 security guards were added. At the very beginning, there were only four guards in total. The colleagues

threatening to kill Massaquoi were from the RUF. They wanted to kill him because he had testified against them. Massaquoi never left the safe house without the guards being aware, the gate was always locked. Massaquoi's safe house had the highest security level. The people living in the different safe houses did not know who else was in the other houses nor where they were located.

Defense 08 knew Defense 09, he was also a witness of the Special Court. His safe house did not have security guards, the guards just went there to check on him every day. He was allowed to move outside his safe house. The witness also knew Y9, another protected witness. At the beginning, Y9 had security guards but his security was later reduced after his testimony in court. The witness estimated that Y9 came under their protection in 2004 or 2005. The witness named two other people who had the same security level as Gibril Massaquoi.

The prosecution questions Defense 08

The prosecution began by asking about the date when Defense 08 began working for the Special Court. The witness testified that he remembers the date so well because he still has an employee ID card that specifies the first day he worked at the Special Court. He did not have this ID card with him during the hearing. He remembered the date of Gibril Massaquoi's arrival, 10 March 2003, because he had picked him up from his apartment. The witness showed various employee ID cards that he had received from the Special Court, the first of which showed an expiry date of 7 March 2005. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi arrived on 8 March 2003. The witness denied this and insisted that he had testified that he arrived on 10 March 2003. The prosecution further pointed out that he had told the Finnish police in his interview that Massaquoi had arrived at the safe house in May 2003. The witness denied saying so and suggested that the police made a mistake. He insisted that the date was 10 March 2003, because Massaquoi was the first witness that was brought into the safe house, a few days after the witness had begun working there. According to Defense 08, the date was recorded on a document somewhere. The witness could not produce the document for the court. He testified that he remembered that date of Massaquoi's arrival so much better than Y9's because Massaquoi was their first witness.

Defense 08 testified that the first safe house in Pipeline, on Wilkinson Road, and had two stories. There was one room downstairs and four rooms upstairs. Massaquoi and his family lived upstairs. During his witness protection, Gibril Massaquoi lived in four different safe houses. The second was located on Jomo Kenyatta Road, near the Special Court. The third was located in Kington and the fourth in Light, coming from King Harman Road. The witness could not remember the address of the third safe house. He testified that Gibril Massaquoi lived in the first safe house for almost exactly one year. The witness could not recall the date of the attack on the third safe house.

The witness then explained the security guards' shifts. For the first few days, there were four guards in total, until they received a few more guards and began working in shifts. They worked in three shifts. During the first few days, when there were only four guards, they worked very long days. Two guards would work a 24-hour shift throughout the day and night and the next morning, two others would come and relieve them. This arrangement continued for approximately two weeks. After receiving additional guards, they began working in pairs during each shift, three shifts a day with six guards in total.

Defense 08 described the rotation list that specified when a guard would work in the office or at the safe house. Office work did not take place at night. Gibril Massaquoi's safe house was checked twice per day during shift changes in the morning and in the afternoon. Every safe house was also checked every day by the guard working in the office. Mr Massaquoi had to sign a document for the allowance and Defense 08 checked the document for his signature every Friday when he was working in the office. The security guards also worked as drivers. Defense 08 testified that even on days where he was assigned driver duty, he would still perform checks on every safe house.

The witness further testified that the cook, H4, was working at Massaquoi's first safe house. She arrived there the next day, on 11 March and worked for over a month. Massaquoi's family did not have a key to the doors downstairs. The family had access to the yard without the guards present, as the property had a fence. Children could not leave the property but could go outside in the yard.

Defense 08 knew that Massaquoi's life was in danger because he was a high-profile witness who had 24/7 security arrangements. He named the 3 other guards with him at the beginning. Michael Bona, Gibril Massaquoi's brother, is currently in Finland. The witness had spoken with Gibril Massaquoi and Michael Bona after 2010, when he stopped working at the Special Court. They met whenever Massaquoi and Bona came to Freetown, and sometimes he and Gibril talk on the phone. The last time Michael Bona visited him in Freetown was in late 2022. He walked past Defense 08's office and told him that he had been asking around for him. Michael Bona only came to say hello, they did not discuss Gibril nor his arrest in Finland. The witness did not become aware of Gibril Massaquoi's arrest until Mikael, a Finnish policeman, came to his office to interview him. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had told the Finnish police that Michael Bona came to visit him in October 2020. The witness replied that he cannot remember the month, Bona just came to say hello and he had not heard from him since.

Further questions from the defense

The witness testified that Michael Bona did not give him any instructions regarding the safe house or how to answer questions relating to Gibril Massaquoi or the safe house.

Questions from the court

The court had a few remaining questions for the witness.

Defense 08 testified that the person wounded in the attack on the safe house was the attacker, who was wounded by the security guard. The witness only met with Michael Bona once. They had not met after his hearing at the lower court. In 2003, the Massaquoi family did not have any visitors. After his testimony, there were some visitors. His family members came to visit him before he left. Even after his testimony, Mr Massaquoi was not allowed to visit friends without the security guards.

The witness confirmed that he had spoken with Gibril Massaquoi recently on the phone, they talked about their families. The court pointed out that he had mentioned a different number of guards in the lower court. The witness insisted that there were four guards in the beginning and gave their names to the court.

Witness Defense 18 is heard

The defense questions Defense 18

The defense began by asking Defense 18 to explain her role as a Paramount Chief. The witness testified that she is a traditional leader in a chiefdom. Her chiefdom is the Gallinas Chiefdom in Pujehun district, Southern Sierra Leone. Her term began on 13 April 2019. She had tried to run for Paramount Chief in 2002 but had not succeeded. As Paramount Chief, she leads the whole chiefdom and makes all the decisions. The witness testified that Gibril Massaquoi is her cousin, but traditionally she calls him her brother. In 1999, Gibril Massaquoi was in Freetown. The government was trying to restore law and order in the country and chiefdom elections were being planned. The witness met Gibril Massaquoi in Freetown in relation to these paramount chief elections. Before the 2002 elections, the previous leader of the Gallinas-Perry chiefdom had been elected in 1973. The chief elected in Gallinas-Perry before 2002 was Defense 18's father. He ruled the chiefdom for 14 years. In 2002, Defense 18 was running against PC Issa Bemba Kamara, Mohammed Mansaray, Mohammed Massaquoi, James Galiwa Massaquoi and others, there were 7 candidates altogether. PC Issa Bemba Kamara had gotten elected in 2002. Defense 18 sometimes met Gibril Massaquoi at his home in Murray Town, sometimes at Foday Sankoh's residence. She knew that he was involved with Foday Sankoh but wasn't sure exactly what for. Her campaign in the 2002 elections began in 1999, but the process was slow due to disarmament. According to Defense 18, it is common that campaigns in paramount chief elections take years. Originally, the elections were supposed to take place in 1999 or 2000 but they were postponed because there was not enough money for disarmament. The second time the elections were postponed was in 2002. Then, they all campaigned and Defense 18 lost.

The witness explained the campaigning process. They went to villages and towns in the chiefdom and talked to people. They put posters in public places and when the elections were postponed, they wrote over the year with the new year. Gibril Massaquoi was also involved in the campaigning. He planned campaign meetings, provided them with vehicles, and worked as the secretary of the campaign team. Gibril Massaquoi was also involved in visiting the towns and village in the Gallinas chiefdom. They went on four-day campaign trips every month and would return to Freetown. The campaign team had multiple meetings and Gibril prepared reports on the campaigning efforts. By the end of 2001, the campaigning became more intense as the elections were coming up. Everybody was campaigning more and faster. At the time, they campaigned almost every day. They would either go somewhere to campaign, or invite people to meet them. Gibril Massaquoi also participated in this phase of the campaign and invited people, the witness stated: "All of us, we did it as a family, we speak with one voice".

Defense 18 was not aware whether Gibril Massaquoi participated in other elections in 2002. Gibril was a part of a movement in 2000 to 2001, they used to meet in Sankoh's apartment. The government had asked them to come out of the bush and Gibril participated in the peace process later, in the Lomé peace negotiations and in Ivory Coast. Gibril Massaquoi travelled with Sankoh to Lomé and Togo. He also participated in the peace negotiations in Sierra Leone, but the witness did not know any details.

The witness had seen Gibril Massaquoi after the 2002 paramount chief elections. They met in early 2003 in Freetown, on Hannah Benka Coker Street near the Youyi building. The witness was on her way back from a funeral and happened to see Gibril on the street. They stopped to say hello and see how everyone was doing. At the time, Gibril was living in Kissi, Thunder Hills.

The prosecution questions Defense 18

The prosecution began by asking about the Gallinas-Perry chiefdom, currently known as Gallinas. The chiefdom did not have a chief between 1990 and 2002 because of the war. The witness confirmed that the election in which she ran took place on 10 January 2002. The prosecution referred to a piece of evidence, a study from Harvard University on the chiefdoms of Sierra Leone. The witness confirmed that the man who got elected in 2002, Issa Bemba Kamara was also called Alhaji J B Kamara Kroma as noted in the evidence, that was his previous name. The prosecution referred to the piece of evidence, which indicated that the next elections after the death of Defense 18's father were held in 2005. The witness denied this, stating that she went to university in 2005, and her mother died in 2005, 3 years after the election.

Defense 18 testified that they conducted campaigning trips in 1999, 2000 and 2001. After the attack on Sankoh's house, she did not see Gibril Massaquoi until 2001 in Freetown. The attack took place on 8 May 2000, and the next time she saw Gibril Massaquoi was in November 2001 in Thunder Hills. She confirmed that Gibril Massaquoi did not participate in the campaigning between 8 May 2000 and November 2001, they all had a break because the country was in a state of instability. After November 2001, Gibril participated in numerous campaigning trips, because the elections were so close. According to Defense 18, there were more than ten trips. Gibril Massaquoi also drafted reports about the campaigning, for example in late 2001.

The witness had not met Gibril Massaquoi after February 2003. Gibril had not told her that he would have gone to Liberia.

Finally, Defense 18 showed a campaign poster to the court.

April 12, 2023 – Day 44: The Court returns to Finland

Today, the Court had its first hearing back in Finland after returning from Liberia. It heard two witnesses called by the Defense.

The first witness, a family member of Mr Massaquoi, described life under the protection of the Special Court for Sierra Leone after Mr Massaquoi agreed to testify.

The second witness, a former official at the Special Court, was asked about the details of Mr Massaquoi's witness statements and the protection he was afforded by the Special Court.

The Court will continue tomorrow by examining various types of evidence and hearing one additional witness.

April 12, 2023 [Finland] Day 44: The Court returns to Finland

Witness Michael Bona is heard

The defense questions Michael Bona

The defense began their questioning by asking Michael Bona about his relationship with Gibril Massaquoi. Mr. Bona testified that he knows Gibril Massaquoi from Sierra Leone, they are biological brothers. Gibril Massaquoi was in prison in Freetown in 1999 and he was released that same year. After his release, Massaquoi lived in Makeni. He was a spokesman for the RUF anddid not have any additional roles in the RUF at the time. Michael Bona himself lived in Bo. They did not see each other at the time. In 2000, Gibril Massaquoi was in Freetown and participated in the peace negotiations. He was invited there by the Sierra Leonean government. Massaquoi also worked as a special assistant to Foday Sankoh, the leader of the RUF. The office was located on Spur Road in Freetown, Bona had visited the office a few times. At the time, Massaquoi lived on Doherty Street in Murray Town. He lived there with Elizabeth and their children, as well as Elizabeth's brother. The witness testified to visiting Massaquoi twice in early 2000 before 8 May.

On 8 May 2000, there was a large demonstration near Sankoh's apartment. Bona testified that Massaquoi left Freetown and people, including himself, were arrested all over. He was arrested in May 2000 and released on 9 August 2001. The next time Bona saw Massaquoi was in 2002. They met in Freetown, Massaquoi had moved there from Makeni. Massaquoi was having problems with his colleagues, such as Issa Sesay, so the UN had to fly him to Freetown. The witness named the people that Massaquoi was living with in Thunder Hills in 2002. They met in March or April, it was very close to the elections in May. After this meeting, Bona and Massaquoi stayed together until moving to Finland together. They lived together in 2002 in Thunder Hills and in March 2003, when Issa Sesay and others were indicted, they moved to a safe house together.

In March or April 2002, Massaquoi was working on an election campaign. He would occasionally travel for a few days to do campaign work in places such as Segbwema. Massaquoi was involved in the activity of the SPP, the Sierra Leone Peoples' Party. He talked with young voters to convince them to vote for the party. Massaquoi was not working at the time. Bona could not

remember any additional activities Massaquoi might have had at the time. They saw each other almost daily when living together in Thunder Hills.

Bona and Massaquoi both moved to the safe house in March 2003. Bona later found out that Massaquoi had an agreement with the Special Court to move him to the safe house for security reasons. The safe house was located in Pipeline, near Wilkinson Road. The witness provided the names of the other people living in the safe house. They lived there for a year. There was a room downstairs for the guards to use. Upstairs he had his own room, while the children and Gibril had theirs. The house was fenced all around. The guards were there to protect them, to prevent anyone from going in or out. There were always two guards present. Bona testified that no one could or wanted to go out from the safe house, for safety reasons. They had a cook as they could not go outside to buy groceries. Occasionally, Massaquoi left the safe house to go to a meeting with the UN and would return after a few hours. The guards would open the gate to let a car in that would take him. Massaquoi was being hidden from the neighbors as well, because he was working for the Special Court and the Special Court had to protect him.

Bona testified that the guards were always on duty at the safe house. They were armed and they did not sleep on shift. New guards would come in to change shifts. After living for a year on Wilkinson Road, they moved to Jomo Kenyatta Road near the Special Court. The Special Court decided for them to move. They lived on Jomo Kenyatta Road for a few years, until 2004. In 2004, they moved to Kington and lived there until 2005. In 2005, they moved to another safe house. These changes were always done for security reasons.

The witness described a security threat that occurred in Kington: They were all inside and the security guards were downstairs. Massaquoi was praying, and Bona was in the living room with the children. Suddenly, they heard noises of a struggle and thought that somebody was attacking. Once they heard the glass door shatter, they realized that the guards were fighting with the attackers. They gathered into a corner together and called the police. When the police arrived, they were behind the house. Bona could not remember the date of the attack, but estimated that it took place in 2005. He explained that the attack was directed at Massaquoi, as he was the person being protected in the safe house. He never found out who was behind the attack. The Special Court investigated it, but Bona did not know anything about the results of their investigation. The security measures in place at the safe house were changed after the attack. After the attack, uniformed, visibly armed police officers were introduced to protect the safe house. Apart from this, nothing else about the security measures changed.

Bona testified that Massaquoi did not leave the safe house alone. He would only leave with the security guards to go to the office. In 2006, when his daughter died, Massaquoi and Bona left the house to bury her. They returned the next day. In 2007, Gibril travelled to United States, but Bona did not know what he was doing there. He was not gone for long, less than a month.

The witness was not aware of any other names used for Massaquoi except Gibo, a nickname used by his friends. Bona knew Defense 08, he was one of the security guards at the safe house. Bona had met Defense 08 in 2019 in Freetown. They know each other and Defense 08 had called him when he was visiting Freetown. They met at his office at the police headquarters. They had not seen each other or been in contact since this meeting. Bona testified that at the safe house, they received an allowance for their living costs. The guards brought a book every Friday and Massaquoi signed for the money. The witness provided the name of the cook at the safe house. She was working there when they arrived in March 2003.

The prosecution questions Michael Bona

The prosecution began by asking how Bona knew about Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts in 1999 and 2000. Bona testified that he received a lot of information in prison from the inmates and prison staff. He also sent letters through the Red Cross to his family in Bo. He had heard Massaquoi talking on the radio. When he was talking on the BBC, they knew he was in Makeni. Bona confirmed that he was in prison between 8 May 2000 and 6 August 2001 and that he met Massaquoi for the first time after his release in March or April 2002. Bona did not go with Massaquoi on his campaign trips that year. At the time, they lived together in Thunder Hills and saw each other almost every day. Massaquoi did not travel abroad in 2002, he did not leave Sierra Leone after being flown to Freetown by the UN. As they lived together in 2002, Massaquoi could not go anywhere without Bona knowing.

Massaquoi was only allowed to bring his immediate family to the safe house. Not everyone living at Thunder Hills was allowed to go with him to the safe house. At the time of the move, Bona was 16 years old. The Special Court did not perform any background checks, as Massaquoi was able to decide who would move into the safe house with him. They did not have any visitors at the safe house besides in 2008, when they were about to leave for Finland. The office Gibril Massaquoi went to was the office of the Special Court, but he did not go there often. When Massaquoi went to the office, he would not stay for long. Besides the funeral in Bo and the one trip to United States, Massaquoi did not leave the safe house. Bona was not aware where in the United States Massaquoi had gone to. He travelled with the Special Court, but Bona did not know with whom exactly.

Regarding the attack on the safe house, Bona testified that everyone living there was present at the time of the attack. The glass door that was broken was on the first floor. It was attached to another door, the glass door was the on the inside. As the struggle was happening in the front of the house, the family was inside, gathered in the kitchen at the back of the house. The security guards prevented the attackers from getting into the house and to the people inside. Bona did not think that the guards managed to detain the attackers. The family remained within the fence the whole time. When the police arrived, they were by the fence, outside the house.

In 2019, Defense 08 called the witness when he was in Freetown. Defense 08 happened to know that he was in Freetown, but Bona did not know how. They talked about Gibril, the family and how everyone was doing. He and Defense 08 had been friends from the time Defense 08 began protecting them. He was not aware of any other family members Gibril Massaquoi might have had in Liberia. He did not know who brought Massaquoi's daughter from Liberia, he met her at the safe house. Bona had not personally met Gilbert Morrisette, but his brother talked about him in the safe house. He had lived with Defense 01 at Thunder Hills for a short time from 2002 to 2003. Defense 12 is his brother. Defense 12 did not move into the safe house with Massaquoi because he has his own family in Bo, he did not live in the city like Bona and Massaquoi.

Bona testified that his legal first name is Michael. He testified that he had not used the name Agent, but he cannot prevent others from calling him what they want. His friends had called him Agent, 116 and Willow. Gibril Massaquoi had sometimes called him Agent. Bona testified that he has never been a member of the RUF. He was arrested because of his connection to Gibril Massaquoi, people saw him as part of the RUF due to his family ties. The prosecution pointed out that some other people questioned during the case had said that he was a member of the RUF.

Bona responded that he does not know who would have said so, and that the notion of membership should be defined precisely – one cannot be a member of an armed group without being trained to do so.

Final question from the defense

The witness testified that he had been a member of the political party that followed the RUF, the RUFP.

Witness Gilbert Morrisette is heard

The defense questions Gilbert Morrisette

The defense began by asking Gilbert Morrisette about his educational and professional background. Morrisette testified that he graduated the Royal Canadian Police Academy. He worked for the Special Court for Sierra Leone between 2002 and 2008. He started as an Assistant Chief Investigator under Dr. Alan White and after Dr. White's departure, he became the Chief Investigator of the Special Court. He reported to the heads of the Criminal Investigations Unit and the Victim and Witness Section. His office, the Office of the Prosecutor and the Investigation Unit were a part of the Special Court.

Morrisette had been working for a short while at the Special Court when Dr. Alan White and Corinne Dufka introduced him to Gibril Massaquoi in 2002. Corinne Dufka was a human rights investigator, who had known Massaquoi beforehand. Morrisette attended some of the interviews the OTP conducted with Massaquoi, but only at the beginning. He could not remember exactly when these interviews began, but estimated that they started very early, maybe around 2002. The OTP was seeking any information Massaquoi had in relation to the civil war in Sierra Leone, all the atrocities that he knew about. They were conducted on Special Court premises, and sometimes in hotel rooms or at safe houses. Morrisette had also met Massaquoi outside these interviews. He testified that he may have met him briefly after an interview, as he was waiting to be transported back to the safe house. Morrisette could not recall Dr. Alan White or any other interviewer meeting with Gibril Massaquoi outside the interviews.

Morrisette testified that almost right after the beginning of the interviews, Massaquoi was brought to the VWS for protection. He explained the different offices of the court that worked with witnesses.

The witness stated that it was likely that Massaquoi had a Witness Protection Agreement. When this Agreement was drafted in October 2002, Massaquoi was under the Witness Management Unit and was transferred under the Witness Protection Unit after it was signed. The Witness Protection Unit placed Massaquoi in a safe house, but Morrisette could not remember when this took place. He had met with Massaquoi while he was living in a safe house. These meetings were held at the OTP office or in a hotel, such as Mamba Point. The meetings were held based on the request of the prosecutor's office or the investigation unit.

Morrisette recalled one unofficial meeting, where no documents were prepared. Massaquoi contacted Morrisette once, he was upset about not being allowed to leave the safe house. Morrisette called the director of the Witness Management Unit and picked up Massaquoi from the safe house to join him and two other members of the OTP. It was a Sunday afternoon and

they went to the beach. No documents were drafted for this meeting, which Morrisette described as a "social meeting." Morrisette was not aware of any private meetings between Dr. Alan White and Massaquoi.

The witness testified that Massaquoi was always available for a meeting when one was requested. The meetings were arranged quickly after the request had been sent, only 10 to 20 minutes later. Morrisette was not aware of Massaquoi leaving the safe house without authorization or leaving the first safe house for a long period of time. Morrisette was not aware of the type of protection Massaquoi had before being placed in the safe house.

Neither Morrisette nor anyone else from the Special Court had asked Massaquoi to go to Liberia. Morrisette speculated that the validity of Witness Protection Agreement that Massaquoi had signed would have ended if he committed any war crimes or participated in any combat while under the agreement. The decision to end the agreement would have come from the OTP. According to Morrisette, no such decision was ever taken.

The witness testified that it was possible that, in 2003, he would have contacted Massaquoi on the telephone without meeting with him. He could have called Massaquoi or vice versa. The witness knew of Sam Bockarie. He had not been involved with him other than when his body was brought to Sierra Leone. Morrisette went to the airport to meet the plane carrying Bockarie's body. He could not remember when this took place, but speculated that it was on a Sunday. At the time, Gibril Massaquoi was in the safe house. Morrisette was not aware of any role he may have had in bringing Sam Bockarie's body to Sierra Leone. He was just told by Dr. Alan White to go to the airport to collect the body. The witness could not say how the body of Sam Bockarie was identified, he was not present when it occurred. Sam Bockarie was a member of the RUF and a part of Charles Taylor's troops.

Morrisette testified that Gibril Massaquoi was a spokesman in the RUF. He was not sure whether he held a high rank in the organization. The reason why he was not indicted by the Special Court was because of his cooperation as a witness. Gibril Massaquoi was a crucial witness for the OTP as he had many connections within the RUF and with Charles Taylor. Massaquoi was placed in a safe house due to concerns over his security. RUF fighters went to Liberia through Lofa county to join Charles Taylor's troops.

The witness explained that the investigative team also conducted interviews in Liberia. People were questioned on the RUF's role in the Liberian civil war, the RUF's connections with Charles Taylor, and Taylor's role in the conflicts. These interviews were conducted all over Liberia, in Lofa county, Monrovia and elsewhere. The witness stated that everything could be checked in the archives of the Special Court registry. Morrisette participated in these interviews, as did Alan White and Corinne Dufka. In total, there were 12 to 15 investigators. Morrisette had read through some of these interviews, and had passed them on to Mr. Haddad, the head of the Criminal Intelligence Unit at the Special Court, who entered them onto his database. He estimated that the investigators of the Special Court conducted a hundred interviews in Liberia. The names Angel and Angel Massaquoi came up in these interviews, they were nicknames for Gibril Massaquoi. The witness repeated that everything could be checked in the archives, they were all handled by Mr. Haddad.

Morrisette repeated: "The name Gibril Massaquoi came up. Angel Gabriel came up. We knew who he was". He did not know if Angel Gabriel participated in fighting in Liberia. The defense

pointed out that Morrisette had testified in the lower court that the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel had not appeared in the interviews. He testified that he did not remember being asked that and that he would not have replied as such if he was asked.

The prosecution questions Gilbert Morrisette

The prosecution began by asking Gilbert Morrisette why Gibril Massaquoi was chosen as a witness for the Special Court. The witness testified that Massaquoi had valuable information. A witness was not chosen just like that, it was a relationship that had to be built over time. Massaquoi was first a source of Corinne Dufka's, who introduced him to Alan White, who then introduced him to Morrisette. As they met with Massaquoi, the interviews were sent to other units who evaluated the information. Morrisette had not done any specific research into Massaquoi's background, "Everyone in Liberia and Sierra Leone knew who he was". Massaquoi was known as the spokesman of the RUF. He used to be a teacher, he was married and was teaching his own children. The witness did not know Massaquoi's rank, title or history in the RUF. He did not know of any crimes Massaquoi may have committed in Sierra Leone.

Morrisette could not remember when the RUF joined Charles Taylor's forces in Liberia. He speculated that they had a financial motive for doing so. He did not know who would have passed on money to who. He did not know at whose request or under whose direction the RUF fought in Liberia. Morrisette described Gibril Massaquoi as a credible witness. The OTP wanted to know everything he knew about the conflicts in Liberia and Sierra Leone, and what he knew about the RUF. He could not remember how often these interviews took place, or whether there were long breaks between interviews. He testified that it was impossible for Massaquoi to travel abroad between interviews, as he was under the protection and surveillance of the Witness Protection Unit.

The witness did not know how many safe houses Massaquoi had lived in. The investigators had nothing to do with the operation of the safe houses, this was up to the Witness Protection Unit under the Registrar. Morrisette was not sure whether he could remember an attack against one of the safe houses. He did not know whether Massaquoi or his family received visitors in the safe houses. He did not know whether Massaquoi was allowed to leave the safe houses to meet his friends. He could not remember whether Massaquoi placed in the first safe house because of a particular event. He could not remember how many interviews he had done with Massaquoi. He did not know whether any information on Massaquoi's involvement in the peace negotiations in Liberia came up in the interviews. He could not describe the relationship between Massaquoi and Charles Taylor before Massaquoi was transferred into the safe house. He was not aware of Massaquoi supplying diamonds to Charles Taylor. He was not sure that the RUF was bringing diamonds to Charles Taylor, but speculated that they were.

Morrisette had heard of the RUF house in Monrovia. He explained that it was a place where the RUF was staying when they went to discuss business with Charles Taylor. He was "pretty sure" that Massaquoi had been there for that reason.

The prosecution pointed out that Morrisette had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi had gone to Liberia to the RUF house to meet with Charles Taylor and to exchange diamonds to arms. The witness replied that this was very possible. He had become aware of such possible activity through the information obtained in the course of the Special Court's investigations.

Morrisette further testified that the decision to not call Massaquoi as a witness in the RUF or Charles Taylor trials was taken by the prosecutor, not by the investigators. He could not recall ever finding out why. He had been to the airport to receive Sam Bockarie's body, the pathologist had to re-identify the body. It had been identified once before sending it to Sierra Leone. Morrisette went to the airport because his manager had sent him over to "make sure that everything was done properly." Morrisette was not aware what Alan White thought of Massaquoi or his background. The OTP wanted to speak with him because he had a lot of information about the RUF, the arms trade and other subjects, they wanted to have him as an insider witness. Morrisette confirmed that he discussed Massaquoi's background with Alan White, he knew that he thought he would be important for the case, but he didn't know what else he thought of him. The witness repeated that everything could be checked in the archives.

The witness explained that the interviews conducted in Liberia included people from all walks of life. He repeated that everything could be checked in the archives. They wanted to speak with anyone who had any knowledge about what they were investigating. Morrisette confirmed that the names Angel Gabriel or Angel came up in the interviews as being used for Gibril Massaquoi. Morrisette testified that he does not know a person called Michael Bona.

Morrisette repeated that he was not aware of Massaquoi committing crimes in Liberia.

When they conducted interviews in Liberia, they had a mandate to investigate the RUF's activities in the country. The prosecution pointed out that Morrisette had testified in the lower court that they did not have such a mandate, which the witness denied. The defense pointed out that Morrisette had told the Finnish police that the fact that Gibril Massaquoi would have fought in Liberia between 1999 and 2003 did not come up during the investigation and that not a single witness had mentioned Massaquoi. Morrisette could not remember whether he had told the Finnish police so.

April 13, 2023 – Day 45: Various evidence admitted

Today, the Court examined various types of evidence relating to the case. First, the parties drew the Court's attention to written evidence submitted in relation to a particular witness' statement, who had subsequently declined testifying in the case.

Afterwards, the Court watched the recording from District Court of an another witness who had also declined to testify in the Appeals Court.

The last witness of the day, heard via video link, was a criminal investigator for the Special Court of Sierra Leone.

April 13, 2023 [Finland] Day 45: Various evidence admitted

Parties discuss their documentary evidence

The Court began by going through pieces of documentary evidence presented by the prosecution and the defense. The evidence was related to Saleem Vahidy, the head of the Victim and Witness Section at the Special Court for Sierra Leone at the time when Gibril Massaquoi was at the safe house. Saleem Vahidy was unable to testify in court, so his answers to the questions that Finnish police had asked him via email were examined instead. The parties also presented a report of the attack on Gibril Massaquoi's safe house prepared by Mr. Vahidy.

Witness Defense 02's recording is viewed

The Court then watched a video recording of Defense 02's testimony before the lower court.

Witness Corinne Dufka is heard

The defense questions Corinne Dufka

The defense began by asking Corinne Dufka about her educational background. Dufka testified that she has a master's degree from Berkeley University. She currently works as a consultant in Washington DC. Between 1999 and 2003, she worked as a researcher at Human Rights Watch (HRW). She was working on Sierra Leone and West Africa. She worked with HRW until 2020. She also worked as an advisor and researcher for the Office of the Prosecutor (OTP) at the Special Court for Sierra Leone (SCSL) between 2 October 2002 and 1 October 2003, taking a sabbatical year from HRW. Her task was to provide historical context of the conflict in Sierra Leone to the OTP. She looked for witnesses and interviewed them and gathered background information on the atrocities investigated by the SCSL.

Dufka testified that during her time at HRW, before working for SCSL, her job was related to the Second Liberian Civil War. She investigated alleged atrocities by all sides of the conflict by speaking to victims and witnesses. By 'all sides', she was referring to government forces under Charles Taylor and LURD rebel forces. The first time she travelled to Liberia was in early 2002. Most of her investigative work took place in Sierra Leone, where she interviewed refugees who had fled from Liberia. The investigations in Liberia took approximately ten days, where she interviewed victims, witnesses and other people such as diplomats, representatives of human

rights organizations and the UN, as well as researchers in Monrovia and other cities. She could not say how many people she had interviewed in Liberia, but estimated that she interviewed about 250 people in total during her research.

The witness testified that she visited refugee camps in Sierra Leone between 2001 and 2002 seven times but could not recall the dates. The camps were located in Eastern Sierra Leone, in Bo and Kenema. She explained: "There were all kinds of abuses committed by forces sympathetic to the Liberian government. Sexual violence, beatings, kidnappings, destruction of property. They followed a certain pattern because Lofa was an important area for both the rebels and the government forces. There were several, intense battles to take control of Lofa. Towns and villages changed hands".

She also explained collective punishments carried out by government troops: "The Liberian forces considered certain ethnic groups as rebels based on either real or fictitious activities. Government forces used to accuse entire villages, rightly or wrongly, of supporting rebels and committed atrocities to punish them." Dufka had documented one such incident, where a village was recaptured by the government forces and would gather the inhabitants and proclaim a punishment for their alleged support for the rebels. People were locked into houses and burned alive, women and children were raped and people were forced to carry goods for the soldiers back to their base. According to Dufka, such incidents occurred in numerous villages in Lofa county.

Dufka testified further that she had spoken with five witnesses about the events in Kiantahun and Kamatahun in September to December 2001. Dozens of civilians had fled Kiantahun and the government troops took them to Kamatahun, put them inside a house and burned them alive. About 70 people died during this incident. The witnesses seemed to be speaking about the same incident, with most of them saying that it took place in September 2001 in Kamatahun. One of Dufka's colleagues had also received a witness statement from someone who spoke of the same atrocities in Lofa. Five out of these six witnesses mentioned a name believed to be the commander responsible, Zigzag Marzah. This name was mentioned by dozens of people as a person committing atrocities in Lofa. Zigzag Marzah is a Liberian commander, who Dufka described as "notoriously brutal". Her research revealed 61 witnesses or victims of atrocities from different villages in Lofa, where this name came up frequently. Many witnesses named him as the commander. They could recognize the name as he used to introduce himself and other people at the scene said his name. Based on her interviews, Dufka described Zigzag Marzah as having killed, terrorized and kidnapped people in Lofa. Most people said that he was part of the Armed Forces of Liberia (AFL) while some witnesses also mentioned that he was part of Jungle Fire.

According to the witness, the chain of command between various units and forces supporting the government in Lofa was blurred and difficult to understand. There were multiple different troops, such as the AFL, Jungle Fire, Navy Division and the Marine Division. She could not say what the relationships between these units and the AFL were. One witness had described that Jungle Fire wore yellow t-shirts.

Dufka testified that there was another notorious commander mentioned by the witnesses she interviewed, Stanley. She could not recall whether Stanley had been mentioned as being present in Kamatahun. She had compiled the content of her interviews and published a report called "Back to the Brink" and another report. The Back to the Brink report contained two of the

interviews about the events in Kamatahun. The witness estimated that HRW had in total six witness statements about the events in Kamatahun Hassala. She had conducted these interviews in 2002, when she visited the refugee camps in Sierra Leone. The names of various soldiers came up in relation to Kamatahun, but she could only remember the name of Zigzag Marzah. She testified that none of the statements mentioned Gibril Massaquoi as the perpetrator and the names of Angel Gabriel or Angel did not come up during the interviews.

The interviews were conducted using HRW's methodology: people were interviewed one-by-one using an interpreter. Dufka conducted interviews during seven trips in total, with a total of 61 witnesses. Many of the witnesses volunteered the name of the commander, while for some, she asked them if there had been a commander present or if they had heard the name of a commander. She never mentioned the name of a commander to the witnesses.

Dufka testified that her work at the SCSL were not related to the Second Liberian Civil War. She had not come across Gibril Massaquoi being called Angel Gabriel during her time at the SCSL. She could not remember how she had first met Gibril Massaquoi, but she interviewed him multiple times while working for the SCSL. At the time, Massaquoi was a spokesman for the RUF. He was living between Makeni and Freetown. Dufka was working with him because was she speaking with armed groups, and Massaquoi was the RUF's spokesman. She had asked the RUF to release captured civilians and was looking for information about the atrocities committed by and against the RUF. She was not in contact with Massaquoi outside their meetings. She would call Masaquoi and ask for a meeting and it would usually be arranged a day or two afterwards. It was easy to reach Massaquoi at the time. All the meetings were initiated by her.

The witness described the different meetings she had with Massaquoi. The first meeting took place on 22 June 2001, in Makeni. They spoke about the fact that the RUF had committed to releasing all their prisoners, as well as some alleged ceasefire violations. The meeting was held in Massaquoi's home-office. She could not remember for how long the meeting lasted. The second meeting between took place on 5 July 2001 in Makeni, in the same place as the first one. Dufka could not remember for how long this meeting lasted, but estimated that it took an hour. The topic was the same the first meeting. The first four meetings were all about the same topics, the release of the prisoners captured by the RUF and alleged ceasefire violations. The third meeting was held on 11 July 2001 and the fourth on 18 July, both in Makeni. At the time, there had been multiple alleged violations of the ceasefire by the RUF and the situation was tense. This was the reason for the many meetings in a short time period. Dufka was also interviewing witnesses in Makeni hospital.

Dufka further testified that Massaquoi played a role in the Sierra Leonean peace negotiations, but she doesn't know any other details. She knew that Massaquoi was present in multiple important negotiations to bring peace to Sierra Leone. Their fifth meeting was in Freetown on 31 January 2002. They discussed the history of the conflict in Sierra Leone and the command structure towards the end of the war. The sixth meeting was on 18 July 2002 in Freetown, and the seventh meeting took place in August 2002, where they spoke more about the same. During the seventh meeting, she introduced Massaquoi to the SCSL Chief Investigator, Dr. Alan White. After introducing them, she left the meeting. They met at Mamba Point Hotel in Freetown. The eighth meeting was on 5 September 2002 in Freetown, they discussed the command structure in further detail.

The witness had taken detailed notes of each meeting and she pointed out that during the lower court trial, she had noted down the date, location and reason for each meeting. She had also taken notes after talking to two journalists who had met Massaquoi in 2001. Massaquoi had met with these journalists twice, in April and May 2001, in Makeni.

Dufka explained that she introduced Massaquoi to Alan White because she understood after their meetings that Massaquoi had detailed information about the command structure of the rebel groups in Sierra Leone. At the time, it was clear that a Special Court was going to be formed and she wanted to gain understanding of the people potentially responsible for atrocities. The mandate of the court covered only those who were the most responsible. Based on her research, she assessed that Massaquoi was not one of those who bore the greatest responsibility for the atrocities committed by the RUF. She believed that Dr. White would benefit from the information that Massaquoi had. Her assessment of Massaquoi's responsibility was based on the witness testimonies she had received as an investigator for the SCSL. Massaquoi had also told her about his role in the RUF, such as his part in the diamond trade and one incident in 1992. She did not have exact information as to what he was alleged to have done at the time. She added that Massaquoi voluntarily gave up information about his role, which added to his credibility. The SCSL conducted its own investigation into Massaquoi's possible responsibility for atrocities, but she did not have any more information on the investigation.

The witness testified that she found out after her meetings with Massaquoi that he had become a witness for the SCSL. The last time she saw Massaquoi was in September 2002. She could not recall whether his co-operation with the SCSL was common knowledge at any point. It would not have been safe for Massaquoi to travel to Liberia in summer 2003, as the indictments by the SCSL were being prepared around that time. As he had disappeared from the public eye, there were rumors in Freetown that he might be working for the SCSL. The indictment showed that the SCSL had in-depth knowledge of the RUF and the AFRC, which had been supported by Charles Taylor. Dufka explained: "When Charles Taylor's indictment was published in June 2003, I could not see the defendant going to Liberia to support Taylor at the same time as he was trying to build a case before the Special Court for Sierra Leone." The indictment was issued in March 2003 and published in June 2003. When asked whether Charles Taylor had done anything to prevent people testifying against him, she responded: "I can't say what was on Charles Taylor's mind at the time, but two senior RUF commanders had been killed by Liberian forces at the time, Sam Bockarie and Dennis Mingo." According to her sources, these killings something to do with their knowledge of Charles Taylor's role in the Sierra Leonean war. The witness speculated that it was probable that Charles Taylor knew of Massaquoi's co-operation with the SCSL.

Dufka testified that she met L5 various times in Sierra Leone when he was conducting his research with refugees from Liberia. L5 worked with a community-based human rights organization which documented atrocities in Lofa County. She described L5's reports as detailed.

The prosecution questions Corinne Dufka

The prosecution began by asking Dufka whether she was aware of any other position Massaquoi had in the RUF. She responded that she believes Massaquoi had different roles in the RUF in the past, but during the time she was involved with him he worked as a spokesman.
She recalled reading somewhere that he had been a commander in the RUF. She believed that he had been high-ranking within the RUF as he had been Foday Sankoh's assistant. Dufka explained that she had not asked Massaquoi about his role in the RUF, as she knew from the media that he

was the spokesman. She testified that they did discuss Massaquoi's previous roles within the RUF, but not in detail. Massaquoi had spoken about the execution of NPFL fighters by the RUF early during the Sierra Leonean war. She speculated that this happened in Kailahun district in the early 90s. Dufka could not recall if Massaquoi elaborated on his involvement in the incident.

Dufka was aware of the RUF's involvement in the Second Liberian Civil War. She testified that in late 1999, Sam Bockarie got into a conflict with the RUF leadership and left for Liberia with hundreds of RUF fighters. They joined the Liberian security forces and fought for Charles Taylor.

Massaquoi had not mentioned that he had been to Liberia. She could not remember whether he had mentioned his role in the RUF external delegation. She could not remember anything about Massaquoi being involved with Charles Taylor. She had read some articles about the war in Sierra Leone and Massaquoi had mentioned that he had been a part of the diamond trade. She could not remember any details of what he had told her about the diamond trade. Dufka was not aware of the RUF house in Monrovia. She confirmed that Massaquoi never mentioned that he had been in Liberia in the early 2000s.

The witness testified that she was not in contact with Massaquoi between their meetings on 8 July 2001 and 31 January 2002. She had no idea what he was doing during this period. She confirmed that they never discussed arms deals. She considered Massaquoi a credible witness, who provided information she needed: "I think he seemed very honest about the fact that he knew about the wrongs done by the RUF. He told me that he was involved in one of the atrocities. He also gave detailed information about the command structure of the AFRC and the RUF. This information was very typical and fitted our methodology as it could be corroborated by other witnesses."

Dufka could not recall what the Truth and Reconciliation Committee had written about Massaquoi in their report. When the prosecution pointed out that the report stated that there were reservations about Massaquoi's statements, as he often downplayed his own role, Dufka responded that the report was published after their meetings. She did not know why the SCSL did not hear Massaquoi as a witness in the Charles Taylor trial. She did not know where he lived in 2003. She did not know about his housing or security arrangements after he had entered into the witness protection agreement. They had not discussed his participation in elections in 2002.

The witness testified that she did not think that Massaquoi would have been indicted by the SCSL. Her idea of the potential perpetrators the most responsible for atrocities did not include him, as he spent a part of the war in prison. According to her research, Massaquoi was not a commander on the battlefield and did not commit or order atrocities during the time period under the SCSL's mandate. She based this assessment on discussions she had with victims, witnesses and people with knowledge of the war in Sierra Leone. She explained that she sought to verify the information that Massaquoi gave her from other sources. She recalled reading newspaper articles about Massaquoi's possible co-operation with the SCSL, but could not remember which articles. She explained where the rumor about his co-operation came from: Massaquoi was living and spending a lot of time with former RUF members. The fact that, when they were arrested, he did not appear on the indictments and was not arrested himself, gave room for speculation. She confirmed that her statement that Charles Taylor likely knew about Massaquoi's work with the SCSL was her own speculation.

Dufka mentioned a study from 2004, where former Sierra Leonean and Liberian fighters had been interviewed. Some of them had mentioned that Dennis Mingo and Sam Bockarie were killed because they knew about Charles Taylor's support for the war in Sierra Leone. Dennis Mingo was also known as Superman. He was killed in November 2001.

The witness confirmed that she had not been to Lofa herself. The five people who mentioned the events in Kamatahun were all adults, both men and women. Some of them were from Kiantahun. They had all had been there to witness the events in Kamatahun. Some of the Liberian fighters she had interviewed had mentioned Sierra Leoneans and the RUF. None of them mentioned that RUF commanders committed atrocities in Lofa.

Dufka testified that she had spoken to L5 in 2021. She had contacted him because she thought that the information he had may be useful for the Finnish police. She called him to ask if she could give some of the information he gave her to the Finnish police.

She could not say how certain the witnesses who had mentioned Zigzag Marzah were of the commander's identity. Numerous witnesses identified Zigzag and Stanley as the commanders at the scene, some of them mentioned that Zigzag was giving orders. She had not been to Lofa herself, and neither had the other HRW researchers gathering information at the time. Dufka could not tell whether Massaquoi was telling her the whole truth about his participation in the RUF, but he never refused to answer a question.

April 14, 2023 – Day 46: Experts are heard

Today, the Court finished the April sessions in Finland by hearing the opinion of two experts in psychology.

The first expert to be heard was called by the Prosecutor during the Appeals Court phase, in response to the report previously presented to the District Court by another expert. The expert discussed, among other things, the effect of trauma on witness testimony and how witness recollections may change over time after experiencing highly traumatic events. Also presented was a critique of the expert report that the District Court had relied upon on in their deliberations.

The second expert had authored the report used during the District Court phase and was called to respond to this critique. In fact, both experts actually agreed on a number of issues relating to witness psychology and trauma. Some differences, however, still remained between the two.

The Court will not be in session for the next few weeks and will resume its hearings in early May in Monrovia, Liberia.

April 14, 2023 [Finland] Day 46: Experts are heard

Expert witness Helinä Häkkänen is heard

The prosecution questions Dr. Helinä Häkkänen

The prosecution began by asking Dr. Häkkänen about her educational background. Dr. Häkkänen testified that she holds a PhD in psychology and is an associate professor in forensic psychology and criminal psychology. She also performs clinical work as a psychotherapist. Her experience in forensic psychology dates to 1996, when she began working for the University of Helsinki and various offices at the Finnish police. She has been working as psychotherapist since 2013 and has written 60 internationally published scientific articles and four books. She has testified as an expert witness dozens of times in Finland and was an accredited expert witness at the International Criminal Court (ICC) between 2005 and 2010. She has worked with refugees from Syria and Iraq, as well as internally displaced people from the Karelia region. Her research covers subjects such as memory function, amnesia and memory behavior related to violent crimes and violent situations, including trauma related to tribunals and criminal procedure and the police's perception of how people behave in courts. Dr. Häkkänen testified that most of her clients in her clinical work are severely traumatized, having experienced situations such as violence and war. For most of her clients, many years have passed after the traumatic events, and for some, decades have passed since the event before they came to her.

The expert opinion that Dr. Häkkänen submitted to the court was based on the expert opinions issued by Dr. Julia Korkman, the pre-trial investigation report prepared by the Finnish police and the judgment of the lower court. She had read the witness testimonies in the pre-trial investigation report.

Dr. Häkkänen detailed the most important factors to be considered in the trial: "First of all, identification. I understand that the acts themselves are not contested, so identification is at the

heart of it. On the other hand, how reliably can a person recall events decades after they have occurred. And also, the role of traumatization in remembering and telling the story. Furthermore, the way in which international criminal tribunals and the Finnish Supreme Court have assessed personal testimony in such cases and its reliability is also relevant."

She stated that she would rather not testify about 'collective culture', as she is not an expert on culture. According to her, the notion of collectivism does not usually arise in the context of psychotherapy. Based on her clinical experience, people who have experienced traumatic events usually do not want to discuss such experiences as discussing them brings up feelings of fear and flashbacks. They generally avoid recalling such memories. According to Dr. Häkkänen, human beings, by default, remember situations where their life is at stake very well, at least when it comes to the details crucial for survival. They are able to recall these details in safe circumstances, where they also have the courage to face the memories. In psychotherapy, it might take hours before a client is ready to go through such issues.

Dr. Häkkänen then described her methodology. With her client, they select a specific memory and try to retrace it. She can often see how easy or hard it is for the clients to recall such memories. Recalling details such as the ones discussed in this trial is usually very difficult. People often say that they would not want to relive such memories. Such memories do not appear at once. They appear in phases and usually memories are supplemented during follow-up sessions. The first recollection is often rather limited and people only get the courage to face their memories as therapy progresses. Clients may also dissociate, a psychological defense mechanism where a person sees themselves from the outside, making it twice as hard to accurately recall the memory. She gave the example of international criminal jurisprudence which has demonstrated that child soldiers are often cold and emotionless when testifying.

The witness further testified that it is possible to recognize a traumatized witness based on their behavior in court. If a person starts shaking while recalling an event, this usually means that the event in question has severely traumatized them. She also pointed out that the hearing situation itself can also cause people to shake, because it can be a highly stressful situation. Besides the shaking which was reported for some of the witnesses, she testified that it is not possible for her to determine whether a particular witness is traumatized or not.

According to Dr. Häkkänen, the effect trauma has on a person's memory is highly individual. According to current research, a traumatic event can still traumatize a person even decades afterwards, if they have not received proper treatment. The traumatic event can have the person being mentally present in the traumatic situation while recalling it. This can lead them to behave as if they were still in that situation: scarcity of speech, strong bodily reactions, ambiguities, incoherence, confusion, completions, omissions, etc. She explained that for this reason, she has previously argued that the case law of the Finnish Supreme Court on evaluating the credibility of witness testimonies is too demanding when it comes to traumatized witnesses, as the degree of uniformity in various testimonies given throughout a criminal trial required is too high. She cited research that demonstrates that post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD) is prevalent with about a third of individuals who have experienced war, while the connection between PTSD and weaker cognitive functions has also been demonstrated. According to her, for example requiring a person to recall precise dates, decades after the fact, is too much to ask for.

The witness explained that the testimony of a traumatized person is more susceptible to change than that of a non-traumatized witness, while there are also examples of instances where highly

traumatized witnesses were able to recall details even decades afterwards with a surprising accuracy. It is important to distinguish between a person's ability to remember a fact, from their ability to produce the memory trace, especially in a stressful situation such as testifying in court.

Dr. Häkkänen further testified that it is easier for a traumatized witness to recall details that were crucial for their survival than other details of the traumatic event. Non-crucial details are more prone to be forgotten over time than crucial details. Traumatized individuals are also generally less willing to discuss their experiences. Another possible factor contributing to this unwillingness could be sexual violence, often experienced in armed conflicts, as it usually creates a strong stigma.

On the passage of time since the traumatic event, Dr. Häkkänen explained that details crucial for survival can survive even decades without being forgotten. Non-crucial details are more prone to being forgotten. People generally remember traumatic events rather well, apart from events that occurred when a person was two or three years old, as memory is not yet fully developed at that age. In psychotherapy, it is common that once a memory is being worked on, the person's memory begins to expand and they can remember more and more details. When emotions are worked on, the stagnation in the memory system is removed. People may not have difficulty remembering things, but they have difficulty, for example, in verbalizing things around the memory. Dr. Häkkänen cited a study conducted among 78 survivors of Nazi concentration camps 40 years after they were released. A substantial number of them recalled the events in a detailed manner despite the decades that had passed since the events. Some of them had forgotten the name of the commander of the camp, while 90% of the survivors remembered it correctly. 80% could identify the commander from a photo, although this identification procedure was not valid as only one photograph was shown.

Dr. Häkkänen also referred to further studies conducted among war veterans and refugees demonstrating that the memories changed every time the interviewees recalled events. She testified that a person might remember a fact in one manner the first time they are asked to recall it, and in another manner the next time they recall it. This is a completely natural reaction caused by the person's memory. Current research does not recognize a point in time after which memory stops changing. Memories are prone to change over time in two ways: some memories are forgotten, becoming impossible to recall, while others could come back after initially being forgotten, either as full memories or partially, getting more accurate over time. She explained that the idea that additions to memory are a sign of unreliability is not in line with psychology, nor with her own clinical experience. She described the ways a testimony might change over time. Reasons for such changes include new information, time to recall, rush, interview interaction, interpretation, perceived feedback from the first interview, whether the person feels safe when recalling the memory, etc. There is a huge number of possible contributors to such changes in testimonies.

The witness further pointed out that the perception of time in Africa is different. The ICC, for example, does not give much weight to the fact that a witness makes a mistake in recalling the date or cannot determine it at all.

As for the identification of the alleged perpetrator during the police investigation, Dr. Häkkänen testified that there are two types of witnesses: those who knew the perpetrator beforehand and those who did not. Only the latter truly recognize the perpetrator based on their face when shown a photograph by the police, making their identification more psychologically valuable. She

explained that elements such as the lighting and distance from the perpetrator at the time of the events could impact the possibility of correct identification. As for the present case, she pointed out that often a witness who had identified someone else than the defendant had chosen somebody wearing a hat in the photo. If the perpetrator was wearing a hat at the scene, this could mislead the witnesses when looking at the photographs.

Dr. Häkkänen referred to a study that had examined the evaluation of witness credibility by international criminal tribunals. International tribunals have had to evaluate whether there are objective grounds for determining whether a witness' testimony is based on something other than their own experiences. Some decisions have deemed that inaccuracies or lack of uniformity between testimonies do not automatically discredit the testimonies or witnesses. A lack of clocks, watches and calendars has also been taken into account in international criminal trials when evaluating the witnesses' ability to recall the time and date of an event.

The defense questions Helinä Häkkänen

The defense began by asking for Dr. Häkkänen's observations on Dr. Korkman's latest expert opinion. Dr. Häkkänen stated that they seemed to both agree on two issues. Firstly, they both agree that the passage of time weakens an eyewitness' ability to identify the perpetrator. However, this conclusion only applied to eyewitness, not direct victims of violence. Currently, there is not much research on how direct victims of violence identify perpetrators. She disagreed with Dr. Korkman's statement that humans are inherently poor at identification, especially after a long period of time. She explained that neither of the sources cited by Dr. Korkman address that issue: the first source concerned the relationship between recognition accuracy and recognition reliability, and the second source dealt with the physical distance between the person identifying and the person being identified. She also criticized the fact that the studies cited by Dr. Korkman only dealt with external eyewitnesses, not the direct victims of violent crimes and their ability to identify the perpetrator, a phenomenon currently unknown to the field of forensic psychology. As to the 'co-witness phenomenon', she stated it is known that a memory can be shaped by information from other people, however it is not something that she had encountered in psychotherapy as having a substantial effect on memory recollection.

The witness explained that there is no way to tell whether a person's memory recollection has changed or become more accurate over time. She could not say whether a person's certainty of the accuracy of their memory could correspond to reality.

Dr. Häkkänen further criticized Dr. Korkman's observations on amnesia, she did not see anything in the present case relating to amnesia. She was not aware of any studies about the amnesia of wartime experiences. She cited a scholar from Harvard University, who has stated that traumatic memories are never completely forgotten except due to external physical trauma, such as a hit to the head. Current research does not suggest that adults would be capable of completely forgetting their wartime experiences. She stated: "Today, it is not believed that it is possible to completely forget a war event in adulthood. Those memories are islands of recollection, they are fragmented, they are recalled in stages."

She also criticized some of the studies referred to in Korkman's report for being methodologically flawed or inapplicable to the circumstances examined in the present trial. She criticized Dr. Korkman's report itself for not fulfilling the scientific standards for an expert report submitted in a trial.

On the crucial and non-crucial details for survival, Dr. Häkkänen gave examples of the color of the perpetrator's hat as a non-crucial detail, while the fact that they were told that they are going to die could be seen as a crucial detail. Memories can be sounds, smells, or physical memories. Trauma can affect the existence of directly contradictory elements in testimonies, making two testimonies by the same person incompatible with each other. However, it is scientifically impossible to conclude whether trauma is the factor that causes such contradictions. The witness listed other factors which could contribute to contradictory memory recollections. Contradictory elements can also be the result of intentional lying, but according to Dr. Häkkänen, the research on lying demonstrates that a person who is lying often seeks to maintain their story as much as possible. She suggested that the way to verify which testimony is the most accurate is to link it to other witness accounts.

According to Dr. Häkkänen, the fact that the witness might later receive information about the potential perpetrator, such as their name, would not change their memory of the act itself. If the person has not seen the perpetrator themselves and trusts the person who provides them with the information, they may start to believe it. Who a witness may trust depends on their personal context, but most people trust some form of authority. An adult is also capable of completely fabricating a recollection of something. However, Dr. Häkkänen stated that the current research on this is not applicable to the present case. She mentioned one study, but noted that the authors of the study concluded that the data is not reliable, and conclusions drawn from this study would be speculative. She noted that it is possible that an adult creates an erroneous memory of something without external influences, but this is very difficult to verify.

On the fact that some of the witnesses had spoken about their experiences with others, Dr. Häkkänen stated that she would assume that these would mostly be external eyewitnesses to the events, not the direct victims of the violence, and stated that she had no research data on this. She explained that discussion could either refine or distort memories, but it is difficult to conduct research on memories becoming more accurate on the basis of external effects.

Dr. Häkkänen further stated that the effects of trauma and PTSD are highly individual. These effects depend on a person's background, their prior experiences, and the help they may have received after the fact. However, the concrete effect that trauma has on human memory is similar from one person to another. Trauma contributes to the fragmentation of memories, making testimonies appear less logical when it comes to the non-crucial details. But for details crucial for survival, a traumatized person might remember them surprisingly well. She explained that an assessment of trauma requires a medical examination, an assessment by a psychotherapist or a symptom assessment by a clinical psychologist. It is impossible to determine that somebody has been traumatized based on the changes in their testimony alone. Physical or psychological factors can also point to traumatization, such as visible shaking or dissociation during a hearing, however Dr. Häkkänen also pointed out that these effects could also be caused by stress experienced during the hearing.

According to Dr. Häkkänen, current forensic psychology does not have any tool at its disposal to evaluate the credibility of a witness statement. When asked about a newspaper article she had written about the present trial, she stated: "The fact is, war is a traumatic experience in general. I've written a few articles about how judges in particular understand how traumatization manifests itself in people's gestures and body language. That was part of the reason I knew these situations were challenging." Her aim was to raise attention towards the issue of traumatization and the challenges it poses to evaluating witness testimonies.

Expert witness Julia Korkman is heard

The defense questions Julia Korkman

The defense began by asking about the background material Dr. Korkman had used when drafting the two expert opinions for the present trial. Dr. Korkman testified that she was asked by the Finnish police to summarize scientific research on questions presented by the Finnish police and the prosecution. She was not provided with the pre-trial investigation report or any other documents related to the case. Dr. Korkman testified that she is an associate professor in forensic psychology. She has led multiple research projects on themes such as eyewitness identification, and crimes committed against children and their investigation. Currently she is involved in research projects on victims of rape. She is also supervising a doctoral thesis on memory recall in legal contexts. She has also worked on the theme of the influence of culture on memory recollection and recall.

The witness was asked to explain the contents of her reports in more detail. She began by explaining that humans are herd animals and are susceptible to including the opinions and perceptions of others into their own. This phenomenon has been extensively researched in lab conditions. She described two cases, the Viking Sally and the Anna Lindh stabbing case, where this had been observed. She explained that this effect could also produce positive results, as humans are capable of receiving correct memories and observations from others. She stated that she could not say whether the definition of a 'trustworthy person' differs across cultures, adding that a child, for example, would always trust their parents.

According to Dr. Korkman, humans have a strong tendency to supplement gaps in memories, particularly in rapidly evolving situations. She described a case of police violence in the US which psychology experts examined, suggesting that the fact that police violence had been widely discussed in the US at the time created a preconception that influenced how people interpreted the situation. She explained that a person does not necessarily notice when their memory is being affected by preconceptions or any other factors external to the memory itself. She also explained that there is a difference between external eyewitnesses and direct victims, as "the emotionally important things are best remembered". Current research demonstrates that all memories are susceptible to distortion, but it is difficult to research these issues in a scientifically and ecologically valid way. Research suggests that traumatic experiences are remembered better and for longer than regular, less important events. It is also known that in life-threatening situations, a person may focus on only a few details, for example through gun focus.

Current research indicates that traumatic memories contain more emotion that regular ones. A person that is traumatized tends to demonstrate avoidance behavior, to avoid anything that reminds them of the traumatic situation. Details that remain in a person's memory include those details that were life-threatening. There has been research that a very traumatic situation makes face recognition more difficult.

When explaining the impact of time on recollection of traumatic memories, Dr. Korkman stated that most studies refer to an old study from 1885. According to this study, most of the content of a memory is forgotten almost immediately after the fact, and as more time passes, details are forgotten more slowly. If central details about an event are still remembered after a decade, they most likely do not disappear from memory at all. Dr. Korkman stated that her previous statement had been misunderstood by the lower court, and that memories are malleable and can change

constantly. As for whether traumatic memories are more fragmented than memories on a non-traumatic event, she responded: “The criterion of consistency is not realistic, regardless of whether the situation is traumatic or not.”

On inconsistencies in witness testimonies, Dr. Korkman explained that the way the questions are asked must be considered. Open questions favor memory recollection. If interpretations are given and the person first denies it and then later says otherwise, it can be difficult to exclude that the person has not been influenced by the questioning. Leading questions can distort memories. While the majority of studies in the field have been done among on university students in the West, the basics of memory are universal. The witness explained a process by which a person subconsciously creates a memory using information that they have received afterwards.

Dr. Korkman had discussed the role of culture on memory recollection in her expert opinion. She explained: “Talking about cultural differences is always a gross generalization. However, it has long been argued that the West is a rather individualistic culture, where events are defined by the experiencer. Whereas other cultures, such as East Asian or African countries, have a more collectivist culture. For example, when adults reflect on their childhood, community-based cultures are more likely to remember community experiences, while Americans remember what happened to themselves.” She added: “I know of cases in Finland where people have imagined that they have been in a case where they have not, just because they heard so much about it. I would consider this a rather generic, universal trait. It’s possible, of course, that this tendency is greater in more communal cultures, but I don’t know that there is any research evidence for this.” She mentioned that the issue had arisen in a Finnish war crimes trial in Rwanda and noted that “Finnish authorities seem to have difficulty with people from Arab backgrounds when they give broad accounts of things.”

Next, the witness discussed the notion of co-witnessing, stating that discussing events with someone considered close can affect a person’s memories. She noted that the effect of trauma on memories is highly individual and varies from one person to another. It is very difficult to determine whether a person has been traumatized based on their behavior during an interview or a court hearing. A change in testimonies alone should not be used to conclude that a person is traumatized. Post-traumatic memories could be more susceptible to distortion. Post-traumatic recollection often involves nightmares, which can increase the risk of confusing the real with the imagined.

Dr. Korkman was asked to comment on the criticisms raised by Dr. Häkkänen in her first expert opinion. She explained that she agreed with most of the points raised by Dr. Häkkänen but disagreed with others.

The prosecution questions Julia Korkman

The prosecution began by asking whether the research projects Dr. Korkman had been involved in had to do with memory functioning in violent situations. Dr. Korkman stated that she had studied the testimonies of children who have experienced sexual and violent crimes. The context of asylum interviews also has a lot to do with traumatized people, but not necessarily in a criminal context. Dr. Korkman had not examined the case material during the preparation of her second report, but had looked at the lower court judgment.

According to Dr. Korkman, the fact that witnesses cannot remember exact dates or times in relation to the events should not be used to draw any particular conclusions. She also pointed out that cultural aspects, such as if people are not used to using a calendar, could also have a large impact on this. The lack of correct photo identifications should also not be given much weight as the elements of a credible identification are hard to achieve. In general, Dr. Korkman stated that an identification of a perpetrator effectuated two decades after the events in question should not be given much weight.

May 4, 2023 – Day 47: The Appeals Court returns to Monrovia

Today, the Appeals Court began its second official trip to Monrovia, Liberia to hear witnesses in the Gibril Massaquoi case.

This time, the Court is seeking to hear witnesses from neighboring Sierra Leone. Unlike during the Lower Court phase, the Finnish authorities did not manage to secure permission from the government of Sierra Leone for the Court to come to Freetown and hold hearings there. Therefore, the witnesses are being brought to Monrovia to testify.

No witnesses were heard in person today. The Court viewed one witness' testimony from the District Court on a videotape, as they could not come to testify this time around. Additionally, the Court examined some written evidence brought by the Defense.

The Court will continue to hear witnesses tomorrow, Friday 5 May. This trip is scheduled to last until 12 May.

May 4, 2023 [Liberia] Day 47: The Appeals Court returns to Monrovia

Witness Defense 04's testimony is viewed

The Turku Court of Appeal began its second trip to Monrovia by watching the recording of Defense 04's testimony before the lower court.

Defense documentary evidence is examined

The Court examined various new pieces of documentary evidence presented by the defense. The first piece of evidence was a news piece from 12 January 2003 discussing the second round of Paramount Chief elections in Gallinas-Perry. The second piece of evidence was an annex to Corinne Dufka's police interview. Based on a request from the Finnish police, Corinne Dufka had written down some names from her notebook of commanders of government forces present in Lofa. The third piece of evidence was a letter signed by Massaquoi on 17 August 2001 at the RUF headquarters in Makeni. The defense also referred to a piece of documentary evidence presented during an earlier session in relation to Background 1's testimony of his experiences in Klay.

Prosecution documentaryevidence is examined

The prosecution also presented an additional piece of documentary evidence, the work certificates of Employee 1 mentioned in his testimony.

May 5, 2023 – Day 48: Defense witnesses from Sierra Leone

Today, the Court heard the first witnesses of its second trip to Liberia. They had come from Sierra Leone to testify in Monrovia.

The first witness, a personal connection of Mr Massaquoi, described their relationship and Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts from the years 1999 to 2003, the years under examination in this trial. The witness was also questioned about Mr Massaquoi's family life before his entry into the witness protection program in Sierra Leone.

The second witness, a former RUF fighter, told the Court about an operation undertaken by the RUF in 2000, where troops crossed from Sierra Leone into Liberia. He also spoke of his encounters with Mr Massaquoi during the early 2000s.

The Court will continue hearing witnesses on Monday.

May 5, 2023 [Liberia] Day 48: Defense witnesses from Sierra Leone

Witness Defense 13 is heard

The defense questions Defense 13

The defense began by asking where Defense 13 had met Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 13 testified that she had met him in Freetown in 2000, she could not remember the exact month. He was working as an assistant to the RUF's leader, Foday Sankoh. Defense 13 heard him speaking on the news, he was a spokesman. He worked on Spur Road and lived in Thunder Hills, in Kissi, Freetown. Defense 13 lived in Tembe Town and Patton Street. Defense 13 and Gibril Massaquoi did not live together in Freetown. He was living with his wife, brother, cousin and children. The witness never went to his apartment, he would come to her in Tembe Town. The witness and Gibril Massaquoi were dating. He visited her many times.

Defense 13 testified that Massaquoi travelled abroad. After the 8 May event in Freetown, he went to Abidjan. The witness herself went to Banjul, The Gambia. While she was there, he contacted her and told her that he was going to Monrovia for peace talks. Many people were being chased after 8 May 2000 and the witness had to escape, it took her two months at most to go to The Gambia. In Banjul, she used a satellite phone to contact Gibril Massaquoi. He told her he was staying in the province in Sierra Leone, because he could not be in the city. The witness could not recall the places he said he went to. Gibril told her that he was on his way to Monrovia, so she left The Gambia and went to Monrovia. She could not recall when she left, estimating that it was in August 2000. The witness reached Monrovia before Gibril, but he arrived not long after. When she first got to Monrovia, she was living with two friends whose names she provided to the court. Gibril Massaquoi was living in a guest house at the time. They would visit each other in Monrovia, she went to the guest house once. Later, Gibril and the other people living in the guesthouse moved and rented an apartment in Congo Town. At the guesthouse, he lived with Abdul Razak and others. Abdul Razak had a girlfriend, but the witness could not recall her name. Massaquoi came to her every time he wanted to, he came daily if he could. He also spent the night at the witness' place a few times.

The witness testified that she got pregnant in Monrovia, around September. A month after her arrival, she found out that she was pregnant. The child was born in Freetown. Gibril left Defense 13 in Monrovia when he left for Freetown. Not long later, she also travelled to Freetown. This was in 2000. According to Defense 13, the child was born on 5 July 2001. She could not recall how long after her arrival in Freetown the child was born. When the witness arrived in Freetown, Massaquoi was in Thunder Hills, Kissi, with his wife. When asked about his work, the witness testified: "I only know he was going about the peace process, because he was a key player in the peace process". Defense 13 testified that she saw Gibril in Freetown before the birth of her child, he stayed with her until she gave birth. They met every 2 to 3 days until the child's birth. He also came to see her and the child often after Defense 13 had given birth. They always met at her place. He stopped visiting in 2002 or 2003, the witness heard from one of his family members that he was working with the UN and trying to get Foday Sankoh in court. This was in early 2003. She did not know where he was living when he was working with the UN.

The prosecution questions Defense 13

The prosecution began by asking about the timing of Defense 13's meeting Massaquoi in Freetown. She clarified that they had met before 8 May 2000. When she was in The Gambia and they spoke on the satellite phone, she knew that he was in Freetown because she called him, not the other way around. When she left him in Freetown, nobody knew where anyone was. When she called him from The Gambia, she was under the impression that he was in the province. She called shortly after arriving to Banjul, but she could not estimate how long after 8 May 2000 this was. They spoke through the satellite phone several times and he told her that he was going to Monrovia. Massaquoi had the satellite phone with him. The witness paid for the trip from Banjul to Monrovia herself.

Defense 13 did not know of someone called Defense 09 living in the guest house in Monrovia, testifying that anyone could have lived there. She did not know who owned the guest house. Massaquoi travelled to West Africa from Monrovia, to Nigeria and Mali. He was never gone for a long time. This was in autumn 2000, as the witness was back in Freetown in 2001. She left for Freetown because she did not want to give birth in Monrovia. Massaquoi had returned to Freetown before Defense 13 left Monrovia.

The prosecution pointed out that Defense 13 had testified in the lower court that she was uncertain about the date of birth of her child, but had mentioned the date 5 June. The witness maintained that her child was born on 5 July 2001. She gave birth at home and remembered the date. She did not register the child at the hospital. The witness provided the name of the child to the court. She confirmed that Massaquoi did not leave Freetown before she gave birth as he met with her every 2 to 3 days beforehand. She could not remember him leaving Freetown at the time. After giving birth, he came to see her often, every few days, when he wanted to see his child. This continued until 2003. When she did not see him for a few months, she did some research and found out from his family that he was cooperating with the UN. She estimated that their child was two years old when she found out that Massaquoi was working with the UN. She had found out that the former RUF leader had been charged with war crimes and Massaquoi had been named as a witness. She could not recall which family member told her this. She did not know the details of his work with the UN, or whether he travelled. After this, she never saw him again, she only heard that he had been taken to Finland.

The prosecution pointed out that Defense 13 had testified in the lower court that she knew that Gibril had travelled abroad with the people from the Special Court, and that she had heard this from Gibril's brothers. The witness explained that the only travel she knew about was his going to Finland. The prosecution also pointed out that Defense 13 had testified in the lower court that she had met Gibril, when he came to see their child, after he started cooperating with the Special Court. She replied that maybe he came to see their child when she wasn't there, but she was not aware of it. She had tried to go meet him herself, but she had been told that he had security and that she wouldn't be allowed to see him. The witness testified that she does not know Defense 21.

Defense 13 testified that someone came to pick her up in Freetown on her way from Monrovia. She could not remember how she had travelled from Monrovia to Freetown, but somebody was there in Freetown to help her. She gave the nickname of the person who came to pick her up to the court. She testified that she got to Freetown on her own, and he met her in Freetown and helped her with her luggage and the child. She was travelling with her friend, they were three in total. The child was her friend's child. She could not remember the name of the child. The witness knew that Gibril had a daughter in Monrovia, but this was not the child she travelled from Monrovia to Freetown with. She saw Gibril's daughter later in Freetown. She speculated that one of Gibril's friends had come to pick her up from Monrovia. She could not remember when this happened, but she was in Freetown at the time. Defense 13 did not know why Gibril did not pick his daughter up himself.

Further questions from the defense

Defense 13 had heard of the DDR meetings, it was a post-war program in Sierra Leone. She speculated that Gibril was involved as he was member of the RUF and all RUF members had to go through the process. She testified that he had participated in meetings to do with the program. The defense pointed out that Defense 13 had testified in the lower court that she had come to Freetown right before her child was born in April-May 2001 and the child was born in July. The witness responded that she could not remember when she had travelled to Freetown. She estimated that it was in early 2001.

Witness Defense 11 is heard

The defense questions Defense 11

The defense began by asking Defense 11 where he had met Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he met him in 1999 in Lunsar, when he was working as a radio operator for Superman. They were both members of the RUF. Defense 11 provided his codename to the court. He testified that he spent 7 months in total in Lunsar. They retreated and returned after the AFRC fell. After Lunsar, Defense 11 went to Makeni, in early 2000. He came to Freetown that same year when Foday Sankoh was released, he called Defense 11 to be his radio operator. The witness worked on Spur Road, where Massaquoi was working as a personal assistant to Foday Sankoh. They saw each other almost every day. They worked on Spur Road until the attack in May. Defense 11, Gibril Massaquoi and others managed to escape from Spur Road and they spent the rest of the day on a hill to the East of the apartment. During the night, they began to move. It took them 11 days to reach Lunsar. At some point, they were surprised by the enemy and only some of them made it to their destination. The witness listed the 7 people in total who made it to Lunsar. They had left Foday Sankoh at the base of the hill. When the soldiers chasing them had

retreated, they went back to look for him but could not find him. In Lunsar, they found out on the radio that Sankoh had been captured. He was never released.

The witness testified that Sankoh's capture meant that the RUF no longer had a functioning chain of command. In Lunsar, Issa, Morris Kallon and others came to pick up Defense 11, Gibril Massaquoi, Superman and everyone else who had escaped from Freetown and took them to Makeni. They spent two days in Makeni before a general assembly was called at Issa's apartment. It was announced that Issa would assume the role of leader. It was also decided that Gibril Massaquoi would remain a personal assistant. This was the only meeting that witness knew of regarding the RUF command structure. After Makeni, they went to Kono, where Issa gave instructions for Superman and a battalion of men to go to Liberia. There was an order to ensure that the route was maintained. LURD forces were fighting there and had cut off the route to Monrovia. The route went through Buedu to Foya. From Foya, the route led to Kolahun and Zorzor. The order was issued in August or September 2000.

Defense 11 testified that he has been to Liberia. He worked as a radio operator for Colonel Eagle. He went to Liberia in August or September 2000. As the route was not open, the troops were divided; some went to Kolahun, some went to Vahun and Defense 11 was on Foya. He stayed in Foya until May 2001 when disarmament began and he returned to Sierra Leone. He went to Kono to hand over his weapons. While he was in Liberia, the witness was always with Eagle while working on his shift. Another radio operator worked the other shift. He was always at the same location with Eagle, Eagle was his commander. Besides Eagle, Superman was also there, he had brought a battalion. They had no base, they were conducting operations around the Foya axis. There were three flanks, Kolahun, Foya and Vahun. The witness had met some of the Liberian commanders, such as Benjamin Yeaten, Zigzag Marzah at the border in Buedu. Zigzag Marzah was the commander the witness knew the best.

The witness testified that the fighting lasted until May 2001 when they retreated for disarmament. Colonel Eagle returned with him to Sierra Leone. Massaquoi's role as a personal assistant was to make sure that the leader would be released. Liberia was decided as the location for peacemaking. Defense 11 saw him with Issa and others on the route to Monrovia travelling on a pickup. Liberia was the location for peacemaking because Charles Taylor had influence over the RUF and other African leaders. Massaquoi was also involved in tripartite meetings. The witness saw him passing by Foya on their way to Monrovia in 2001. Defense 11 was not aware of Massaquoi participating in fighting in Liberia. They returned after two days, he saw them again in Foya. He was not aware of Massaquoi being in Monrovia before this. He was not aware of any RUF soldiers staying in Liberia after they retreated to Sierra Leone.

After returning from Liberia, Defense 11 met Massaquoi in Freetown in 2002. They met at the party office of the RUFP on Boston Street: "He was enlightening people that we are now a party, we should enlighten people so we can win the election". They also met in Thunder Hills, around June. Massaquoi was involved in the tripartite meetings. He travelled with the UN and the government to rebel-controlled areas as part of the DDR process. This process was ongoing before disarmament. The witness also met Massaquoi after the election at Kissi Road Junction.

According to Defense 11, Gibril Massaquoi's code name was Gaffa. It was later changed to Wild Fire. His friends called him Gibou.

The prosecution questions Defense 11

The prosecution began by asking Defense 11 about the battalion Superman was taking to Liberia. There were about 240 men in an RUF battalion: 15 men per squad, 4 squads per battalion. They had three commanders, Superman, Eagle and Mandela. Superman and Eagle went to Liberia with the battalions. Superman was the senior commander of the three, he was the battalion commander. The troops were moved in two groups. The second group followed the first group not long after. Defense 11 was in the first group. There was not enough space for all the men in their vehicles.

The route they were to open was the link between the RUF and Monrovia. It was the way to their closest ally, the Liberian government, the NPFL, led by Charles Taylor. The RUF transported intelligence and supplies through this route. It was also used in the peace negotiations and in seeking the release of Foday Sankoh. The RUF also needed to the route to get basic supplies from Liberia, such as food. Defense 11 was not aware whether the RUF received arms and ammunition from Liberia. The prosecution pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that the RUF had a maintenance route to Monrovia to carry the most of the supplies, such as rice and ammunition, and that Taylor's government was supplying the RUF with ammunition. The witness responded that Taylor supplied ammunition at the beginning of the war, in 1991-1992, not in 2000-2002. Taylor allowed hundreds of RUF fighters to enter Liberia so that the RUF could secure its interests in the area.

Defense 11 explained that the RUF and the Liberians had separate command structures and areas of operations. The Sierra Leoneans were in Vahun, Kolahun and Foya. Foya was the headquarters, while the Liberians were around Zorzor. The RUF and the Liberians did not go into each other's areas of operations. The RUF was an active party in the fighting against LURD. They managed to secure the route until their retreat back to Sierra Leone. The route was used in the peace negotiations by Issa, Massaquoi and the others. They took the route to go to Monrovia to start the peace negotiations. The witness saw the team going back and forth between Monrovia and Sierra Leone once. The route was also used by the RUF to bring food from Liberia.

The other radio operator working for Eagle was H2. The witness testified that he never travelled to Monrovia and was not aware of Eagle travelling to Monrovia while he was in Foya. The RUF had another service route through Vahun, ULC, Lofa Bridge to Monrovia. This route was not used as the road could not handle the vehicles. Most of the bridges were built of logs and they were rotten.

The witness could not remember the exact month in 2001 when he had seen Massaquoi and his team pass Foya. They went to Monrovia to open negotiations about peace and returned a few days later. The next time he saw Massaquoi was in summer 2002, after disarmament. Defense 11 was not aware of his whereabouts between 2001 and summer 2002. They met in 2002 before the election, in April-May at the RUFP party office. The last time he saw him was in late 2002, at Kissi Road junction. The witness was not aware of any RUF fighting in Liberia after that.

Further questions from the defense

Defense 11 testified that Massaquoi participated in the peace negotiations in Sierra Leone before the tripartite meetings, he was telling RUF fighters to disarm. He also announced the disarmament efforts on the field radio that the witness was operating. His disarmament efforts began in Lunsar and Kambia. Massaquoi was involved in the Abuja I and Abuja II agreement.

Defense 11 travelled with Foday Sankoh to Abuja, where Sankoh was arrested. Gibril Massaquoi was involved in the efforts to have Sankoh released.

Further questions from the prosecution

Defense 11 testified that he had seen Benjamin Yeaten in Buedu. The RUF received supplies from him in 1993, 1995, before they joined the AFRC in 1997. He was not aware of the RUF receiving any supplies from him after 2000. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that the RUF acted independently in Lofa, but received arms and ammunition from Benjamin Yeaten. The witness testified that he did not remember saying so, but if the RUF did receive arms and ammunition, it must have been during an emergency.

May 8, 2023 – Day 49: Former RUF commander takes the stand

Today, the Court heard only one witness, a former RUF commander, who had known Gibril Massaquoi during the Sierra Leonean civil war.

The witness described his experience as a commander of an RUF battalion that moved from Sierra Leone to Liberia to secure a land route in Lofa county, leading from RUF-controlled areas in Sierra Leone to Monrovia, Liberia. This operation had been described earlier by other witnesses, who were part of the RUF forces that took care of the operation as well as Mr Massaquoi himself. The witness also testified about his and Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts before and after the disarmament process in Sierra Leone, that ended its civil war.

May 8, 2023 [Liberia] Day 49: Former RUF commander takes the stand

Witness Defense 07 is heard

The defense questions Defense 07

The defense began by asking Defense 07 how he met Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he had gotten to know him in 1991 during the war in Sierra Leone. They were both members of the RUF. Defense 07 gave his war name to the court. Gibril Massaquoi's code name was Gaffa. In 1999, Defence 07 was serving as an RUF commander. He was fighting in Sierra Leone and later in Liberia. The Lomé peace agreement was signed in 1999 and it ended the fighting in Sierra Leone. Defense 07 estimated that the agreement was signed around July. After the signing, the witness continued to work for the RUF to maintain the peace.

The witness testified that Gibril Massaquoi was in prison in early 1999. After being released by the West Side Boys in January, he went back to the rebel lines. He worked as a spokesman and press secretary, he had begun these tasks back in 1997. After the Lomé agreement was signed, Foday Sankoh, aka Papay, called and asked him to be his assistant in Freetown. He worked on Spur Road until May 2000. The witness knew this because he was also based on Spur Road for the whole time that Gibril Massaquoi was working there. The witness was a part of the Ceasefire Monitoring Committee, he began working there in January 2000 until May 2000 when they were attacked. The witness described the attack: the ceasefire was broken and the Sierra Leonean government used civilians and soldiers to attack the RUF. He was in Bo, Southern Sierra Leone, on a mission when the attack took place. Everyone close to Foday Sankoh was arrested, but Gibril Massaquoi managed to escape to Lunsar. Foday Sankoh was shot in the leg and arrested. Before the attack, there had been skirmishes between the RUF and the UN, which led to the attack against Sankoh, Gibril Massaquoi, and others.

Defense 07 testified that after Sankoh's arrest, General Issa took leadership of the RUF. They had a meeting where Issa forced himself as the leader, which the rest of the RUF leadership later agreed to. They had a general meeting in Kono around July or August. The witness was present at the meeting, along with Gibril Massaquoi, Morris Kallon, Red, Augustine Gbao, Abdul Razak and several other commanders. At the meeting, the idea came up that ECOWAS wanted the RUF to have a leader, so they had to appoint one. They named Issa as the leader during the meeting in Kono. The witness testified that neither he nor Gibril Massaquoi were happy with the appointment. After they had elected General Sesay as the interim leader, Sesay said that they

needed a delegation to go to meet with Charles Taylor in Monrovia for the peace process. Gibril Massaquoi was elected as the leader of this delegation. General Issa told them that ECOWAS had contacted him about the meeting in Monrovia.

The delegation consisted of Gibril Massaquoi, Morris Kallon, Abdul Razak, Ray, General Issa, Defense 14, Pa Benda and others. Defense 07 did not know where Massaquoi went after the meeting, but he remembered that LURD blocked the road in Foya, Lofa County after the meeting. Defense 07 was tasked to take armed men and join the Liberian forces to reopen the road. He testified that the meeting in Kono was in July or August and he left for Liberia around September 2000. Gibril Massaquoi did not go with him, he returned to Lunsar and Makeni after the meeting in Kono.

Defense 07 testified that he had 90 men with him when he left for Liberia. They attacked on two flanks alongside the Liberians, he could not say how many troops were involved in the operation. One flank was in the area from Zorzor Road to Voinjama, and the other one was on Kolahun Road. The witness was located in Kolahun. Superman was not in Liberia with Defense 07's forces at that time. The witness explained that Superman left for Liberia right after the meeting in Kono because he disagreed with the outcome of the meeting. The witness had two radio operators with him, H2 and [REDACTED].

The witness explained that the reason for reopening the road was for the RUF to continue with the peace process and to come to meet the ECOWAS leaders. They used that road to travel. The road was closed from Foya, to Kolahun, to Voinjama. They had to fight heavy battles to reopen the road in Kolahun and in an area between Kolahun and Voinjama. They also fought at the Liberian Produce Marketing Company (LPMC) near Voinjama. Defense 07 managed to push the enemy away from Voinjama and outside Liberia, back to Guinea where they had come from. They managed to reopen the road and the fighting ended after the operation. The original orders were to open the road in 72 hours, but because of the heavy battles at the LPMC, it took them ten days. After the road was opened, Gibril Massaquoi and the rest of the delegation travelled to Monrovia. They met the witness and Benjamin Yeaten in Voinjama, where the RUF headquarters in Liberia were located at the time. The delegation continued on their journey after an hour. The witness later found out that the delegation had reached Monrovia, but he did not join them there. He had later travelled to Monrovia, but could not recall when. The witness testified that he had not been to Monrovia before the delegation travelled in 2000.

The defense pointed out that Defense 07 had testified in the lower court that he had visited Monrovia after the delegation's mission. He explained that he came to pay a visit after his mission. He came to Monrovia with Benjamin Yeaten and they met with President Taylor, who thanked them for opening the road in Lofa. At the time of his visit, neither Gibril Massaquoi nor any other members of the delegation were in Monrovia. Defense 07 testified that he left Liberia in June 2001. His troops in Liberia were called Cobra Unit. The name was to distinguish themselves from government troops. The Liberians knew that Cobra Unit consisted of Sierra Leoneans, because they spoke krio. They could not call themselves the RUF, because the RUF was fighting in Sierra Leone. They had to hide the fact that they were fighting in Liberia, the battles had to be covered up. These instructions came from Benjamin Yeaten, who, according to Defense 07, represented Charles Taylor. The witness speculated that they were trying to hide the fact from the international community.

Defense 07 testified that during the combat in Lofa, there not many civilians around as most of them had fled. Cobra Unit did not have any uniforms, they were all wearing different clothes. The witness saw Mosquito and Superman in Lofa. Superman had already left the RUF at the time. The witness also met some Liberian commanders, such as Benjamin Yeaten, Liberian Mosquito, Zigzag Marzah, Colonel Stanley and others. He saw them in combat, they were all fighting from Kolahun to Voinjama and all the way to Guinea. The witness described Zigzag Marzah as "part of us", he was based in Foya. Benjamin Yeaten also participated in fighting. Defense 07 further testified that the Liberians did not supply them with arms and ammunition, they came with their own arms from Sierra Leone. Gibril Massaquoi was not supplying them with arms and ammunition. The witness had not seen him involved in fighting in Liberia on these missions.

The witness provided his code name to the court. As opposed to war names, code names were used to send messages on the field radio. Gibril's code name was Gaffa. Between the times that Defense 07 went to Liberia in September 2000 and May 2001, he visited Sierra Leone twice, as he had responsibilities as a brigade commander. His only task in Liberia was to open the road and to ensure it stayed open. When the delegation travelled to Monrovia, the witness saw them in Voinjama. He saw them again after two weeks, when they went back to Sierra Leone. He also saw Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia when the delegation was travelling through Lofa again on their way to Mali. This was in late 2000, around November or December. After returning to Sierra Leone, Defense 07 met Massaquoi in Freetown. They met several times after the disarmament, in 2002, at the party office in Freetown. They did not meet in spring 2001, when Defense 07 returned to Sierra Leone. The witness testified that at the time, Gibril Massaquoi was in Northern Sierra Leone, at the headquarters in Makeni. He was working on the disarmament process. He learned about this from national radio and field radio. Massaquoi featured in radio broadcasts.

In 2002, Defense 07 met with Massaquoi in connection with the political party RUFP. They met at the party offices, they were preparing for the elections. The witness testified that when he left Liberia, there were no RUF soldiers left in Liberia. They left once the mission was completed. There were some ex-RUF fighters in Liberia, such as Superman who had left the RUF and brought some of his bodyguards to Liberia with him. Sam Bockarie came to Liberia in 1999 with a lot of men, and they never returned to Sierra Leone. When the RUFP was founded in 2002, some of the ex-fighters were charged in a court for the most serious crimes. There were also training centers and jobs provided for ex-fighters, such as farming.

The prosecution questions Defense 07

The prosecution began by asking Defense 07 about the skirmishes with the UN. The witness testified that he got information that the UN was forcing disarmament on the RUF, and this caused the skirmishes between the UN and RUF forces. The RUF did not want to give up their weapons. The witness got this information from General Issa. The RUF also took some UN peacekeepers hostage, which led to the Sierra Leonean government conducting the "grave attack" against Foday Sankoh's office on Spur Road in May. Defense 07 testified that it was not ECOWAS' idea for the RUF to come and fight in Liberia. It was the idea of President Taylor and Issa Sesay, to open the road so that the delegation could reach Monrovia. The witness did not know whether ECOWAS learned about these battles in Liberia between the RUF and the Liberian Armed Forces against LURD. He did not know why LURD had attacked Liberia and blocked the road, but he deemed that this it a part of LURD's struggle against the Liberian government. This struggle could be characterized as a war. The witness denied that the RUF had joined the civil war in Liberia, since they did not join the Liberian army to fight in the war against LURD. The RUF

joined the fighting to open the road and once that task was completed, they went back to Sierra Leone.

According to Defense 07, the reason that the RUF did not leave Liberia immediately after the road was opened in ten days was because they had to defend the road. They had come to Liberia for peace and were defending the road so that the peace delegation could move freely. The road in Lofa was the only land route to Monrovia. There were also sea and air routes. They drove LURD all the way back to Guinea to ensure that they would not come back and attack again. They also fought LURD in Guinea, they drove them to the border between Guinea and Liberia and followed them into Guinea. The prosecutor provided the witness with a code name and asked him if it corresponded with Defense 11's real name, which he could not confirm. According to him, the RUF and LURD both lost men during the fighting in Lofa.

The witness was aware of what the delegation was doing in Monrovia. According to him, they met with President Charles Taylor and ECOWAS foreign ministers. As one of the leaders of the RUF, he was kept informed on the RUF field radio and he also got news from the BBC. Defense 07 didn't know exactly what was talked about, but knew that the delegation was in Monrovia to talk about peace. When Defense 07 and Benjamin Yeaten came to Monrovia to be thanked by Charles Taylor, they were not thanked by ECOWAS, as ECOWAS was not involved in the operation. According to the witness, they did not thank him personally, but they appreciated the fact that the delegation could reach Monrovia. He could tell that ECOWAS appreciated his work: "because they call the RUF and we answer, and it's like a father called you." ECOWAS like a father "because they pioneered the peace". When the witness and Benjamin Yeaten met Taylor in Monrovia, Taylor showed his appreciation to Yeaten. He gave the RUF leadership, General Sesay, money.

Defense 07 explained that the RUF received ammunition to fight, but it was the RUF's property. They received ammunition in Lofa, where the fighting was: in Foya, Kolahun and Voinjama. The ammunition was flown in from Monrovia. He testified that when he got to Lofa, fighting had already started and the civilians had already fled. They did not look for civilians in the bush or in villages, they were only looking for the enemy.

The witness testified that Superman and Massaquoi were on friendly terms before Superman came to Liberia. When he left, they no longer had contact with each other. Superman left the RUF and came to Liberia because he was not in good terms with Issa Sesay. He came to surrender to Benjamin Yeaten. The Liberian government accepted him and ordered him to Lofa, around Vahun. Massaquoi did not go to see Superman in Lofa. Defense 07 knew this as he could not have gone around Lofa without him knowing. He testified that Massaquoi did not see Superman even after he returned to Sierra Leone, as he was too busy with all the meetings that he wouldn't have had the time to meet with Superman.

Defense 07 saw Massaquoi in Freetown after disarmament until the elections in May 2002. The witness personally disarmed in December 2001, and stated that he was the last person to give up his guns. He and Massaquoi met every time he went to Freetown, about once every month and once after the elections. As to Massaquoi's whereabouts in 2001, the witness testified that he heard about him being in Makeni on the field radio. He also heard on local and national radio that he was there. He estimated that over 500 current or former RUF fighters remained in Liberia when he left in May 2001.

Further questions from the defense

The times the witness met with Massaquoi in Freetown were not arranged. They would see each other at the party office. The last time they met was in May 2002. In 2003, their leader was arrested and he heard that Gibril Massaquoi was taken to a UN safehouse. The RUFP did not have much activity after the elections in May. Defense 07 testified that he saw Gibril in June or July 2002 in Thunder Hills, Kissi. Gibril was living there at the time.

Finally, the witness provided Superman's real name the court. He also thanked Gibril for bringing peace to Sierra Leone.

May 9, 2023 – Day 50: Former RUF members heard

Today, the Court heard two former RUF members called by the Defense of Mr Massaquoi.

The first witness, the former coordinator of education within RUF-controlled areas in Sierra Leone, testified about the various meetings they attended with Gibril Massquoi in Sierra Leone and other countries. They had also met Mr Massaquoi after the disarmament process had been completed in Sierra Leone and provided information to the Special Court for Sierra Leone.

The second witness was a former RUF radio operator, who used to work directly with Mr Massaquoi during the Sierra Leonean civil war. He described the whereabouts of Mr Massaquoi in different parts of Sierra Leone during the war and the disarmament process. He also stated that he had lived with Mr Massaquoi for a while after the war, before Mr Massaquoi began to cooperate with the Special Court for Sierra Leone.

The Court will continue the hearings on Wednesday 10, hearing two additional witnesses.

May 9, 2023 [Liberia] Day 50: Former RUF members heard

Witness Defense 20 is heard

The defense questions Defense 20

The defense began by asking Defense 20 where he had first met Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 20 testified that she got to know Gibril Massaquoi in Kailahun District at the beginning of the war. They were both members of the RUFP, Massaquoi was the spokesman and the witness was in charge of children's education. She could not recall exactly when they met.

The witness described the RUF's work with ECOWAS. Gibril Massaquoi and Kposowa were delegation leaders and they had a lot of tripartite negotiations in different countries. She testified: "in RUF he was one of the most educated man. Gibril went to school and he knew how to speak English well". He was sent to meetings and tripartite negotiations with different people. These tripartite negotiations were held in late 2002 in Abuja and around Sierra Leone. The witness sometimes went to some meetings.

The Abuja agreement was a ceasefire between the RUF and the SLPP government. It was signed at the ECOWAS building, in Abuja, Nigeria on 10 November 2000. Defense 20 was there with Massaquoi. They travelled to Abuja by going from Kono to Kailahun, and then from Foya by helicopter to Springfield, Monrovia. They were received by Nigerian ECOWAS staff and taken to Abuja. They walked from Kono to Kailahun, which took three to four days. They were in Abuja for about a month. When they left Nigeria, they went back to the headquarters in Kono. The day after arriving in Abuja, they began working with ECOWAS. They discussed a lot of different things there, they were advised by the President, who said that their leader should be sent to a French country.

The delegation consisted of herself, Gibril Massaquoi, Mr. Kposowa, Pa Benda, Defense 11 and others. Defense 20 testified that she saw Massaquoi every day in Abuja, they were staying in the same hotel. They took the same route back, from Abuja by helicopter to Roberts Airfield and

from there to Foya airstrip. From Foya, they continued to Kailahun and Kono. All the members of the delegation returned to Kono together, they had tripartite meetings in Kono, Makeni, Lunsar and Freetown.

The witness testified that she met Massaquoi in Freetown after the Abuja trip, in Kington. His wife was also staying there. This was in 2002, when there was already peace. Defense 20 often saw Massaquoi in Freetown in 2002. She would stay overnight at his place, they were scared in Freetown as they had just come out of the bush. She first saw him in Kington. Later, when she was in Kailahun, she heard that he had been attacked and had moved to a yellow house. The witness did not know where it was located, she was told about it as a secret. She also met with him at the Special Court. She went there every day after the war, they called her and she went. Defense 20 testified that she was working for the court. The reason that Massaquoi went to the Special Court was a secret. According to the witness, all RUF members were called to the Special Court: "Some people were going to defend, some were going to prosecute." She testified that in 2002, when Massaquoi was in Kington, he was not working. He had told her that some people had rented the house for him. She testified that: "We had so many secret jobs to do, the Special Court was there". At the time of the RUFP, Defense 20 was in charge of the schools that had been set up in the areas liberated by the RUF. They had schools in the bush, where people were hiding, they were open in the mornings when there was fighting going on.

The prosecution questions Defense 20

The prosecution began by asking when the war in Sierra Leone began. The witness testified that it began on 3 March 1991. She could not recall when the RUFP was founded. She explained that she was one of the people who signed the creation of the RUFP. She could not recall exactly when this was, but it was after the ceasefire. Before that, the RUF was a military organization fighting the Sierra Leonean government, it was a "rebel government" from 1991 to 1996.

Besides Abuja, Defense 20 recalled meeting with the Nigerian president with Massaquoi. He invited them to dinners and meetings to discuss peace in Sierra Leone. There were two meetings in Abuja, this was Abuja I. As for meetings that she attended with Massaquoi, the witness mentioned the tripartite negotiations in Makeni and Kono. There were white people there, the UN was there. The witness attended some, but not all, of the meetings. Massaquoi participated in all RUF meetings, because he was the most educated out of them all and he would inform the media. These meetings were in 2000. She testified that many meetings were held in Abuja and other countries, Charles Taylor didn't want them to be in Liberia because he had already been accused of looking after the Sierra Leoneans.

The witness confirmed that she met Massaquoi after the war in Freetown, in Kington. They met at his home, where he lived with his wife and children. She did not ask who owned the house or why he was living there. She would go there at night, wake up early and leave for meetings. She did not notice whether there were any guards at the house and stated that "I did not look for that, when we moved from the bush everyone had his own secret". Later she heard that Massaquoi had flown out of the country. She was told that he had been attacked and was flown out of the country. She did not see him after the attack, she had only heard that he had moved to a yellow house. During her meetings at the Special Court, the witness saw Massaquoi within the large, fenced area of the building, not inside a courtroom. They did not speak to each other as people were working for different parties. This was in 2002. There were different people at the

Special Court, and the Court told them not to talk amongst themselves. They didn't want anybody to interfere.

After her questioning, the Defense 20 asked to address the court. She stated: "Gibril Massaquoi, as I know him, was the most educated young man. The commanders of education were not equipped so the revolution needed to get information out about us, good or bad. So, the revolution secured him because he gave the message to the world. Our father used to love him because he's bold and clever. Whenever we were in meetings he talked to people gently. Some turned out not to love him because Sankoh loved him. We called him Mr. Peace. He goes everywhere where peace is so I called him Mr. Savior. That is all I have to say".

Witness Defense 10 is heard

The defense questions Defense 10

The defense began by asking how Defense 10 had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he has known him since childhood, they lived close by. Defense 10 is a year older than him. In 1999, the witness worked as a radio operator for the RUF. He was stationed in Port Loko, Lunsar, under Defense 01. Gibril Massaquoi was arrested in 1999 and released from Pademba Road Prison by the West Side Boys on 6 January 1999. After his release, he went to Lunsar, where Superman arranged security for him. He began doing PR. The witness was in Lunsar at the time, and was assigned to him. He and Gibril Massaquoi travelled between Makeni and Lunsar, the headquarters were in Makeni. The witness testified that he went with Gibril Massaquoi wherever he went. They had a radio and a satellite phone which they brought with them. Defense 10 was responsible for them, he kept them next to him when he slept, and security guards watched over him and the devices.

The witness testified that Issa Sesay became the leader of the RUF once Foday Sankoh was no longer the leader. Issa was a battlefield commander. Mosquito was also a commander for a while, but he left. When Gibril Massaquoi was released from prison in 1999, Foday Sankoh was the leader of the RUF. Sankoh was arrested in Abuja, Nigeria and was communicating with Issa that the peace process must continue, because the initial 1996 peace agreement did not hold. The Lomé peace agreement was signed on 7 July 1999. At the time, Gibril Massaquoi was with Defense 10. He was appointed by Superman to participate in the negotiations. He went through Guinea to Lomé and spent two weeks there. After Lomé, Foday Sankoh returned to Freetown. Gibril Massaquoi left Lunsar and went to work as a personal assistant to Foday Sankoh in Freetown.

Defense 10 explained that the radio was at everybody's disposal, while the satellite phone was only for Massaquoi's use. He would carry the satellite phone around and if there was a message for Masaquoi, he would find him to pass on the message. This was in Lunsar, where Massaquoi was travelling. The radio and the satellite phone were kept in the same place, where the witness slept. Massaquoi was often called often by the media, about skirmishes or battles, once a month or every two months.

The witness testified that after the May 8 attack, some commanders went to Makeni while Gibril went through to bush to meet them in Lunsar. Defense 10 began working as a radio operator for the RUF in 1996. He worked for Issa Sesay, Morris Kallon, Superman and Gibril Massaquoi. He stopped working for him during disarmament in 2001. After the attack on 8 May, Defense 10

continued to work as Massaquoi's radio operator. After the attack, Issa Sesay called a general meeting with all the commanders. They decided to continue with the peace process as some of the men did not want to fight anymore. They decided to contact UNAMSIL and to appoint Gibril into the external delegation.

Defense 10 explained that Massaquoi moved to Freetown after the peace process had been put back on track. The witness went with him, they were taken by air in a UN helicopter. The reason for this airlift was an internal conflict within the RUF. Gibril had told them not to attack UNAMSIL, everyone grabbed guns, including Gibril who had to defend himself. This happened in Makeni, at the Defense HQ. The conflict was between Issa Sesay and Gibril Massaquoi, as Issa said that he did not take orders from Massaquoi. Massaquoi had told Issa that they wanted the peace process to stay on track.

The witness further testified that he and Massaquoi were present at all the tripartite meetings. Gibril was a representative for the RUF. Defense 10 was not involved in the actual meetings. He stayed outside and listened to the radio and helped the representatives use it if necessary. His radios were used to pass information about the meetings. The witness could not recall when the tripartite meetings began, but the first one was held in Kambia District before disarmament. Defense 10 estimated that he was involved in five meetings in total over the period of five to six months. He listed the locations that these meetings were held in. In addition to the tripartite meetings, Massaquoi was involved in the peace process by talking to people about these issues, he would go from battalion to battalion. The witness did not go with him on these trips. He was not there when Gibril was attacked in Segbwema and could not say when this attack occurred. According to Defense 10, Gibril was attacked and robbed.

Defense 10 testified that Massaquoi's first code name was Gaffa and it was later changed to Wild Fire. The code names were changed because the enemy was watching. The witness was aware of Massaquoi's cooperation with the Special Court for Sierra Leone. One morning, Gibril Massaquoi left for town, and returned late with the UN police. Gibril told Defense 10 and others not to be afraid, he was being taken to a safe house. The witness recalled that this was on 10 March 2002. He did not see Massaquoi after that. The witness never visited him at the safe house, but Michael Bona used to come and bring food for them.

The prosecution questions Defense 10

The prosecution began by asking Defense 10 when he stopped working as Massaquoi's radio operator. The witness testified that he stopped in 2001 right after disarmament, when he handed over all his equipment to UNAMSIL. He estimated that this took place in early 2001, around January. All the equipment was given to UNAMSIL, including radios, solar panels and all the satellite phones the RUF had.

The witness testified that he was with Massaquoi from 1999 until 2002, they lived in the same house. When Massaquoi left the witness in Lunsar and went to Freetown to work as Foday Sankoh's assistant in 2000, he took the satellite phone with him. The witness confirmed that the only time Massaquoi had the satellite phone to himself was when he was working as Foday Sankoh's assistant. He explained that there was an internal struggle within the RUF, and UN peacekeepers had been taken hostage before the 8 May 2000 attack. Issa Sesay, Augustine Gbao and other senior commanders were there. The witness could not say whether Massaquoi had a satellite phone at his disposal after disarmament, as they were not together. After disarmament

in January 2001, Defense 10 and Massaquoi came to Freetown together as a family. Gibril rented a place from Thunder Hills and the witness was living there with him. He lived there from January 2001 to 10 March 2002, when Massaquoi was taken to the safe house. During that time, the witness didn't see Massaquoi with a satellite phone.

Defense 10 testified that Gibril was appointed to the external delegation and went to Liberia to negotiate about peace. He had talks with ECOWAS, the President of Mali, the UN, and others. This was during the rainy season in 2000. The witness did not know whether Gibril went to Liberia when they were living together in Freetown from January 2001. He did not know if he had a girlfriend in Liberia. The witness knew Defense 13, he had known her in Sierra Leone before she and Gibril started dating. He did not know whether Defense 13 had been to Monrovia. The prosecution pointed out that Defense 10 had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi went to Liberia in 2001 to pick up his girlfriend Defense 13. The witness did not remember saying so. There was further discussion as to what Defense 10 had previously testified about seeing Massaquoi go to Liberia to pick up Defense 13 and a child.

The witness was at the house when UNAMSIL came to pick Massaquoi up and take him to the safe house. Michael Bona was also living there. When Gibril was paid money, Michael Bona came to bring them some, he was supporting them. The witness repeated that he had never gone to visit Gibril at the safe house. He had heard about an attack on the safe house and went there to look for them. When he got there, the guards told him said that they had been attacked and had moved.

Defense 10 testified that he had a satellite phone during the tripartite meetings. After disarmament, peace was declared very quickly. They gave up their supplies, President Tejan Kabbah declared that the war was over and it ended.

Question from the court

The court asked the witness to confirm when the war ended, referring to a previous witness who had testified that he had disarmed in December 2001. Defense 10 maintained that he was disarmed in early 2001 and peace came shortly after. The court also asked him to confirm the year when Massaquoi moved to the safe house, referring to previous witnesses that testified that this occurred in 2003. The witness maintained that it was in 2002, he had been living with Massaquoi for about a year and had written everything down in a notebook.

May 10, 2023 – Day 51: RUF members meeting with Massaquoi

Today, the Court heard two former members of the RUF, who stated to have known Gibril Massaquoi during his time in the RUF.

The first witness had been a part of an RUF road-clearing operation in Liberia, while Mr Massaquoi was in Liberia. He also testified about his contact with Mr Massaquoi in Sierra Leone during and after the disarmament process.

The second witness had mainly been in contact with Mr Massaquoi in Sierra Leone. He had been involved in diamond mining for the RUF and testified about Mr Massaquoi's presence in mining areas. He also testified about Mr Massaquoi's whereabouts after the official ending of the war, as well as his activities in integrating former fighters back into society via a fishing project. He was also asked about the arrangements at Mr Massaquoi's safe house, as he stated to have visited Mr Massaquoi there in 2003.

The Court is scheduled to continue the hearings tomorrow, Thursday 11, with two more witnesses.

May 10, 2023 [Liberia] Day 51: RUF members meeting with Massaquoi

Witness Defense 03 is heard

The defense questions Defense 03

The defense began by asking Defense 03 how he had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. Defense 03 testified that he had known Gibril Massaquoi since 1991, when they joined the RUF. Gibril was a target commander and Defense 03 was in the target he was commanding. Gibril was a target commander until 1996, when he left for the North and joined Superman. He got sick in 1996 and was taken by helicopter to the Ivory Coast. He spent a long time there, and after returning, he spoke to the international media. He was with Foday Sankoh as a spokesman. Later, when the peace process started, he joined Sankoh in Freetown as his special assistant.

The witness testified that he came to Liberia once. He had come to fight, but returned the same day without fighting. He came with soldiers and Defense 12. They had 70 men in total. They went through Koindu, Sierra Leone, and crossed the border to Mendekoma, Liberia. This was in 1999 or 2000, it was the rainy season. They were sent to Liberia to help open the road and to help the Liberians push the enemy away. Eagle was sent to one flank, while Defense 03 and Defense 12 were on the other flank by the border between Liberia and Guinea. The route was used to travel to Monrovia; from Foya to Buedu and Kolahun. They had to open the road so that the delegation with Gibril Massaquoi, Issa Sesay and others could travel freely. Defense 12 was in charge of the troops they brought to Liberia. Defense 12 stayed in Mendekoma, near the Guinean and Liberian border. There was also another village, which they used as a base camp to plan combat, but the witness could not recall the name of the village.

Defense 03 provided the court with Eagle's real name. Eagle fought in Kolahun and Foya, on the main road. He had come to Liberia before Defense 03, he had opened and cleared the road. Defense 03 and Defense 12 were sent to prevent the enemy from attacking Eagle. The enemy

consisted of ULIMO troops, such as Mosquito Spray. The witness stayed in Liberia for only a day and when he left, Eagle was still there. Defense 12 stayed in Liberia after the witness left. He could not say for how long Defense 12 remained in Liberia, but estimated that it did not take a week for him to return. The witness met some RUF commanders while he was in Liberia, such as Colonel Jungle and Liberian Mosquito, who was NPFL. Defense 03 handed over the troops to Liberian Mosquito. He had also met Zigzag Marzah in Liberia, in the village, the name of which he could not recall. The witness explained that Zigzag Marzah came from Monrovia and went back and forth, he was one of Charles Taylor's senior commanders. Defense 03 did not see anything in particular in Liberia, he just handed over the troops and left.

At the time, disarmament was ongoing in Sierra Leone. The witness was disarmed in Tongo in early 2001. When he returned to Sierra Leone, the troops he had brought to Liberia stayed there. He did not meet Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia, but he saw the delegation going through Buedu in Sierra Leone on their way to and from Monrovia. Defense 03 testified that the delegation travelled to Monrovia specifically because Charles Taylor was a part of the peace process. Going to Monrovia simplified things for the RUF. This was an effort to get the Abuja peace process back on track, Abuja I was in 2000 and Abuja II in 2001. There were also tripartite negotiations in Kono after Abuja I.

Defense 03 explained that he did not meet Gibril after he returned to Sierra Leone from Liberia, he only saw the delegation pass by Buedu. Gibril was a diplomat at the time. The witness spent the whole disarmament period in Tongo. He had also lived in Buedu and Freetown. He lived in Freetown in 1997, 1999 and 2000. He met Gibril Massaquoi in Sierra Leone in 2001 or 2002 and in 2006, 2007 or 2008, when he was getting ready to leave for Finland. In 2002, around the time the RUF was transferred into a political party and participating in the elections, they met at Gibril Massaquoi's house. He was living in Kissi, in a yellow house. Massaquoi participated in the political activities of the RUFP. He was given money to rent an office and to buy supplies, he was the party spokesman. This was in 2002. The witness met Massaquoi almost daily in 2002 at the party office or at Massaquoi's house.

The witness did not know what else Massaquoi was doing in 2002. After the 2002 elections, they met in 2007 or 2008 in Freetown. Massaquoi's code name was Gaffa and he was also called Gibo. Defense 03 had not heard of anyone named Angel Gabriel or Angel in the RUF. He knew Sam Bockarie aka Mosquito, and testified that he and Gibril Massaquoi were not on friendly terms, there was a lot of confusion and internal conflict between Issa, Mosquito and Gibril. Sam Bockarie was an RUF member and he lived in Sierra Leone. He moved to Liberia in 1999. Defense 03 testified that if Gibril Massaquoi had come with him, Sam Bockarie would have killed him.

The prosecution questions Defense 03

The prosecution began by asking about Defense 03's trip to Mendekoma. The witness testified that this was in late 2000, possibly in June. He listed the places they had travelled through, and then confirmed that it was actually in 2001. Mendekoma is in Lofa county. He had only spent one day in Liberia, he left the same day as there was no food or work in Mendekoma. The prosecution pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that he had spent three days in Lofa. He responded that he had only spent one day in Liberia, but Defense 12 had told him that he had spent three days there.

Defense 03 maintained that he only brought the troops to Mendekoma and returned, he did not participate in any fighting. He had fought near the border earlier, in 1991-1993. He confirmed that this trip to Mendekoma was the only time he had been to Liberia. The witness then added that he had fought on the first day when he came to Liberia. They fought in Foya, at Foya Airfield for two to three hours. They fought with NPFL against the enemy who had blocked the road, LURD. This all took place within one day: they arrived at night, all preparations were made, they attacked early in the morning, and came back that evening. Foya Airfield is four to five miles away from Mendekoma. They took small roads to Foya Airfield and went back to Mendekoma after the attack. There were 70 RUF troops and over a hundred Liberians. The RUF went by foot, while the Liberians attacked in vehicles. They walked from Mendekoma to Foya on the same day. The trip from Tongo to Mendekoma took two to three days, but he had only spent one day in Mendekoma.

The witness confirmed that his task was related to Eagle's operation opening the road for the delegation. According to him, it was the RUF's idea for the delegation to travel to Monrovia, as ECOWAS needed a delegation from the RUF. ECOWAS was not aware of the fighting taking place in order for the delegation to make it to Monrovia, they just wanted them there. The RUF and NPFL fighters that fought alongside each other at Foya Airfield knew each other, some of the RUF fighters had already fought in the NPFL. Defense 03 testified that the only time he saw Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia was one of two trips he had in Liberia. He knew of Massaquoi's travels in Liberia, because he had been at the Kono meeting and had heard about his work with the delegation. The second trip was for Abuja II, when Massaquoi went from Lunsar to Guinea, because Issa, Massaquoi and Mosquito were not on good terms. At the time, it was possible to travel from Guinea to Liberia by air or by land.

Defense 03 testified that he came to Freetown after disarmament in 2001-2002 and met Massaquoi. In 2001, they kept in touch by radio. The witness was not aware of Gibril's whereabouts between 2002 and 2003, he only heard about him again in 2007. During disarmament, not all the communication equipment was taken away from them, there was some left over for the commanders to communicate with each other. Once there were problems with the peacekeepers, everything was taken away. They also had one hidden at the house in the government compound. The witness confirmed that he saw Massaquoi at his house and at the party office in Freetown in 2002, but that they didn't see each other after that. The prosecution pointed out that he had testified in the lower court that he had moved away from Freetown, to Tongo, before the general elections. There was discussion in court as to when the witness was in Freetown and Tongo in 2002, and when and where he had seen Massaquoi.

The witness went to Liberia with 70 troops in total and returned with three or four bodyguards, leaving the Liberians in Mendekoma with about 65 men in total.

Further questions from the defense

Defense 03 testified that Massaquoi only spent one day in Tongo when he had the problem with Issa Sesay. Massaquoi was evacuated from Tongo to Makeni and then from Makeni to Freetown. The witness knew one Sierra Leonean called Gabriel, Mike Lamin's brother. After the defense referred to his police interview, the witness recalled that he used to know one Angel Gabriel. He was RUF, and the witness had heard that he died in 1997 or 1998, in Tongo. The defense pointed out that he had told the Finnish police that he died after disarmament, around 2003, in Tongo. Defense 03 responded that he heard about Angel Gabriel's death after disarmament. Angel

Gabriel was addressed as a sergeant, he had two or three bodyguards under him. Defense 03, Angel Gabriel and others was all under Mosquito, Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon. The witness explained that he knows of two Angel Gabriels, one soldier, who died in Tongo, and Mike Lamin's brother, who was not a soldier. He had gotten to know Mike Lamin's brother through the AFRC. He did not participate in combat. Both Gabriels were referred to as Angel Gabriel.

Witness Defense 06 is heard

The defense questions Defense 06

The defense began by asking Defense 06 how he had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he had known Gibril Massaquoi since the beginning of the war, in 1991 or 1992. They were in different targets. In 1999, the witness was in Tongo, he had been assigned there. Gibril Massaquoi was in prison at Pademba Road at the time, before the AFRC released him. The witness heard about him through the field radio, but he did not meet him personally. In 2000, the witness met Massaquoi in Makeni, after Foday Sankoh had been ousted from the RUF. He went to get financial help for diamond mining. Massaquoi told him that he did not have money at the time, but that he would call him once he had some. Massaquoi contacted him in 2002 and they met in Freetown. This time, he did not have the money, but he told the witness that he was preparing a fishing project for the DDR, it had been approved. Defense 06 and two others joined him to Gbondapi not long after, this was during the dry season 2002. They spent one day in Gbondapi, after which Massaquoi went to Bo and Defense 06 went to Tongo. Before this trip, Massaquoi had written the project and was waiting for its approval. They went there to prepare for the project, they met with leaders and told them about it. The witness never saw the document that Massaquoi had prepared.

Defense 06 was aware of Gibril Massaquoi's cooperation with the UN. Later, Gibril and Issa Sesay were arrested, Gibril joined the prosecution's side and was put in a safe house. The fishing project was never implemented, as Gibril never received the money for it. The witness learned about this in 2002. In late 2002, Massaquoi was arrested and in 2003, he was put in the safe house. The last time Defense 06 met with Massaquoi was in 2003. Massaquoi called and asked to meet him. He went to meet him near the stadium, Massaquoi gave money to the security guards and they went upstairs.

The witness did not know of anyone called Angel Gabriel. He had heard of someone named Gabriel, but had never met them. He was located around the Kailahun District. The witness could not remember the address for the safe house. It was located near the stadium, near the Youyi building.

The prosecution questions Defense 06

The prosecution began by asking about the financial support Defense 06 had asked for the diamond mining in Tongo. The witness testified that the RUF was operating the diamond mines in Tongo: "when you are fighting war, when you capture any place, that area is for you". At the time, the RUF had the whole area, Lunsar, Kono, Tongo. The diamonds that were mined in Tongo could be kept by whoever found them. The mines weren't controlled, any RUF fighter could come and mine for themselves. Massaquoi was in Lunsar and in 2002 he came to tell the miners that they should stop and dig for the government. The prosecution pointed out that Defense 06 had testified in the lower court that Massaquoi had boys mining for him at the diamond mines. The

witness explained: “One thing during the revolution, when boys were assigned with you anything they did it was you. If they were doing it for him, he would not have told them to stop”. Massaquoi came to tell them that they had to get permits from the government before mining. Defense 06 testified that Massaquoi did not take any diamonds, it was Issa who would come and take people’s diamonds, but Massaquoi put a stop to that. The witness did not know what Issa did with the diamonds, he was the leader of the RUF at the time.

Defense 06 testified that when he went to meet Massaquoi in Freetown, Massaquoi was not working at the time. He was participating in the political activities of the RUF. The witness went to see him at the RUF party office about two or three months after the elections in 2002. He, Gibril Massaquoi, and two others went to Gbondapi to make arrangements for the fishing project. The witness could not recall what kind of arrangements they were making, he only remembered that they would have returned once the money came through. Defense 06 was supposed to train the participants in the project. The first time he heard about the project was in 2002, when he had been to Freetown to see Massaquoi.

The witness denied that Massaquoi gave money to the guards at the safe house when he went to visit him in 2003. He explained that his name was written down, and then he was allowed to go upstairs. There were about four guards in total, they were all armed. Three to four months had passed since his move to the safe house until Gibril called him. He told him that the money for the fishing project had not come through, and that the project would probably not come to anything as he could be leaving for Finland at any moment. They only spent an hour together, and the witness returned to Tongo. He later heard that Gibril had gone to Finland, it was not long after their meeting. Defense 06 was aware that Gibril had been a part of a delegation in Liberia in 2001. He testified that he had only visited Gibril in the safe house once. The prosecution pointed out that he had testified at the lower court that he was friends with Gibril and had gone to the safe house a few times, and that he was “known” there. The witness denied this, stating that one could not simply walk into the safe house without having their name written down. He and Gibril were friends, but if he had not called him, he would not have gone to the safe house.

Final question from the defense

The witness confirmed that he had heard of a sergeant Angel Gabriel, he got the information on the field radio.

May 11, 2023 – Day 52: A new defense witness is heard

Today, the Court continued the hearings in Monrovia by hearing one new witness called by Mr Massaquoi's defense. Another witness, also called by the Defense, did not come to testify.

The witness used to work as a radio operator for the RUF during the Second Liberian Civil War. He was sent to Liberia in 1999 and he spent time there until the latter end of the war in Sierra Leone, 2001-2002. He testified about the origins of the RUF operation in Liberia and the whereabouts of various RUF commanders in Lofa county, Liberia. In addition to Lofa county, he testified to being in the capital Monrovia in 2001.

The Court will end its second trip to Liberia tomorrow, Friday 12, by hearing one last witness. After that, the Court will return to Finland for the final phase of the trial. The next hearings are scheduled for the latter part of May and the trial is expected to conclude in early June.

May 11, 2023 [Liberia] Day 52: A new defense witness is heard

Witness H2 is heard

The defense questions H2

The defense began by asking H2 about his membership in the RUF. The witness testified that he was abducted in 1991, he was with the RUF from then until the director declared that the war was over in early 2002. In 1999, he was working as a radio operator in Liberia. He was sent there by General Issa Sesay. He was stationed in Lofa, but he often moved back and forth between Sierra Leone and Liberia. He was initially stationed with Superman. He served under Superman for a year and a half, until Superman was wounded and taken to Monrovia. H2 was then assigned to General Yeaten, aka Fifty. He explained: "I would never have come to Liberia if it had not been the collective agreement between the Liberian government and leadership of RUF".

The witness testified that once, Issa Sesay came from Kono to the border and Yeaten came and met him there from Liberia. This meeting took place around 1999 or 2000, Superman had not been injured yet. The mission he was sent on in 1999 was to defend the route from Foya, Voinjama and Kolahun. The route had been attacked by rebels and the troops H2 belonged to were sent to defend the route. It was used by the RUF delegates, and to transport material and troops between Liberia and Sierra Leone. The witness' assignment was in communication. The rebels were called LURD, their leader was Mosquito Spray.

H2 was initially based in Foya. He was later airlifted to Tendebu and when Voinjama was captured, he stayed there for a while before going to Kolahun. The witness did not meet Superman after he was wounded, as H2's troop had retreated to Buedu. After receiving treatment in Monrovia, Superman returned to Vahun. At the time, LURD had captured Voinjama, Kolahun and Foya. The RUF was trying to fight them and retreated to Vahun. H2 met Superman in Vahun in 2001, around the middle of the year.

The witness had also been to Monrovia. He travelled with Benjamin Yeaten from the front to Monrovia and back. Once, Yeaten was sick, and the witness went with him to a village so that he could communicate with others. There was no fighting in Monrovia when H2 was there, the war

was in Lofa at the time. H2 described a clash between Liberian and Sierra Leonean troops in Lofa: Charles Taylor said the insurgents were coming from Guinea, and he sent forces to fight them. The Liberians joined in the battle and lost. Upon their return to Lofa, the Liberian army and Colonel Chucky had a conflict which led to the death of one of Chucky's bodyguards, Johnny Paul Koroma. The RUF fighters were attached to the SSS division, SSS Cobra in Liberia. They were not operating independently in Liberia, they were under the command of General Yeaten.

H2 knew of Sam Bockarie. Sam Bockarie had had a conflict with Sankoh and left for Liberia with a number of fighters in 1999. He also knew Eagle, he was a commander of a troop sent to support the fight in Liberia. The witness worked with Eagle in Kolahun until Voinjama was captured. H2 listed other Sierra Leonean commanders that were in Liberia between 1999 and 2001: Harris, Eagle, Superman, Colonel Chucky and Colonel Sheriff. He listed the Liberians he had met in Lofa: Benjamin Yeaten, Fasu, Green Eagle, Peanut Butter, Roland Duo, Zigzag Marzah, Colonel Jungle and Colonel Dubu Megason. Zigzag Marzah was with the Liberians working with Benjamin Yeaten. He was stationed with Yeaten and went anywhere Yeaten would go. When Yeaten went to Monrovia, he would leave Zigzag in charge. This was when Zigzag committed most of his atrocities; he would burn houses and kill people. He would act like he was the supreme commander and had to be obeyed. The witness testified that Zigzag burned houses and killed people in Popalahun, Kamatahun and Vahun. The killings in these places took place when Yeaten was in Monrovia.

Zigzag was the senior commander when Yeaten was in Monrovia. At the end of every month, H2 had to draft a security report and report what he had seen at the front. H2 was in Popalahun when Zigzag was committing these atrocities, he saw him putting civilians in the house and lighting the house on fire. They opposed it. H2 could not say how many people were killed inside the house. The attack on Popalahun took place in 2001 during the rainy season, around June or July. There was also another commander called Next to God, he was Liberian.

H2 was also present in Kamatahun when Zigzag committed atrocities. Superman and Zigzag had a conflict and Zigzag was told that he could no longer behave like a rebel, he was fighting for the government now, so he had to behave. H2 saw Zigzag shooting civilians in Kamatahun, the house was burned in Popalahun. H2 had not heard of Kamatahun Hassala or Kamatahun Tahamba. He described the location of the Kamatahun where Zigzag shot civilians: next to the main road going from Kolahun towards Foya and the Sierra Leonean border, it was the road that goes to Popalahun and Vahun. This incident also took place in 2001. H2's troops had withdrawn from Guinea to Kolahun. The rains hadn't started yet. There were reports made of this. When Yeaten returned, people told him what Zigzag had done. At the time, everyone was focused on the combat against the rebels. They did not want to blame anyone, nobody ordered Zigzag to behave like he did, he did it all on his own.

The witness knew Gibril Massaquoi, he was the RUF's spokesman and one of the delegates moving between Sierra Leone and Liberia, one of the peacemakers. He had seen Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia once after 1999. He was travelling and was in Kolahun. These people came to Kolahun and continued to Monrovia by helicopter, they were on their way to peace negotiations. That same week, the witness went to Monrovia with Yeaten and stayed at a guest house near the Nigerian Embassy. H2 did not meet Massaquoi in Monrovia. He knew that Massaquoi was not a part of the combat troops. There was always a notification on the radio when reinforcements were being brought in, he would have known if Massaquoi was a part of reinforcements that

came to fight. The witness could not recall Gibril Massaquoi travelling from Monrovia with Benjamin Yeaten.

The witness gave his code names and radio names.

Question from the court

H2 confirmed that Gibril Massaquoi's code name in Sierra Leone was Gaffa. Every commander had a code name.

The prosecution questions H2

The prosecution began by asking H2 about his stay in Liberia. The witness testified that he was in Liberia from 1999 until late 2001 or early 2002. LURD was attacking the whole of Liberia, not just the route to Monrovia the RUF was using. Charles Taylor was using the road to supply the RUF with arms, ammunition and sometimes medical material. He did not know whether the RUF was paying for the supplies.

H2 testified that when he saw Massaquoi and the delegation going from Kolahun to Monrovia by helicopter, LURD was attacking between Voinjama and Zorzor. There was an ambush by LURD in a village in the area. For this reason, high-ranking officers avoided travelling by land and travelled by air instead. The witness listed the various places in Lofa that had landing spots for helicopters. According to H2, it took an hour and fifteen minutes to get to Monrovia by helicopter. The RUF used six different helicopters: ATU-001, ATU-002, ATU-003, SSS-001, SSS-002 and SSS-003. ATU-002 was also used as a combat helicopter. Both the Anti-Terrorist Unit (ATU) and the Special Security Service (SSS) were government troops under Taylor. The witness could not recall exactly when he had seen Massaquoi in Kolahun, it was either in 2000 or 2001.

The prosecution pointed out that H2 had told the Finnish police that he had seen Massaquoi with the delegation in Voinjama or Kolahun on his way to Monrovia in late 2001. The witness responded that he cannot provide the exact date, it could have been either 2000 or late 2001. He corrected his previous statement, testifying that he saw Massaquoi in Kolahun, not in Voinjama and added that he believes it was in 2001, late 2001.

The witness spent two Christmases in Monrovia, in 2000 to 2001 and 2001 to 2002. In 2001, H2 was in Monrovia with General Yeaten, who had gotten sick. H2 was there with his radio to help Yeaten with his communications. Eagle was also there, he came alone by motorcycle from Voinjama. H2 left Voinjama at the same time as Eagle, but they did not travel together.

According to H2, the RUF fighters were attached to the SSS as SSS Cobra. SSS Cobra was an addition, a reinforcement to the rest of the SSS troops. The rest of the SSS had their own uniforms, while SSS Cobra was given green and brown uniforms with "Libyan Workers' Hardware" printed on them. Depending on the mission, they would use either the green or brown uniforms. Benjamin Yeaten was commanding SSS Cobra, but there were also other commanders, such as Sheriff, Harris, Superman and Eagle. Eagle returned to Sierra Leone in early 2000. Eagle was in Monrovia for Christmas 2001, after which they all returned to the border with Guinea. There was fighting and Eagle was supposed to join his troops, but he did not and returned to Sierra Leone instead. H2 confirmed that all RUF fighters in Liberia were a part of the SSS Cobra.

The witness testified that Zigzag Marzah spoke Liberian, he was Gio, his war name was Ziza. H2 did not witness the incident in Popalahun himself, but heard from the other fighters what had happened with Zigzag. In Kamatahun, he witnessed it firsthand: “He saw a group of men and he opened fire and later on we found that the men were not fighters”. This happened outside the village, when H2’s troop was approaching Kamatahun.

H2 explained that the RUF guest house in Monrovia had a few permanent employees and provided their names to the court. He confirmed that Defense 09 was at the guest house, he was a bodyguard to Foday Sankoh. Defense 09 was sent to the guest house before H2 had come to Liberia. When H2 left Monrovia, Defense 09 still stayed in the city. H2 met Defense 09 in Sierra Leone after the end of the war in 2002.

The witness further testified that when the Voinjama-Kolahun-Foya route was lost to rebels, there was also a route that began from Bomaru in Sierra Leone. It continued to Vahun, LPCM, Kumbo, Lofa Bridge, Bomi Hills and Monrovia. H2 had travelled along this route with Roland Duo in 2001, during the rainy season. They travelled sometimes by land, sometimes by helicopter.

Further questions from the defense

H2 testified that he saw the houses being lit on fire in Popalahun. He heard about Zigzag lighting the houses later. He could not tell exactly how many houses were set on fire, and added that he could see one or two houses burning at the entrance to the village.

Decision on using the police interviews of certain witnesses

After hearing witness H2, the court had to decide on a technical aspect as to whether to use the police interviews of two witnesses who were unable to testify in court. Under Finnish legislation, a witness could normally be brought to court with the help of Finnish police. The first witness, Y9, was hospitalized right before his scheduled hearing. The second, H3, had not appeared for his scheduled hearing. The court decided that their witness testimonies could be admitted by listening to the recording of their police interviews in court, as there was no feasible possibility to have them testify in court.

May 12, 2023 – Day 53: Final Witness in Monrovia

Today, the Court ended its second trip to Monrovia, Liberia by hearing one additional witness.

The witness, a former RUF member and commander, testified about his relationship with Gibril Massaquoi, especially between 2001 and 2003. The witness testified that he lived with Mr Massquoi for a few years and participated in his fishing project preparations in Sierra Leone. The witness also testified that he had visited Mr Massaquoi in the Special Court safe house. The witness was questioned about these subjects by both parties, as there were some inconsistencies between his previous testimonies and that which he was giving the Court of Appeals.

Next, the Court of Appeals will return to Finland for the final phase of the proceedings. The next hearings are scheduled for the latter part of May.

May 12, 2023 [Liberia] Day 53: Final Witness in Monrovia

Witness Defense 01 is heard

The defense questions Defense 01

The defense began by asking Defense 01 where he had first met Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he had known him since his school years, as he was his teacher in secondary school. They both lived in Pujehun, where they both were abducted by the RUF. In early 1999, the witness was in Freetown and later in 1999 he was in Lunsar. According to Defense 01, Gibril Massaquoi was with Foday Sankoh in Nigeria in 1997. Issa Sesay had Gibril and Steve Bio arrested in Bo and he was in prison until 6 January 1999. After being released, he went to Lunsar. Defense 01 was a battalion commander in Lunsar at the time, he received Gibril there. The witness sent Gibril to Makeni to receive medical treatment and he stayed there until late 1999, November, when Foday Sankoh invited him to Freetown to work as his personal assistant. Massaquoi worked with Sankoh and participated in meetings with him. Defense 01 stayed in Lunsar. He had been named the Director of the Port Loko District for the RUFP in Lunsar and would occasionally go to Freetown for meetings, where he met Gibril. Gibril travelled to Lunsar sometimes, to bring food from Sankoh to ex-fighters, and try to unite them and open the party office.

According to Defense 01, Gibril worked as Sankoh's personal assistant until 8 May 2000, when Sankoh was arrested. This was in connection to an attack on Sankoh, caused by the RUF attacking UN peacekeepers in Makeni and Kailahun in April 2000. NGOs, students and regular people attacked Sankoh's residence. Everyone at the residence escaped to survive. A few days later, they saw Gibril and the others in Lunsar. Sankoh was never released after his arrest, which led to a power vacuum in the RUF. Issa Sesay was later appointed as the leader in Kono. Issa Sesay was the head of the RUF's military wing, while Gibril Massaquoi was part of the political wing, he had not been a fighter since 1999. After some negotiations with ECOWAS and the UN, there was a general meeting in Kono in July or August, all the commanders were invited. At the meeting, it was decided that a delegation led by Massaquoi should be sent to Liberia. The delegation included Abdul Razak, Defense 20, Defense 24 and Jonathan Kposowa. Their mission was to move to get the peacekeepers released and to advance the peace process in Sierra Leone. They left for Liberia in August 2000. They travelled back and forth between Kono and Liberia. The witness did

not know if there was a particular reason that the delegation travelled to Monrovia and speculated that it was to be able to meet with West African leaders.

The witness met Gibril Massaquoi in Makeni when the delegation came back from its mission to Liberia. They had a meeting with Issa Sesay and others. They had various meetings like that, as the delegation came to update Issa Sesay on their progress. The witness himself participated in a meeting held in October 2000, the UN peacekeepers had been released and the peace process was about to begin. Defense 01 also met with Massaquoi in Makeni in December 2000, when the delegation returned from Liberia for good. After the delegation's return, Massaquoi worked with the tripartite arrangement between the Sierra Leonean government, UNAMSIL and the RUF. The committee had meetings in various locations, they were looking at how to disarm, demobilize and reintegrate the fighters after the war and how to reunite child soldiers with their families. Defense 01 testified that Massaquoi participated in all of these meetings, they continued until November or December 2001. Massaquoi did not return to Liberia, he was living in Makeni at the time. The witness also participated in the tripartite meetings as he had been appointed Child Soldiers Coordinator. He saw Massaquoi during these meetings. One meeting was held in Kenema in 2001, he could not recall the exact date. The meetings lasted about three to four hours each. After the Kenema meeting, Defense 01 returned to Lunsar and Massaquoi returned to Makeni. The witness had also participated in one tripartite meeting in Freetown in August or September and one in Magburaka in 2001. There were meetings every two or three weeks.

Defense 01 testified that he lived in Lunsar until December 2001, when he moved to Freetown. At the time, Massaquoi was living in Freetown. He had been evacuated there by the UN in November 2001, after he had had a conflict with Issa Sesay. The witness was not in Makeni when this incident took place. He had heard that Issa Sesay had accused Massaquoi of inciting the miners in Tongo to stop digging. When Gibril Massaquoi was brought to Freetown, Defense 01 lived with him at 10B Thunder Hill Road, Kissi. He moved in with Gibril Massaquoi straight after leaving Lunsar in December 2001, as there was nothing left to do in Lunsar, there was no RUF activity there. He decided to go to Freetown to study, he was admitted to the Sierra Leone University for 2002, but he could not pursue his studies for financial reasons and had drop out. He then applied to another program for the term 2002-2003 and studied agriculture. The witness listed the other people living with them in Thunder Hills.

The witness lived with Massaquoi from late 2001 until 2003. He saw Massaquoi in the mornings and after he got back from school. Massaquoi did not leave the house for long periods of time, except in 2003, when the Special Court took him away. In 2003, Defense 01 heard from the BBC Focus on Africa program, that Gibril, Augustine Gbao and Issa Sesay had been arrested and they had been taken to an undisclosed location. Later that night, he saw Gibril at the house with the Special Court's prosecution team and security guards. Gibril told him that he was safe and not to worry. He packed his things and took his family to the safe house that same night. Defense 01 could not remember the exact date that this happened, but estimated that it was in early 2003. Later, he met Massaquoi in the safe house in Freetown. The safe house was located on Cotton Street, opposite the Okeke fishing company, on the main road, near Light District. The first time he visited the safe house was two to three years later, in 2006 and again in 2008. Two weeks before he was supposed to leave, Gibril called. When the witness got to the safe house, Defense 10, Michael Bona, the children, the wife, the cook and the security guards were all there.

Defense 01 explained that Gibril was involved in the political activities of the RUFP between 2001 and 2002. In early 2002, he quit the RUFP and began setting up a fishing project to train ex-

fighters. This project was accepted by the DDR, who wanted to fund the project, but as he was taken under the protection of the Special Court, the funding was never transferred to his account. Massaquoi was preparing the papers in Freetown. The project was supposed to be with ex-fighters from Pujehun, in Gbondapi. The witness testified that he saw the written document that he had prepared, he was with him the day he sent it to the DDR. Defense 01 had prepared an agriculture project, to involve ex-fighters in rice farming, funded by the DDR. The preparation of his project took a week. He did not know how long it took Gibril to write his own document, as Defense 01 only became involved in the data analysis phase of Gibril's project. He explained that they would analyze responses to surveys of people's needs. Gibril Massaquoi sent people to carry out the surveys and bring back the completed forms to him.

The witness knew Defense 13, she was Gibril Massaquoi's wife. They were together in Freetown but did not live in the same house. He heard about the birth of their son in December 2000.

Defense 01 had not heard of anyone called Angel Gabriel or Angel. At school from 1991 to 1993, Gibril was called Gibs.

The prosecution questions Defense 01

The prosecution began by asking Defense 01 about the meeting in Kono. The witness confirmed that he was present at the meeting. He did not know why Liberia was chosen as the location for these meetings. He confirmed that Massaquoi attended every tripartite meeting that took place since December 2000: "If there is any number better than 100 percent I would have told this court. He attended all three of the meetings I attended." He also indicated that this could be confirmed by UNASMIL, the Sierra Leonean government, or the Ministry of Justice. The witness testified that these meetings took place in 2001. He could not estimate how many meetings were held in 2001 in total. In 2002, the President declared peace at Freetown International Airport.

When Defense 01 moved to Freetown in December 2001, he moved immediately to the same house as Massaquoi. He was certain of the date, as it was the year he began his studies. The prosecution pointed out that Defense 01 had testified in the lower court that he had lived with Massaquoi when he had enrolled in university in 2003 to 2004. There was discussion in court as to when the witness was enrolled in university, and when he moved to Massaquoi's house.

The witness testified that when they lived together, he was not with Gibril every second. He was not aware of Gibril going to Gbondapi for the fishing project in 2002. Defense 13 lived in Freetown between 2001 and 2003. When asked whether Gibril used to meet with her, he responded: "Defense 13 is his wife, he can go to her anytime, any hour, I don't need to monitor him." The safe house that Defense 01 visited was located in central Freetown. He gave details of how to reach it. The witness had heard that it was not the first safe house Gibril had lived in, but he did not know where he had lived before he had visited him. The prosecution pointed out that Defense 01 had told the Finnish police that he had been to all three of the places where Massaquoi was held. He had previously testified that the first one, on KLM Road, he had visited three times the second one only once, and the third one, located on Congo Cross, he had visited often. The witness responded that the one on Congo Cross was the safe house he had already mentioned, located near Light. The first one was located on Kiyama Road. The second house was in Brookfields.

Defense 01 gave the name of Massaquoi and Defense 13's son to the court. He testified that the child originally had a Muslim name, but Defense 13 changed it to a Christian name when he was baptized at church. The witness was there when the child was baptized. He had heard that Defense 13 gave birth in Liberia.

The witness was not aware of Massaquoi's travels to Liberia in 2001. He had heard something about it, but did not have any details. He had also heard that Massaquoi had travelled to the United States in cooperation with the Special Court.

Final questions from the defense

Defense 01 testified that Massaquoi lived in Freetown at the same time as Defense 13. He knew that he used to meet Defense 13 and the child, but he could not say how often. He clarified that the DDR negotiations were the same thing as the tripartite negotiations.

The defense pointed out that he had mentioned a fighter named Angel Gabriel during his police interview. This Angel Gabriel was not a commander, but a fighter in Makeni, Lunsar and Kono. The witness responded that he had testified today that there was one Angel Gabriel, but that was not Gibril. He confirmed that he had heard this name being used by someone. He was not in Lunsar, but in Kono, Buedu and Kailahun. There were also other people named Angel, five to seven in total. Most of them were RUF members. As for the Angel Gabriel he had spoken to the police about, he was not sure if he had been an RUF member. One of the people named Angel was in Lunsar, he was a radio operator. Some of them were in Liberia. The witness had heard of fighters going from Sierra Leone to Liberia and back, testifying that: "You know in RUF we have a monitoring system, I was a commander and I heard that they were in Liberia fighting, I had a radio so I used to hear". He himself fought in Sierra Leone.

Final questions from the prosecution

Defense 01 speculated that he had heard of the Angel who had been in Liberia to fight around 1998 to 2000.

May 23, 2023 – Day 54: The Court returns to Turku, Finland

Today, the Turku Court of Appeals resumed its hearings in Finland in the Massaquoi case.

The Court began by listening to the recording of a pre-trial investigation interview of a witness, who could not make it to Monrovia while the Court was there this month due to health reasons. While in Monrovia, the Court concluded that it would be nearly impossible to hear this and another witness from Sierra Leone during the current proceedings without unduly postponing the procedure. The Court therefore decided to admit their pre-trial statements.

The witness testified about being a protected witness of the Special Court for Sierra Leone, much like Mr Massaquoi. The witness had discussed with the Finnish police the security arrangements in his and Mr Massaquoi's safe houses and their possible shortcomings.

The Court also heard a new witness that was called by the defense of Mr Massaquoi via video link from the Netherlands. The witness testified that she was a cook in the safe house where Mr Massaquoi lived with his family in 2003.

The Court will continue the proceedings tomorrow, Wednesday 24, by admitting another pre-trial recording and hearing another new witness via video link.

May 23, 2023 [Finland] Day 54: The Court returns to Turku, Finland

The recording of Witness Y9's police interview is played

As Y9 was unable to appear in court, the court decided that his witness testimony could be received by watching the recording of his police interview. The recording was played in court.

Y9 stated that he joined the army in 1998 when there was the coup. The AFRC called the RUF to join them in Freetown. They were removed from Freetown by ECOMOG troops and they left for Kono. Johnny Paul went to Kailahun. Y9's base was in Kono, they went from there to Gabala and then to Northern Sierra Leone. After being pushed out of Freetown, they went to the West Side, they had a base there. They left Freetown on 6 January 1999 when ECOMOG pushed them out. They remained in West Side until the ceasefire. Gibril Massaquoi and others came to see them, he and others had been sent by Foday Sankoh to talk with the West Side Boys. According to Y9, Gibril Massaquoi was heavily armed, so they disarmed him before they could talk. Then, they began to talk about peace on the West Side.

Y9's group had issues with the Lomé peace agreement. Their leader, Johnny Paul Koroma, was arrested in Kailahun and they were not called to Lomé despite them being a part of the fighting. For this reason, they decided to arrest the UNAMSIL peacekeepers. Foday Sankoh had already sent Gibril Massaquoi before that to discuss what they could do for the Lomé peace agreement. Until the ceasefire entered into force, the West Side Boys held some ECOMOG troops.

One of the reasons why the West Side Boys came to Liberia was for the release of Johnny Paul Koroma, they met him in Liberia. They also wanted to have the chairmanship of the CCP peace consolidation. The government and the army were against this. In June 2000, the RUF split up in Makeni and went towards Freetown. There was a large battle and the West Side Boys managed

to stop the RUF, they ambushed their convoy. Y9 came to Freetown and wanted to join Johnny Paul Koroma there, but he was arrested and detained without charges until he was released in 2004.

In 2003, while Y9 was in prison, the Special Court for Sierra Leone contacted him and asked him questions about the war, 1999, and the 6 January attack. They began to take his statements and contacted him in relation to the AFRC and RUF trials. Y9 was placed in a safe house during the AFRC, RUF and Charles Taylor trials. He testified in the AFRC and RUF trials. At one point, he was contacted and asked to deny his statements. He reported the matter, which was investigated, and the people trying to get him to deny his statements were convicted.

In the RUF trial, his testimony concerned the cooperation between the RUF and the AFRC in Freetown, where they received supplies from and how the RUF was organized. He also testified about the RUF's command structure. According to Y9, Gibril Massaquoi was part of a team that came to Freetown to talk with AFRC when they had seized power. He was later suspected of conspiring against the AFRC and was arrested. When the West Side Boys, Y9 included, came to Freetown, they released him from Pademba Road Prison. Gibril Massaquoi was a senior commander. He led the troops to the West Side. Y9 described him as a very smart man and mercenary, he was used for his knowledge and education to gain control of situations. He was the mastermind behind many situations, even when Y9 came out of the safe house. He was a mastermind in relation to witness management when he left for Finland. There were guards that had been assigned to Gibril Massaquoi and it was said that they would attack him. This incident, an attack against him, was intentionally kept confidential by the leadership of the Special Court, and it was decided that he should be relocated.

When Y9 was released from prison in 2004, he stayed home for a bit before he was placed in a safe house during the trials. At the time, Gibril was in a safe house behind the stadium, in Congo Cross. Y9 never visited him at the safe house, he only walked past it.

Y9 stated that he was free to leave his safe house as he pleased. There were a lot of instances of mismanagement and various challenges related to the safe house. Y9 mentioned manipulation and the intentional placement of security guards to safe houses. The Special Court did not want to increase the attention or importance of some things, which led to Massaquoi being relocated. The head of the Witness Management was opposed to the present trial and "did not want to see Gibril Massaquoi being exploited." He had told the witness to be careful about his testimony and had asked him what he was going to testify about. Y9 was told not to say anything that would ruin the Special Court's reputation as they were still looking after him. He speculated that something that may tarnish their reputation was the fact that people staying in the safe houses could leave whenever they pleased.

The witness told the Finnish police that his safe house had a logbook. The guards would come in and sign the logbook and, most of the time, they would then leave. They would sometimes tell him that they wanted to take care of personal business before coming in to work. He always let them, they would come in, write their names in the logbook and leave. Y9 knew that Massaquoi had armed guards at his safe house. Y9 also had armed guards after Taylor's trial. They were supposed to be present 24 hours a day, but there were still a lot of lapses, not enough surveillance. He never saw the head of the security guards, as he had been "compromised." After Taylor's trial, he was supposed to have guards 24/7, but they were coming and going as they pleased, just like with the regular guards and the logbook.

Y9 had heard about the attack on Gibril Massaquoi at the safe house. He had heard that someone wanted to assassinate him so that he wouldn't say anything. The attack was orchestrated and Gibril Massaquoi was relocated.

The witness confirmed that he was arrested in June 2000. He received information in prison about the RUF's activities, such as Superman crossing the border into Liberia. He had heard that Gibril Massaquoi had also gone to Liberia and then to Guinea. In 1998-1999, Y9 had been a fighter. He described that houses were burned down, and people had their limbs amputated with cutlasses. When Gibril Massaquoi was released from prison in 1999, he was with the RUF.

Next, Y9 explained his relationship with the Special Court. He was contacted and told that they would need to talk face to face. He went to the Special Court's office and spoke with different people there. He told them that there were issues with the security arrangements at the safe house, that the security at the safe houses was compromised. In 2007, when Y9 was a protected witness, he had gone to Kailahun in 2007 without the court ever knowing about it. At the time, there were a lot of tensions in Freetown. Y9 decided to test what would happen if an ex-fighter left Freetown, so he went to Kailahun. According to him, the Special Court never knew that he had travelled there. The office that paid his allowance would close on Friday, so he told them that he would come on Saturday and the matter was not looked into until Monday. He could do whatever he wanted in the meantime. Y9 had heard about a person losing their weapon in connection with Gibril Massaquoi. The Special Court did not want to address it. He explained that a weapon going missing was very alarming. He testified that from his understanding, this was arranged by Gibril Massaquoi.

Y9 could not say that the Special Court was aware of Gibril's role in Liberia. They were more focused on the AFRC and RUF trials. He speculated that Gibril was chosen as a witness as there were not many people willing to cooperate with the Special Court.

Witness H4 is heard

The court heard H4 through video link from the Netherlands.

The defense questions H4

The defense began by asking H4 how she had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he was her former boss, she used to cook for him from March 2003. She worked until September, when she went on maternity leave. She returned in January 2004 and worked for a few months until he was relocated to a different safe house. She worked in 7 Pipeline, near Wilkinson Road, at the safe house where he lived with his family. H4 worked for the Special Court. She worked from Monday to Saturday, from nine to five. She saw Massaquoi every day. H4 listed the people that lived at the house with him.

When H4 came back to work in January 2004, it was at a different safe house. This one was located at the Jomo Kenyatta Road, opposite to the Special Court. She worked there for a few months, four to five months, until Massaquoi was moved to another safe house. H4 worked in only two of the safe houses, in Pipeline and on Jomo Kenyatta Road. She explained that if Massaquoi had to leave the safe house on Pipeline, he wouldn't go out alone. The security guards came with him and acted as his driver. The security guards worked from morning to afternoon, when there was another shift that worked until night. H4 named a few of the security guards,

including Defense 08, H6, and Z3. Besides them and H4, there were no other staff members at the Pipeline safe house. The security guards were always present at the safe house, there were 2, 3, 4 guards there at the same time. People could not access the house freely. There was a gate and a guard at the gate, and no way for anyone to get in or out.

H4 explained that Massaquoi left the safe house whenever he had an appointment somewhere, with the doctor or a meeting at the Special Court. He always left with a security guard. He did not have appointments every day, but she could not say how often he would leave for these appointments. He was never gone for more than two hours at a time. The witness was not sure whether Massaquoi had stayed the night outside the safe house, but she always saw him in the mornings when she went to work. They had no visitors at the safe house in 2003.

The prosecution questions H4

The prosecution began by asking H4 when she had begun working at the safe house. She confirmed that she worked from March to September 2003, but she could not remember the exact dates. She worked until the end of September and gave birth to her son on 24 October 2003. She had her son's birth certificate with her and presented the document from her phone to the court. The document showed that the child was born on 24 October 2003 in Freetown and had been registered on 23 July 2008 in Freetown. The document had been issued and signed the same day, 23 July 2008. H4 explained that she had come to the Netherlands in 2007 and wanted her children to visit her. In order for them to get a passport in Sierra Leone, they had to get a birth certificate. H4's husband went to the hospital and they issued the birth certificates for her children. H4 speculated that her husband had told the hospital the date of birth and names of her son and daughter.

The witness testified that she was the only cook working in 2003. Another cook started working in 2004, but they did not work for Mr. Gibril. She had told the Dutch police that she was the main cook. She explained that there were three cooks besides her, but she was the main cook. She named another person, who was a helper, so they were four in total making food at the Special Court in 2004. She worked there until 2007. At Brookfields Hotel, there was a large kitchen where they cooked. She didn't work there in 2003, as it didn't open until 2004. In 2003, she was working for Mr. Gibril at Pipeline. There was another safe house located at Hills Station. She had worked there as well, but she could not remember when. She had taken food to Hills Station but could not remember whether she had done so in 2003.

H4 testified that Massaquoi once left the safe house to go to the beach for a walk. She could not recall him and Elizabeth leaving the safe house together without the security guards. She repeated that nobody visited the safe house in 2003, not even Massaquoi's friends or relatives. She could not remember whether Elizabeth left the safe house in 2003. H4 would go grocery shopping with Aunt Nancy. Besides shopping for groceries, she did not leave the safe house during her working hours. She worked downstairs, while Massaquoi and his family lived upstairs, but he liked to come downstairs and read newspapers. The family watched movies inside the house and the children played inside the fenced area to pass the time. Sometimes the wife would come to the kitchen and spend time with her or go to the other side to spend time with the security guards. The witness could not recall what Massaquoi would do to pass the time.

H4 knew H3, he worked at the safe house. They did not work at the same safe house in 2003. From March to September 2003, she worked at the safe house at the same time as Defense 08.

They did not see each other every day, the security guards worked in shifts, Defense 08 was not there every day. The witness could not remember exactly when in 2003 Defense 08 worked at the safe house.

The safe house in Pipeline had only one gate and one door. The children did not go to school in 2003. She was not aware of the connection between Mr. Massaquoi and Michael Bona, but she saw him being brought to the safe house with the rest of the family. She could not remember Michael Bona having a particular assignment at the safe house. During the half a year she worked there in 2003, the only times she did not see Massaquoi at the house was on Sundays, as she did not work on that day. The security guards were three or two in total, with one of them by the door inside and one of them outside the house. If there were three of them, two would be outside.

The witness stopped working at Massaquoi's safe house in 2004. After that, she saw him in 2004 or 2005 at another safe house. She saw him at the balcony from the car, they waved to each other. She had also been in contact with him since then, testifying that she spoke to his daughter last year. She had heard that he had won a case in Finland and had searched for his daughter on Facebook, asking to speak with him. H4 then talked with Gibril Massaquoi on the phone. She had heard from his daughter that he and Elizabeth had split up.

H4 had mentioned a name during her testimony. She was not sure of the first name of this person. She recalled one of the security guards losing his weapon during his shift at Massaquoi's safe house. She did not know which security guard had lost his weapon, she was not at the house at the time, she was at the Special Court when a report about the incident came in. According to that report, the incident occurred in 2005.

Further questions from the defense

H4 further testified that they kept a logbook at the safe house. It was used by the guards to mark when someone was going in or out. She explained that when she called Massaquoi, he did not want to talk to her.

Further questions from the prosecution

When H4 began working at the safe house, Massaquoi had not yet arrived. He was brought in a week after she began working there, after they had set up the kitchen. She estimated that she began working in early March and stated that it is also possible that she began working on 16 April 2003.

Defense written evidence is presented

Finally, the defense presented a piece of written evidence. They had requested information from the Finnish police about the Liberian Truth and Reconciliation Commission reports concerning the burning of houses. According to the police, the Commission had conducted over 1000 interviews in Lofa and at least 3900 in Montserrado, with no mention of Angel Gabriel or Gibril Massaquoi.

The prosecution pointed out that the TRC reports state that they are not exhaustive.

May 24, 2023 – Day 55: Safe house security examined

Today, the Court continued its hearings in Turku, Finland.

The Court began by hearing the pre-trial tape of a witness who could not make it to the hearing in Monrovia earlier this month. This witness told the Finnish police that he had worked as a security guard in the safe houses where Mr Massaquoi was kept as a protected witness of the Special Court for Sierra Leone. He was asked about the security arrangements at the safe house and whether Mr Massaquoi could have left the safe house while staying there.

The second witness of the day was heard via video link from abroad. He testified to having worked as a security guard in the safe houses where Mr Massaquoi lived from 2003 to 2005. Much like the first witness, this witness was questioned by the parties about the security arrangements and routines followed in the safe houses and whether Mr Massaquoi could have left the residence while staying there.

The Court is scheduled to continue the hearings next week, Monday 29.

May 24, 2023 [Finland] Day 55: Safe house security examined

Witness H3's police interview recording is played

As H3 was unable to appear in court and the court decided that his witness testimony could be received by watching the recording of his police interview. The recording was played in court.

H3 was asked about his tasks and assignments in 2003. He testified that in 2003, he worked as an armed police officer in Sierra Leone. From 22 May 2003, he was working in witness protection at the request of the Special Court for Sierra Leone. When he began this role, witnesses were being brought from different districts by the Witness Protection Team. His task was to protect witnesses that were placed in safe houses. He worked in the safe houses, in the office and he sometimes travelled to other districts to bring more witnesses to Freetown. In 2003, he was working at a safe house on Pipeline. The witness living in that safe house was Gibril Massaquoi, he lived there with his wife, children and brother. This was the first safe house H3 worked at and it was the first safe house that Gibril Massaquoi stayed in. H3 could not recall exactly when he was brought into the safe house. They had logbooks that they used at the time. He was not sure whether these logbooks had been archived or whether they could be accessed.

When the witness began working for the Special Court, it took a few weeks before any witnesses were brought. Gibril was the first witness. This was the first time the witness had met Gibril Massaquoi, he had heard his name on the radio before but had never met him. He was brought a few weeks after 22 May 2003. When H3 went to the safe house for the first time, Gibril Massaquoi was there. He started working at the safe house the same day he was brought there. Gibril Massaquoi was there with his family, but Michael Bona came later. H3 estimated that Gibril spent about a year in the first safe house. He had heard of an attack in Kington, in Bomi, Freetown. He was not on duty when the incident occurred. He could not remember the date, but it had been mentioned in some documents. He learned about the attack when he came to the office.

H3 explained the security arrangements at Pipeline. The guards were split into two shifts, A and B. There were one or two guards per shift. The safe house had a fence and some of the guards were armed. There was security 24/7. The guards had the key to the gate because the witnesses were not allowed to leave the house freely, even for meetings at the Special Court office. The safe house on Pipeline had one main gate and one exit gate, but only the main gate could be used. The witness could not have used the exit gate as they would not be authorized by the guards to do so. The guards had a room inside the house, but they mostly sat outside by the gate. The guards saw the witness every day. They would stay on duty until the next shift came to relieve them. The guard coming to the next shift had to see the witness before changing shifts.

The witness could not remember any time that Gibril stayed out of the safe house on Pipeline for a long period of time. He listed some of the other guards working at Pipeline, including Defense 08 and H6. There were no other members of staff, Gibril's wife was cooking. Someone was sent to buy groceries so that they could cook at the house. He could not recall who did the shopping but speculated that it was Gibril's wife. He then stated that there were some women working in Witness Protection who may have done it, including a lady who is now in Holland whose name he had forgotten. He speculated that GM's wife went outside to buy groceries. Neither Gibril Massaquoi nor Michael Bona went outside. Every time the guards changed shifts, they would see the witness and note their shift in the logbook before commencing their duties.

H3 was not involved in escorting Gibril outside the safe house. Other security guards from the office took care of these duties. The longest time Gibril was away from the safe house was two to three hours. His return was always noted in the logbook, he had a code name so that he could not be identified. H3 testified that Gibril never spent the night outside the safe house.

After Pipeline, Gibril Massaquoi was taken to Jomo Kenyatta Road, Freetown. He stayed there for almost a year as well. From there, he was taken to Kington, where the attack happened. After Kington, he moved to the Light, around the Brookfields area. H3 could not remember the street Gibril Massaquoi lived on in Light. H3 worked in all of these safe houses. The one in Light was the last one. After Gibril Massaquoi was relocated, H3 had not seen him. They had not called each other either.

Witness H6 is heard

H6 was heard via video link from the United Kingdom.

The defense questions H6

The defense began by asking H6 where he had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. H6 testified that they met in Sierra Leone, when he was working for the Special Court for Sierra Leone. They met in March 2003 on 7B Pipeline, off Wilkinson Road. It was one of the Special Court's safe houses, the witness was working there as a security guard for the Witness Protection Unit. He began working there in March 2003 and worked with Gibril Massaquoi until early 2005. The safe house in Pipeline was the first one Gibril Massaquoi lived in. He lived there with his family, whose names the witness listed. Massaquoi lived in the Pipeline safe house until 2004, when the family moved to Jomo Kenyatta Road. They did not live there for a long time, H6 estimated that they moved again at the end of 2004.

H6 gave the names and code names of the other guards working at the Pipeline safehouse, including Defense 08 and a woman who did not work as a security guard but came to visit the house occasionally. He also provided his own code name. The witness was working at the safe house with his wife when Massaquoi arrived there. His wife, H4, worked as a cook at the safe house. The witness gave the names of the three other guards working at the safe house when Massaquoi arrived, including Defense 08. H6's task was to guard the safe house during the day. He would make sure that Gibril Massaquoi and his family did not leave the house and that nobody came inside. He would patrol and walk around the area. The guards had a logbook that was used to note down shift changes and anything that happened at the house. The witness testified that he worked at the safe house seven days a week from March till September 2003. He did not have days off and did not take any sick leave or other time off. His shift was from 7 am to 7 pm. He usually saw Gibril Massaquoi during his shift, he could hear the family upstairs playing games or listening to the radio.

The witness testified that when he was not patrolling the property, he was downstairs inside the house, facing the gate. When the guards changed shifts, they would inspect the house, the family and Gibril Massaquoi before handing the shift over to the next guard. The logbook was used to log daily activities, such as the beginning and end of patrols and the change of the guards. Gibril Massaquoi left the safe house in 2003, to go to a doctor's appointment or to the office of the Special Court. He always had security with him, he never left the house alone. The guards at the house were contacted via phone or radio before a vehicle was sent to pick him up. H6 could not say exactly how long the trips outside the safe house took, it depended on the appointment. He was never gone for a whole day.

Massaquoi was paid an allowance while he was living at the safe house. In 2005, H6 had stopped working at the safe houses and went to work at the main office, where he handled the allowance payments. The guards had to make sure that Gibril Massaquoi personally signed for the money, his family members could not receive the money themselves. Massaquoi received the allowance every Friday.

H6 was aware of the attack on Gibril Massaquoi's safe house. It occurred in Kington. The witness was not present at the safe house at the time, but he had heard about it at the office. He estimated that the attack took place in 2005. He testified that H4 did not work at the safe house for as long as he did. She was pregnant at the time, she came for a few months and left. Later, she worked as a cook at Brookfields Hotel. The last time the witness saw Massaquoi face to face was in 2005. They had spoken after that, in 2022, the witness had congratulated him for winning his case.

The prosecution questions H6

The prosecution began by asking H6 about the start date of his employment at the Pipeline safe house. The witness testified that he could not forget the start date of his employment. He began working in March 2003, he did not know why the Special Court had written 16 April 2003 on his work contract. H4 began working around the same time as H6. They both began at the safe house in Pipeline. They were both at the safe house when Massaquoi and his family were brought in. H4 was asked to clean the house and H6 helped her with it. H6 could not remember being assigned anywhere else before starting at the safe house in Pipeline. He worked there the whole time Gibril Massaquoi lived at the house, with no days off. H6 could not remember when H4 stopped

working at the safe house, she was pregnant and left when she gave birth. Their child was born on 24 October 2003.

H6 testified that there were in total three guards at the safe house when Massaquoi arrived. The witness was there during the day and another shift would come for the night. This arrangement lasted two to three months before they had more guards came in. Massaquoi's family members did not go outside without the guards accompanying them. The children did not go to school. The family had no visitors. This was the case for the whole time he worked there until 2005. H6 recalled Massaquoi complaining about not being able to leave the safe house, he wanted to go to the beach. He was not sure whether he was taken to the beach, but he had opened the gate and Massaquoi was taken somewhere. He could not remember when the allowance payments began.

H6 worked in other safe houses after he left the one Gibril Massaquoi was living in. Between 2003 and early 2005, he worked only at Gibril Massaquoi's safe house. H6 did not know Y9. He knew H3, he came to work at the safe house later, similarly to Z3 and others, around 2004 or 2005. H3 did not work at Massaquoi's safe house on Pipeline at the same time as H6. The witness knew [REDACTED], he worked at the Pipeline, Jomo Kenyatta Road and Kington safe houses. He had heard that he had lost his weapon during a shift, he had gone out drinking with his friends and lost it. This did not happen within the safe house premises, but outside.

The witness called Massaquoi in 2022 to congratulate him. He testified that Massaquoi was in the Special Court's witness protection program between 2003 and 2005 and if anyone says he did anything during that time, they are lying. The witness and Massaquoi were not in regular contact between 2005 and 2022, but they spoke often. He did not know whether Massaquoi had been in contact with H4, but she had told him that she had also congratulated him for winning his case. H4 told him that all power comes from Christ and that he should tell the truth about the safe house.

According to H6, the safe house in Pipeline had only door at the front. It was surrounded by a tall fence with barbed wire on top. It only had one gate as an entrance. He could not remember any other gates or exits.

Questions from the court

The witness confirmed that originally, there were two to three guards at the safe house. He was alone during the day and there was another guard on night shift, he was armed. H6 was not armed on duty. There were two guards during the day from the beginning.

June 21, 2023 – Day 56: Last witness before summer break

Today, the Court heard one final witness before the summer break. The witness was heard remotely via video link in Turku.

According to their testimony, the witness worked as a security officer at the Special Court for Sierra Leone from 2004 onwards and also worked with Mr Massaquoi in his safe houses. The witness described the security arrangements in Mr Massaquoi's safe houses in detail. The witness recounted a different version of many details mentioned by other earlier witnesses. They were therefore questioned extensively by both prosecution and defence, for example about Mr Massaquoi's ability to leave the safe house without supervision.

After this witness, the Court is scheduled to break for summer. Some potential witness hearings and the final pleadings of the parties, have been postponed until August and early September, respectively.

June 21, 2023 [Finland] Day 56: Last witness before summer break

Witness Z3 is heard

Z3 was heard via video link from the United Kingdom.

The prosecution questions Z3

The prosecution began by asking Z3 about his employment with the Special Court for Sierra Leone. The witness testified that he had worked for the Special Court from August 2004 until May 2010. He worked in witness protection: he guarded the witnesses, their family and their movements and looked after their welfare. When he began working at the Special Court, Gibril Massaquoi was involved in the witness protection program. Z3 met him in 2004 in Freetown, Sierra Leone. Before that, they had met in Liberia in 1997. In 2004, they met in a safe house in Kington. The witness was assigned to protect him. From Kington, he moved to a safe house near the stadium, near Congo Cross bridge. Z3 also worked there to protect him.

The witness testified that he saw Gibril Massaquoi every week from 2004 onwards. He had different shifts every day, during some weeks he saw him only once a week, while during others he saw him twice a week. Sometimes, the witness was ordered to take Gibril Massaquoi anywhere he wanted to go in Freetown and he would drive him around. Z3 explained that the security arrangements in some of the safe houses run by the Special Court was inadequate. The safe house was attacked once in Kington, putting the security guards in danger. He clarified that some safe houses were not fenced, there was no surveillance equipment, people could walk in freely. Some houses had several entrances. Gibril Massaquoi lived in the safe houses with his wife and children, three in total. His brother also lived there and there were a lot of guests coming in at any point in time, Gibril Massaquoi's friends and family came to visit him. The guards could not ask the guests to leave and they could enter the safe house freely with no prior notice or request.

The safe houses Gibril Massaquoi was placed in were on Aberdeen Road, Jomo Kenyatta Road, Kington, Congo Cross. He left in 2007. Z3 added that he did not often see Gibril Massaquoi in the safe house while he was working there; he was told that he was studying or sleeping by his wife

or children. Z3 would sometimes hand over the shift to the next guard without seeing him at all and sometimes the next guard wouldn't see him either. The guests that would come to the gate at any time would ask to see Mr Massaquoi and the guards had no right to refuse, they usually let them in. The guards were familiar with most of the guests as they visited frequently. Z3 noted the visits down. The visitors were mostly Massaquoi's friends and relatives, some were former fighters.

Z3 testified that there was always a security guard and an armed policeman at the gate. When he started working at the Special Court, he was working at seven to ten different safe houses. He could not remember how many guards were working at these houses, but not every safe house had security guards. The guards at Gibril Massaquoi's safe house were always armed. When Z3 began at the safe house, the security arrangements were the same as before he had started. The first safe house on Aberdeen Road was not very secure, so Gibril Massaquoi was relocated. Every time something happened, he was relocated. As he was a high-profile witness, he needed good protection. Not every witness was protected by armed police or security guards. The safe house on Aberdeen Road was not very secure due to its location and environment. When the attack took place in Kington, Gibril Massaquoi did not have policemen guarding him. They came to the safe house only when he was relocated from Kington to Congo Cross, near the stadium.

The witness further testified that he would be called from the office by his supervisor to take Gibrl Massaquoi anywhere he wanted to go in Freetown. He would go about his business, do what he wanted to do, Z3 would stay in the car and then take him back to the safe house. One place Z3 could remember was on Bathurst Street, near Pademba Street. It was a place founded originally by RUF rebels, Massaquoi used to go there. He also went to see one of his girlfriends at night in the Kissy District.

Z3 testified that it would have been possible for Gibril Massaquoi to leave the safe house without anyone noticing. In addition to the main entrance, there was an exit at the back of the building. There were instances when the witness did not see Massaquoi during his shift. He complained about this to his colleagues, he was told that he was sleeping or studying. It was possible to travel between Sierra Leone and Liberia in one day as long as the transport was arranged beforehand. He knew this because in 1990, during the Liberian civil war, he had travelled with 8 missionaries. He had left Liberia one evening and arrived in Freetown the next day. The house did not have any security cameras. He speculated that Massaquoi could have been absent from the safe house for long periods of time, as he was not seen every day and his presence could not be verified. Massaquoi could have been absent from the safe house at least for two days, maybe longer. Massaquoi was capable of planning this, Z3 knows him. They first met in Liberia during the war, when the NPFL captured Z3. The second time they met was in Sierra Leone. He testified: "Based on my conversations with him, I know he could talk his way out of any crime. When you go from Sierra Leone to Liberia, you don't necessarily go straight from Freetown to Monrovia. You can go to a village or to the border. It is easy, very easy".

The witness testified that all the safe houses had more than one entrance and they could be left from the back as well. The fences around the houses could be climbed. He gave the attack on Kington as an example, the attackers had climbed over the fence, it was easy. Nobody watched the back gate and there were no cameras. He had complained about it to his colleagues and to his supervisors, who he named, but nothing was done about it. Z3 knew Saleem Vahidy, he was the head of the WVS. He did not think that Saleem Vahidy was aware of the fact that guards would change shifts with only a verbal confirmation from Gibril Massaquoi's family that he was

sleeping. The official instructions required that the guard coming to the shift would see the witness, but this did not occur in practice.

Z3 testified that Gibril Massaquoi was very nice and friendly towards the guards and described them as "close friends." He also clarified the 'alleged' attack in Kington, Gibril Massaquoi had been planning it as a way to prove his innocence. He had planned the attack with people outside the safe house, they would come and attack the safe house so that he could show that his life was in danger and be moved to another place. He speculated that if the attack had not been planned, the security guard on shift would have been killed. The attackers came to the yard and Gibril Massaquoi climbed over the fence and ran away. He knew that the attack was coming and was ready to climb over the fence. Z3 found out about the attack from the guard on duty. They all rushed to the house to secure the area. More guards were added for the night and he was relocated the next day. All the guards knew that he had planned the attack. The incident was investigated, but it did not lead to anything besides him being relocated "because he was a high-profile person and they needed him."

According to the witness, the security arrangements differed between different witnesses. Some witnesses had no security at all, some had many. Some had a close protection officer, but no policemen securing the house. Gibril Massaquoi's situation was different due to his background, he needed the highest level of security possible. He was in danger because of the atrocities he had committed, such as ritual killings and opening people's stomachs. Stories about these acts are still going around in Liberia and people know that he committed them, he was trying to hide from what he did.

Z3 knew Y9, he was in Liberia during the war. He had not met him in Sierra Leone. It would have been possible for Gibril Massaquoi to leave the safe house in 2003 without a guard. This was based on his understanding of the security arrangements in the 2003 safe house. He had not personally seen Massaquoi leave the safe house unattended. Sometimes a guard would fall asleep at their post, leaving the high-profile witness able to leave unnoticed. Z3 and his colleague had both fallen asleep once with another witness, and he had left the safe house. One policeman had also fallen asleep and had his gun stolen. Z3 could not recall him or any of his colleagues reporting Massaquoi missing or being absent from the safe house. Should they have encountered this, they had instructions to report it to the office.

The defense questions Z3

The defense began by asking if Z3 knew when Gibril Massaquoi was placed in the first safe house. The witness testified that he did not know. The first safe house was located on Aberdeen Road, near the Aberdeen Beach in Freetown. He had learned the location of the safe house from one of his colleagues from the Special Court. The first safe house had more than one gate. He could not remember who had told him this, but he had been shown the house when he began working for the Special Court in 2004. The defense pointed out that Z3 had testified in the lower court that he had not worked at the Special Court during the first two safe houses Gibril Massaquoi was placed in and that he was not aware of their security arrangements. He had also testified that he had not been to the first two safe houses. The witness responded that he had meant that he had not been assigned to work in these two safe houses. He was aware of their locations, and he had lived next to the second one.

Z3 testified that the guards could check the guests when they arrived. The final decision on whether to allow them in or not was with the permission of the high-profile witness. The guards did not always have prior notice of a guest's visit. Sometimes, Gibril's wife or children would come and tell the guards that the guest could come in. The guests spent different amounts of time at the safe house, some spent the night. The visits were recorded in a logbook. Z3 could not name any of the ex-fighters that came to visit Gibril, he did not know them as they were not in the same unit during the war. They did not record the visitor's names, just the amount of people visiting. Gibril's brother was also an ex-fighter, Z3 gave his nickname to the court. He is currently in Finland with Gibril. The defense pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that he did not know how many witnesses the Special Court was protecting in total when Massaquoi had been placed in the safe house. He had also testified that he did not know anything about the entrances and exits of Massaquoi's first safe house. The witness replied that he could not remember saying so.

The witness testified that the logbook was used to mark down shift changes, to note down when visitors came by, and to note when the high-profile witness left the safe house or returned, when he was sent for by the office. When a guard came to relieve another guard from duty, it was written down in the logbook. When the shift was being handed over, the situation at the safe house was checked. It was not written in the logbook, the guards just discussed it between themselves. Despite the instructions being to check on the witness, the guards did not always see the witness or check his whereabouts.

Z3 could not remember when he started working at Gibril Massaquoi's safe house. He was doing both night and day shifts and estimated that one shift lasted for 12 hours. He could not always tell which guard would come on duty next. He could not tell how many times he was told that Massaquoi was sleeping or studying, but this occurred several times. There were several times where he didn't see him. If Massaquoi was picked up by someone, Z3 was notified by the office that he would be picked up shortly before. The guard coming to pick him up would notify the guards on duty that he was on his way to pick up the witness. He then clarified that this notification did not come beforehand; the driver would mention it when he arrived at the safe house to pick up the witness. Z3 was not aware of Massaquoi not being present when a guard was coming to pick him up, this never happened when he was on duty. He could not remember how many times Massaquoi was picked up for meetings during his shifts, but it happened several times. Z3 had not driven Massaquoi's family members himself, he had not seen it happen during his shifts. He speculated that the children were driven to school when they enrolled, but this didn't happen very often.

Massaquoi received an allowance, it was paid in cash. Sometimes the money was given to his wife if he was sleeping. His wife could sign for the money as well. When Gibril was present, he had to personally sign for the money. The defense pointed out that Z3 had testified in the lower court that he was aware of money being given to witnesses, but not whether they had signed for it or not. He replied that either the high-profile witness or his wife signed for the money.

Z3 testified that it was the responsibility of the guard on duty to notify his supervisor if the witness was not in the safe house. The guard on duty was responsible for the witness during his shift. Massaquoi used the allowance for food and for taking care of his family. He was not aware of Massaquoi giving money to his relatives to support them. The Special Court was responsible for the education of the children, medical care and renovations and repairs at the safe house. The

money given to Massaquoi was for himself and his family, he could spend it as he wanted. The furthest Z3 had taken Massaquoi was on Kissy Road, they had not been outside Freetown.

The witness confirmed that he was on duty during the shift just before the attack on the safe house. He didn't notice anything that could have been related to the attack. The attack happened at night and he was on the day shift. Z3 based his speculation that Massaquoi had planned the attack on the way it happened. He speculated that if it had truly been planned by outsiders, his colleagues would have been attacked more severely and the witness would have been in danger. The attack was allowed to happen in a certain way, it was conducted so that Massaquoi would be taken seriously and relocated. The safe house was near the worst slum in Sierra Leone and Massaquoi did not like this.

None of the other guards ever told Z3 that Massaquoi left the safe house alone. They discussed the possibility among themselves. The policeman who lost his weapon, Massaquoi was involved in that incident as well. A policeman losing his weapon is a sign of weakness. The security arrangements had many flaws, they all slept on duty there. Massaquoi could have made a plan to stay away from the safe house for more than two days by making a deal with the guards. He could have made an agreement with his family that they would cover for him if somebody came to ask about him. He could have done it on a weekend, when the security was not as tight and the office was closed. Z3 testified that Massaquoi had the money and contacts to do so, he is very intelligent. He could have also left the safe house in Kington. The defense pointed out that the witness had testified in the lower court that it was not possible to leave the safe house in Kington. He replied that it was possible through the back door.

Z3 saw Massaquoi in Liberia in 1997, in Bo Waterside, near the border. He could not recall the exact month that they saw each other.

The witness was contacted by the Finnish police through the British police. When he was in the US, he was contacted and was asked whether he had any information about the present case. He told the police that he knows a lot about this case. A man called Alan had contacted him before the Finnish police. The witness did not know his full name, he knew him as Alan from when he worked at the Special Court. Alan contacted him through WhatsApp. The defense pointed out that Z3 had testified in the lower court that Alan had worked as a lawyer in the Special Court, they had worked together, they had discussed about the Finnish police contacting him. Z3 confirmed this. He had not spoken about Gibril Massaquoi with Alan. Z3 knew H4 and H6, they are married, they all worked together at the Special Court.

Question from the court

Z3 testified that when Massaquoi was picked up from the safe house, he was contacted by his lawyer on his mobile phone.

August 25, 2023 – Day 57: Final phase of the trial begins

Today, the Court began the final phase of the proceedings by hearing a new witness called in by the Defence.

The witness, a former RUF member, served with high-ranking RUF and Liberian commanders. He knew Gibril Massaquoi personally and was questioned by both Defence and Prosecution extensively about the events that had been discussed throughout the trial.

The witness testified, for example, about Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts between 2000 and 2003, the RUF fighting alongside the Liberian government troops in Lofa County, Liberia, and events in Waterside, Monrovia.

The Court is scheduled to continue on Monday with the hearing of another new witness and the defendant, Mr Massaquoi, before the final pleadings by both parties which are scheduled for early September.

August 25, 2023 [Finland] Day 57: Final phase of the trial begins

Documentary evidence is discussed

The court began the session by examining various pieces of written evidence presented by both the defense and the prosecution. The first two pieces of evidence were answers to questions that the defense and prosecution had asked the Special Court of Sierra Leone. Both parties had asked the Special Court about its evidence database and the interviews it conducted in Liberia. The third piece of evidence, an article published in the German magazine Die Zeit about Kamatahun Hassala, was presented by the defense.

Witness H5 is heard

The defense questions H5

The defense began by asking how H5 had gotten to know Gibril Massaquoi. The witness testified that he knows him from their RUF days in Sierra Leone. They first met in the Western Area, from Masiaka to Mile 81 and Bo. They met during the civil war in Sierra Leone. H5 was around 11 or 12 at the time, he was born on 4 November 1980. They were both RUF members at the time, he had been abducted as a young boy in Kailahun and met Massaquoi up to 2 years later. He was working under Superman, he was fetching water for his wife and doing chores for them. The witness went to Liberia with Superman around the same time as LURD's second attempted attack on Liberia. Sam Bockarie was stationed in Buedu, while Superman had been stationed in Kono and Makeni. The witness was not aware of the exact movements of Sam Bockarie. He had seen him in Liberia.

The witness testified that Superman went to Liberia with a battalion of 60 to 80 men to support Charles Taylor's troops against LURD, who was attacking the government and wanted to overthrow it. H5 was in Liberia with Benjamin Yeaten, they told him that he should go to school as he was smart, and that he should not go back to the RUF, but should stay with Yeaten. Yeaten "adopted" him when Superman crossed the border and Voinjama was recaptured from the

rebels. From then on, H5 stayed with Yeaten. At the time, he was stationed in Monrovia. Benjamin Yeaten returned to Monrovia when the invasion ended, H5 estimated that this was around 1999 and 2000. After the rebels attacked and he was in Monrovia, he used to travel often to Lofa. He would go to Kolahun, Foya and Vahun, these were all locations where Benjamin Yeaten would have his base for a few weeks at a time. He was not a frontline commander, he stayed behind.

H5 saw Gibril Massaquoi in Lofa between 1999 and 2001. He testified that they met in Vahun in 2001 or 2002. The witness listed the Liberian soldiers and commanders that he remembered were in Lofa at the time, LURD was only in Lofa, so all the commanders were there: Benjamin Yeaten, the "boss himself," Roland Duo, the Navy Chief of Staff, Christopher Varmo, aka Mosquito, was the leader of the First Army. Yeaten was in command of the SSS and its separate unit called Jungle Fire. There was also Junior and Sampson. Superman was in Lofa before he died, and so was Zigzag Marzah. The witness could not say what Massaquoi was doing in Vahun, but he was not alone; he was there with Morris Kallon, Mike Lamin and some others from the RUF. H5 speculated that they wanted to go to Monrovia to meet with President Taylor. They were only passing by Vahun, it was not possible to meet President Taylor without going through Benjamin Yeaten. He saw Massaquoi over two days. The witness was not aware whether Massaquoi had troops under his command in Lofa. He had gone from Lofa to Monrovia with Massaquoi and his friends, they travelled by car and motorbike.

The witness testified that he had not seen Massaquoi participate in combat. He knew Defense 07, he was the first commander to go to Liberia to help Taylor's forces when LURD attacked for the first time in Lofa. The second time was when Superman went to Liberia. H5 had been in different areas where there had been fighting; he was in Foya the day it was attacked and also in Vahun when it was attacked. On his way to Monrovia, there had been an ambush in Kumbohun. The witness had heard of Kamatahun and the atrocities against civilians there. He had heard that there had been a massacre in Kamatahun Hassala, but he could not say much about it because he was not there personally. Zigzag Marzah had been arrested and imprisoned because of the incident. The witness was personally present when Zigzag was arrested in Sinkor. Yeaten was very angry with him and tortured him, and the President's wife stepped in. H5 estimated that the government did not like what had happened in Popalahun and other places, it didn't look good in the media. He speculated that the government arrested Zigzag to clear its image. The witness could not say when the arrest had taken place.

H5 was in Monrovia permanently and only went to Lofa if Benjamin Yeaten needed something there. He had also seen Massaquoi in Monrovia. They met after Superman's death, maybe in 2001 or 2002. They met at White Flower, the President's residence. H5 was in hospital when Superman was killed. From there, he went to Vahun, where Benjamin Yeaten was with Superman. They were supposed to travel to Monrovia, but Yeaten cancelled the trip. H5 wanted them to travel, because he wanted to see the African football qualifiers, but Yeaten told him no, as he had plans to kill Superman. Superman died about two days before H5 heard about it. The day he found out about Superman's death, he saw Gibril Massaquoi at the White Flower. They met outside the White Flower, about two days after Superman's death. The witness did not see Massaquoi again after this. At the time, LURD and government forces were fighting in Lofa, the situation in Monrovia was peaceful. LURD came to Monrovia and left many times.

The witness knew of World Wars I, II and III. He described the different battles and explained the different command structures in Liberian and Sierra Leonean armed forces. There were three

attacks in total. During the third attack, the battles were fought between two bridges. Benjamin Yeaten was in charge at New Bridge, he was staying at EJ Roye. Roland Duo was in charge of Somalia Drive, between Freeport and Red Light. An Army Division was stationed at Waterside Bridge, led by Christopher Varmo, aka Mosquito. H5 had been to the two bridges, when he came back from Ghana. When asked about violence against civilians, he stated that civilians had no business on the battlefield. Government forces were also fighting between each other and were looting for personal gain, that is why Anti Looting Squad was formed. The witness did not know if Massaquoi was present during the World Wars.

H5 knew of Salami, his full name was Salami Kabbah. He was Benjamin Yeaten's personal driver, a member of the SSS. Salami was killed during the fighting in Monrovia. The witness was not present when it happened, had been shot in the stomach during the first attack on Monrovia and he was receiving treatment in Ghana during the second attack. During the third attack, he was coming and going. That day, he was at EJ Roye with Benjamin Yeaten and Salami. He was talking with Salami, when there was a distress call from Somalia Drive. Something was needed from the ammunition depot at White Flower. Salami went to deal with the situation and Benjamin Yeaten went to meet with the President. The witness went to Sinkor and he got a call that a bomb had fallen and had killed Salami. He later saw Salami's body, after the ceasefire. Salami was buried at the Old Road cemetery. Gibril Massaquoi was not present at the funeral. H5 was not sure whether there had been other people named Massaquoi present at the Waterside area, it is a common name.

The witness could not recall there being a group called aqbah. When fighting was ongoing, it was not possible for a government vehicle to travel from Monrovia to Kolahun, Voinjama or Vahun. The war ended in Monrovia in 2003, he was there to witness it. It was the same month that Charles Taylor left for Nigeria. The witness estimated that World War I began in 2002 or 2003. After the war, he stayed in Liberia until he was taken away by the Special Court. He did not see Gibril Massaquoi after the war until he saw him at the Special Court.

H5 found out about Gibril Massaquoi's arrest in Finland on the webpage of Civitas Maxima. When he saw the news, he contacted people at Civitas Maxima, he knew Alan Wonder from the Special Court. They met in 2016 in Paris. He was waiting for a decision. Alan wrote him a recommendation letter. When H5 saw the news about Gibril's arrest, he sent a screenshot of the Facebook page to Alan. He wrote to Alan and said that he doubted the timeline of the case, when Gibril Massaquoi was supposed to have been in Liberia. He also contacted Background 1. Neither of them answered despite them having communicated before. H5 had also spoken with Alan after the first judgment.

The witness had met Background 1 during the Second Liberian Civil War. Background 1 was arrested after publishing an article in 1999, 2000 or 2003. After Charles Taylor and Benjamin Yeaten saw the article, he was arrested and taken to Klay. H5 went with Benjamin Yeaten to see him in Klay. He declined to comment on whether Background 1 had been subjected to violence in Klay. He did not see Gibril Massaquoi there.

The prosecution questions H5

The prosecution began by asking about when Superman went to Liberia. The witness testified that it was around the second time that LURD attacked the Liberian government. They had been pushed back to Guinea after the first attack and during the second attack, Superman went to

Liberia. This was in connection with the Liberian Civil War that began after 1996 when Charles Taylor had been elected President. Superman went to Liberia to help Taylor's troops to repel the rebels, he pushed them to Guinea. Superman did not go to Guinea in connection with this particular battle, he went there later. He went from Sierra Leone to Guinea to fight. H5 did not know what kind of mission Superman was on at the time. He was certain that Superman had gone to Guinea, it was mentioned on the radio and in the newspapers.

H5 explained that Defense 07 went to Liberia during LURD's first attack, to help the government. Superman was only there during the second attack. He could not say for how long Defense 07 had been in Liberia before Superman came, but estimated it was less than a year. When Defense 07 left for Liberia, Sam Bockarie was the leader of the RUF and when Superman went, the RUF was led by Issa Sesay. Defense 07 also went to Voinjama. H5 could not tell for how long Defense 07 stayed in Liberia. He explained that he had originally gone to Liberia with Superman, but he did not return to Sierra Leone with him as he stayed in Liberia with Benjamin Yeaten. After Superman had gone to Liberia to counter the second attack, H5 stayed permanently in Liberia.

When the witness moved to Monrovia, he was staying in Congo Town, at White Flower and at Benjamin Yeaten's residence. He rented an apartment from Benjamin Yeaten's little brother, Busy Boy. He had been to the RUF guest house in Liberia, it was in Sinkor. While he was in Monrovia, the RUF representatives were told to move out of the guest house. The RUF had a person taking care of the guest house. When Taylor came to power, he opened the borders for the RUF. Because of international pressure over Taylor's RUF connections, the RUF was told to leave the guest house. H5 confirmed that the caretaker of the guest house was Defense 09. He used to be a part of Black Guy Unit, they were Foday Sankoh's bodyguards. H5 knew that Defense 09 had gone to Monrovia before him, but he could not tell when. H5 was involved in getting Defense 09 as a witness at the Special Court and they were both moved from Liberia to Sierra Leone around the same time, after the arrest of Charles Taylor.

H5 and Benjamin Yeaten often went to Lofa after their move to Monrovia. Initially they went to Kolahun, then Vahun. Roland Duo was in Foya. There was fighting ongoing while he was in Lofa around this time. He saw RUF members there, they were fighting alongside government troops. H5 testified that Benjamin Yeaten transported arms to Lofa, he was the leader of the SSS and all supplies had to go through him. The RUF was incorporated into a unit called Jungle Fire led by a Liberian, to show that there was no official connection between the Liberian government and the RUF. H5 also testified that it was clear that diamonds were exchanged between the RUF and Charles Taylor. Benjamin Yeaten may have acted as a middleman, but the diamonds were for Charles Taylor. Taylor was supplying the RUF with ammunition and it was common knowledge that arms were exchanged for diamonds.

The witness testified that he was not personally present in Kamatahun when the atrocities were committed against civilians, but he had heard about it. Zigzag Marzah was arrested after this incident in Monrovia. He had heard Benjamin Yeaten discussing the incident, it took place in Kamatahun. H5 was not certain when this had taken place, estimating that it was in 2000 or 2001.

H5 and Gibril Massaquoi met in Vahun. He was a part of a delegation on its way to meet with Charles Taylor with Mike Lamin, Morris Kallon, and others. They came from Sierra Leone and met in Vahun. The delegation continued on his vehicle. They left from Vahun towards Kumbohun and Monrovia through the logging company. They were ambushed in Kumbohun and could not get

to Monrovia. H5 had heard from somewhere that Taylor was trying to destroy evidence against him, it would not be wise to go to Monrovia as Superman had been already killed. The witness confirmed that he had met Gibril Massaquoi two days after Superman's death at the White Flower. This was before they met in Vahun. It was possible that he met Gibril Massaquoi in Vahun in the last six months of 2001.

The witness testified that he was injured in the stomach on the third day of World War I. He was first taken to the president's house and transported to Harbel hospital. From there, he was transferred to Ghana. At the time, there were Sierra Leoneans in Monrovia. H5 was not in Monrovia during World War II, he was in Ghana receiving treatment. He returned to Monrovia during World War III, he was repairing weapons. He was staying at White Flower, the fighting was taking place in Waterside and Somalia Drive, between the two bridges. H5 saw Sierra Leoneans when he went to the frontlines. He could not estimate how many there were. There were a lot of RUF and Sierra Leoneans. The witness explained that the word aqbah means a strong man, a tough guy. As the RUF called themselves that, the Liberians adopted the word and started calling them aqbah. There was no specific independent RUF unit in Monrovia at the time, they were spread out all over the government forces. Christopher Varmo was the original Mosquito, he was in Monrovia during the World Wars.

H5 travelled to Ghana by plane. During the World Wars, it was possible to reach certain areas in Lofa by air. LURD had conquered the whole of Lofa, so government helicopters could not really land there.

The witness was moved back to Sierra Leone by the Special Court. He was a witness for them, he was placed in a protected safe house in Freetown. H5 explained the security arrangements of the safehouse. He was supposed to let them know when he was going somewhere, but sometimes he went out without telling them. He was checked on and given things that he asked for, and he was left alone. He had also visited other safe houses, they all seemed the same to him. He was not aware of the details of the security arrangements. H5 was a high-level witness.

Further questions from the defense

H5 confirmed that he saw Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia at White Flower two days after Superman's death. They met in Vahun after this, he was there with Morris Kallon and Mike Lamin. After the RUF representatives were asked to vacate the guest house in Monrovia, Defense 09 stayed nearby. He lived close to the safe house and later in Red Light. The witness had not heard of Gibril Massaquoi being arrested in Liberia. When Sam Bockarie went to Liberia, he took his own troops with him, he had bodyguards such as Salami Kabbah. They were merged into different units of the Liberian troops. Taylor did not want anyone to know that there was an RUF unit in Liberia.

The witness repeated that he was an important witness for the Special Court. After his testimony, he stayed in Sierra Leone and went to France in 2015. After his testimony, he continued visiting the Special Court and got help with things, sometimes financially. He could send emails to the Netherlands if he needed help. Between 2008 and 2015 in Sierra Leone, he did not have any guards with him, he just had the phone number of a policeman working at the Special Court.

H5 had been in contact with Alain Werner and other lawyers before the present trial. When he saw the case online and that Gibril Massaquoi was accused of crimes in Liberia in 2002 and 2003,

he was shocked. He sent messages about the case to Alain and Background 1 saying that he could help them to understand what had happened. He was also contacted by journalists from different countries. Nobody had pressured him or given him any financial incentives, he just wanted to get on with his life. He had sent a message from German journalist Johannes Böhme to Alain Werner and they spoke about it. The defense referred to H5's police interview, where he had mentioned that Werner wanted him to stay out of the case and asked him to meet in Paris. H5 declined to comment.

Further questions from the prosecution

H5 had a code name when he testified in Special Court. He stated that he was shocked and upset that the testimony that he made at the Special Court had ended up being used in the present case.

Witness Z3's recording from lower court is listened to

The court briefly listened to one question from Z3's lower court hearing to clarify the content of his testimony.

August 28, 2023 – Day 58: Gibril Massaquoi's final word

Today Monday August 28th, Gibril Massaquoi testified before the Appeals Court for the last time during these proceedings.

In the morning, a final witness testified online. He had experience working with investigators at the Special Court of Sierra Leone from summer 2003. He spoke of his role of taking some witnesses statements and analyzing others in relation to RUF activities in Sierra Leone. The witness stated that he had not heard of the name Gibril Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel in the course of these investigations.

The session ended with Gibril Massaquoi's final hearing. He answered some last questions to do with his whereabouts from 2001-3, routes he used when travelling around Liberia and the functioning of the safehouses that he stayed in during his time cooperating with the Special Court.

The Appeal's Court has now concluded all its hearings. Next week, the prosecution will present its final pleadings on Monday 4th, followed by the defense on Friday 8th.

August 28, 2023 [Finland] Day 58: Gibril Massaquoi's final word

Witness Abraham Haddad is heard

The defense questions Abraham Haddad

The defense began by asking Abraham Haddad about his background. Haddad testified that he had done his training in Melbourne, Australia. He worked as a sergeant and a detective with the Victoria police for about 25 years. In 2003, he was employed by the UN as an intelligence analyst at the Special Court for Sierra Leone. His supervisor was Wayne Baston, who was at the Special Court for about six months before he left and Haddad took over. Haddad analyzed information brought in by investigators on the RUF, AFRC and CDF. He received handwritten reports, interview notes, graphs and documents. He assisted the prosecutor's office in managing the information. He also analyzed potential threats and risks to the Special Court as well as how to mitigate them. At the end of his term, he also worked as an investigator, travelling to various countries and taking statements. On the RUF, they collected statements and testimonies that the investigators were taking from the witnesses as well as news reports, for example on the role of foreign mercenaries connected to diamonds. Information relating to the RUF came from inside and outside Sierra Leone, such as from the Gambia and Liberia. Haddad did not conduct any interviews himself related to the RUF.

The witness had not gone to Liberia to conduct interviews on the RUF. He read all the interviews conducted in Liberia and added them to the investigation database, from where they were sent to the parties of the various trials at the Special Court. He could not say exactly how many interviews he had read, he estimated that there had been 50 or 60 in total. His task was to read all the interviews conducted by the Special Court staff. The witnesses in Liberia spoke of things such as diamond deals between the RUF and Charles Taylor, the connection between the RUF and Taylor and Taylor's role in the conflict in Sierra Leone. These interviews were carried out in Liberia from 2004 until 2007, when he left the Special Court. The work continued after he left.

Haddad had also read interviews conducted in Sierra Leone relating to the RUF's activities in Liberia. These interviews were related to Northern Sierra Leone, they were conducted in Sierra Leone. Liberian witnesses were interviewed in Monrovia. According to Haddad, Gibril Massaquoi's name did not come up in any of the interviews conducted in Liberia or in Sierra Leone. Gibril Massaquoi's radio call sign was Gaffa. The pseudonym the Special Court used during his witness protection was Goofy. The names Angel or Angel Gabriel did not come up during the interviews.

Haddad began working for the Special Court in July 2003, he had met Gibril Massaquoi in early 2004. His understanding was that in July 2003, Massaquoi was in a safe house with his children and his wife, under 24-hour surveillance. The access to the safe house was managed by the WVS. The Special Court would not have sent Gibril Massaquoi to Liberia to look for witnesses while he was staying at the safe house. He had not come across anything in the interviews about a witness being reached through him.

Haddad had heard of Background 1, but they had not met personally. He had read one of Background 1's testimonies in 2004, when it became public. He had not heard of Background 1 testifying that Gibril Massaquoi tortured him. According to Haddad, in his testimony, Background 1 mentioned that he was arrested by the SSS and taken somewhere, where he was tortured by Charles Taylor's son Chucky and Benjamin Yeaten. The witness stopped working for the Special Court in November 2007.

The prosecution questions Abraham Haddad

The prosecution began by asking Haddad about the interviews he had conducted. The witness explained that there was no official list of questions that they were supposed to ask, they just asked the interviewees where they had been and what they had experienced, with follow-up questions if needed. Two witnesses at a camp in Tripoli, Libya, were asked about the time before Charles Taylor came from the Ivory Coast in December 1989, Foday Sankoh, and the creation of the RUF, and how the war progressed in Sierra Leone and Liberia. He could not say what kind of questions were posed by the investigators in Liberia, they were also trying to get people to tell their story.

Haddad had not asked the interviewees about a village called Kamatahun. He had not directly asked whether they had been in Monrovia during the summer of 2003. He had not discussed events occurring in summer 2003 with them. He could not say whether his colleagues who had interviewed witnesses in Liberia had asked them about Kamatahun or events occurring in summer 2003 in Monrovia. He could not remember a village called Kamatahun, testifying that this village had not come up in the interviews he had read. From the material he had looked at, the radio call sign for Gibril Massaquoi, Gaffa, could have come up when he had been analyzing radio traffic between Monrovia and Sierra Leone. He recalled that one of the investigators had told him that Gaffa was his callsign. Haddad's task was to analyze the volume of radio traffic, he could not remember its content. The callsign Gaffa came up maybe two to three times in total, when he was analyzing the time period before 2000.

The witness was certain that the testimony from Background 1 that he had read mentioned his torture. He could not tell the date when the torture had allegedly happened, but speculated that it was before 2004. He testified that he would have known if Gibril Massaquoi was sent on a mission to Liberia to look for witnesses by the Special Court before he started working there. He

explained that if Gibril Massaquoi had been sent to Liberia, he would have been instantly killed there, and gave examples of Johny Paul Koroma and Sam Bockarie who were killed. He no information about any concrete plans to kill Gibril Massaquoi in Liberia, but he testified that he would bet his life on it.

Haddad explained that he was asked to testify in the current trial by Gibril Massaquoi's defense lawyers. He had not discussed the matter personally with Gibril Massaquoi in recent months. They had spoken about four to six months prior, when the lower court had acquitted him. Gibril's lawyer had asked him if he had heard of Angel or Angel Gabriel, he had answered that he had not. Haddad knew that Gibril was placed in a safe house as a protected witness. He never went to visit him and was not aware of the location of the safe house. If somebody wanted to talk to Gibril, they contacted the chief investigator. He assumed that they then contacted the WVS and Saleem Vahidy, who would send someone to bring Gibril to the Special Court by car. Haddad did not know of any details, of how Vahidy or his unit contacted Gibril. He testified that he did not think that Gibril had any legal counsel during this process. When he talked to him, he didn't have anyone assisting him.

Further questions from the defense

Haddad testified that he was stationed in Freetown when he joined the Special Court in 2003. The RUF did not have a base in Freetown during or after summer 2003. He had never seen or heard of Gibril not being available for a meeting when his presence was requested by the Special Court.

Defendant Gibril Massaquoi is heard

The defense questions Gibril Massaquoi

The defense began by asking Gibril Massaquoi whether he had been to Makeni since his evacuation in 2001. He testified that he never went there again, Makeni was the base for Issa Sesay and others, he could not have gone back after their conflict. As for H5's statement that he was in Vahun in 2001 with Mike Lamin, he responded that he believes H5 has trouble timing the events correctly. He testified that he met H5 in Vahun in late 2000 with the delegation. Mike Lamin was not there, he was in prison in Sierra Leone at the time, from May 2000 to August 2001. Mike Lamin was never a member of the delegation, he was in prison the whole time they were negotiating peace and was arrested after the UN incident in May 2000. He confirmed that none of the other witnesses heard in the present case had mentioned Mike Lamin as a member of the delegation.

Massaquoi testified that he was taken to the first safe house on 10 March 2003 with his family. It was a white building, it had three bedrooms upstairs and one bedroom downstairs. He confirmed that it was the building in the photographs included in the pre-trial investigation report. His family was relocated in April 2004 to a building almost opposite the Special Court. He was told that this was a temporary placement before they could get a more permanent place. The building was a light color, almost yellow. They stayed there until July 2004, when they were taken to the third safe house. The first safe house was located on 7B Pipeline, a side street off Wilkinson Road. The second safe house was on Jomo Kenyatta Road, near the center of Freetown. The third safe house was on Cole Lane in Kington, it was maroon in color. The family was relocated to the fourth safe house in July 2005 after the attack, a few weeks after the attack. This house was on North

Horton Street, near the national stadium. The house was off-white, like the walls of the courtroom.

Massaquoi did not know the exact shifts of the guards. He would only know that the shift was changing when the guards would come to check on him and his family upstairs. He could not tell who the next security guard would be, unless the current guard told him. The only safe house where the WVS allowed visitors was the final safe house. He had requested to see his mother and some relatives after his testimony in court. Security would not have allowed visitors that were not authorized by the WVS. Defense 20 had not visited him in a safe house, but at his residence in Thunder Hills. The house was indeed yellow, but not a safe house. He was already cooperating with the Special Court at the time. This was in around November, Defense 20 wanted to discuss issues with teachers in Eastern Sierra Leone and spent the night.

Massaquoi explained that his cell phone was taken away in the safe house. After a few months his phone was given back to him with a new SIM card. Sometimes they called it directly, and he was told that the Office of the Prosecutor wanted to see him and would come to pick him up. Sometimes they called the guard at the safe house who would let him know that the OTP wanted to see him. If he was called directly, the guard was also notified. Usually, they called the guards before they called him. It usually took anywhere from half an hour to two hours before a van was sent to pick him up. The van always had two guards and a driver, and Massaquoi always sat in the middle of the two guards. Massaquoi remembered Z3. He was introduced to Z3 in late 2004, at the Kington safe house. He saw him two to three times a month when he came to guard the house. Z3 also drove him to the hospital once. In the fourth safe house, he drove him to WVS and OTP. Z3 was the driver, not the security guard.

There was no RUF base in Freetown, they only had the RUFP office. Z3 could not have taken him to the RUFP office because they already knew that he was a witness, it had been all over the media. It would have been dangerous for him to go to the RUFP office. Z3 never took him to see his girlfriend. At that time, his only girlfriend was Defense 13. When she was still in Freetown, she was not living in the center but in Tengbeh Town, and she later moved to Guinea. Massaquoi testified that he would have never asked Z3 to take him to see Defense 13. Z3 never drove him without security guards.

Massaquoi further testified that he did not have a lawyer while he was staying at the safe house. There was no one between him and the WVS during their meetings. Defense 01 had lived with him from January 2002 to 10 March 2003. They lived together at Thunder Hills when Defense 01 was studying. Massaquoi did not testify at the RUF trial, but at the AFRC trial, sometime in 2006. Afterwards, it took over a year before his request to meet his family was granted. He met his family in 2008, a few weeks or a month before they came to Finland.

The prosecution questions Gibril Massaquoi

The prosecution began by asking Massaquoi about when he met H5 in Vahun. He could not remember exactly when in 2000 they met. They had travelled to Vahun and the helicopter from Monrovia didn't come, so they had to sleep in Vahun and left the next day. That was the first time he saw H5 in Vahun. Their trip was related to the work of the RUF's external delegation. They travelled several times. When they travelled to Monrovia by land, the route went through Voinjama and Kolahun. Massaquoi met Defense 07 once in Voinjama. He could not remember whether they had travelled south from Vahun, along smaller roads, instead of going to Voinjama,

testifying that they travelled either by helicopter or by main roads. The prosecution pointed out that he had mentioned in his first statement that the delegation always travelled through the northern main road from Foya to Voinjama and further to Monrovia. There was no mention of going to Vahun. Massaquoi responded that he had in fact mentioned Vahun and that he had travelled from Vahun to Monrovia either by land or by helicopter. He could not remember how many times he had been to Vahun. He could not recall if he had been in Vahun in June 2001. June 2001 was the last time he was in Monrovia. He packed his things and left for Sierra Leone. He could not remember where they crossed the border, as he was sleeping in the car.

The prosecution pointed out that Massaquoi had told the Special Court that he had been to Vahun in June 2001, this statement was included in one of the documents presented by the defense in their written evidence. Massaquoi confirmed the statement, Benjamin Yeaten was based in Vahun. He could not remember a village called Kamatahun Hassala located to the north of Vahun. He could remember Kolahun as they sometimes landed in Kolahun by helicopter and drove to the border from there.

Massaquoi could not recall how many times he travelled with the delegation between Sierra Leone and Liberia. The trips began in August 2000 and ended in February 2001, except when he returned in June 2001 to pick up his things from Monrovia. After every meeting in Liberia, Mali, or Nigeria, he had to go back to brief Issa Sesay and others. He speculated that the trip to Vahun that he had spoken to the Special Court about was from when he used Issa Sesay's vehicle to go and came back in his own car. He had met Benjamin Yeaten on that trip. Benjamin Yeaten used to give them vehicles and sometimes called the helicopter to pick up the delegation. He arranged the delegation's security in Monrovia. When asked about whether Benjamin Yeaten had given weapons to the RUF, he said that those who brought weapons were not part of the delegation. When asked about the fact that the delegation was there when Yeaten gave weapons to the RUF, he responded: "I can't say it was a coincidence because I know that before this moment the RUF leadership had a relationship with Yeaten."

Massaquoi remembered five guards from when he was taken to the safe house in 2003. He gave their names, including Defense 08 and H6, to the court. He repeated that he could not have known who the next security guard on shift would be, he had no information how the guards planned their shifts. The guards began working at the safe house at the same time he was brought in. At first, two guards would work throughout the day and night. Later, they changed to a shift-based system, with one guard during the day and one during the night. He could not remember when the change in shifts took place. The guards stayed within the fence, by the gate that was locked or in the backyard. The guards had keys to the lock between the upstairs and downstairs area inside the house. The main door to the house was locked and the guards had the key, the family could not leave freely. The children were also locked inside the house, they would sometimes play in the living room or sometimes in their own room. The children could also play in the backyard when the back door was open for cooking.

Finally, Massaquoi testified that a lot of Issa Sesay and Morris Kallon's bodyguards knew he was working with the Special Court. There were reports in the media that he was working with a special court, his name began appearing in the media from the day the court began arresting people. He used a code name up until his testimony in court, when he stated that he would rather testify openly.

September 4, 2023 – Day 59: The prosecution's closing arguments

Today marked the beginning of the final week of the Gibril Massaquoi trial in Finland, with the Turku Court of Appeals hearing the Prosecution's final pleadings.

First, the two prosecutors outlined the witness testimonies received for each of the charges. They also gave an overview of the written evidence and witness testimonies presented by the defence of Mr Massaquoi aimed to counter the charges. Overall, the prosecutors argued that their witnesses had described the events in Liberia in a detailed and sufficiently uniform manner across the different phases of the proceedings, while the evidence submitted by the defence was internally contradictory and did not manage to remove Mr Massaquoi from being at the crime scene during the alleged acts.

The evidence relating to the events of summer 2003 in Monrovia was looked at in greater detail, as Mr Massaquoi had already begun to work with the Special Court for Sierra Leone at that time and he had been taken to a safe house in Freetown, Sierra Leone. The Prosecution claimed that there were multiple contradictions in the defence evidence relating to the details of Mr Massaquoi's witness protection in Freetown that allegedly made it impossible for him to have been in Monrovia during the alleged acts.

As multiple witnesses had mentioned that the perpetrator used a war name Angel Gabriel during the atrocities, the prosecutors presented statistics as to how many witnesses had connected this name to Mr Massaquoi. According to them, a large majority of the witnesses had connected the names Angel Gabriel and Gibril Massaquoi and when combined with other ways of identifying the perpetrator, the Prosecution argued that no reasonable doubt remains as Mr Massaquoi being the perpetrator of these atrocities in Liberia.

The Defence of Mr Massaquoi is set to present their final pleadings this Friday, concluding the trial in the Court of Appeals.

September 4, 2023 [Finland] Day 59: The prosecution's closing arguments

Prosecution final pleadings

The prosecution began their final pleadings by going through the evidence count by count following the indictment.

They began by examining the numerous witness testimonies relating to count 4.1, 'Murders in Kamatahun Hassala'. According to the prosecution, most of the witnesses had witnessed the events directly, and some had heard of them through someone else. Many of the witnesses described a similar series of events, of people brought to Kamatahun Hassala from various villages and the surrounding bush. Witnesses also mentioned that when RUF soldiers came to the villages, they were accused of being LURD spies and this was at least partially the reason why they were captured. As for the perpetrator, many witnesses testified that a commander called Angel Gabriel gave orders to put people inside a house and light it on fire. In addition to civilians, two soldiers present at the scene, Soldier 12 and Soldier 50, testified that Gibril Massaquoi gave the order. Soldier 50 testified that Gibril Massaquoi used the name Angel Gabriel during the operation.

A separate chain of events, count 4.1.3 (iii), was the rape of seven women, who were taken behind the blacksmith's kitchen to be raped and killed. Multiple civilians described the details of these events. Civilian 70 testified that he saw the incident himself, how women, including his wife, were taken there. He also saw the bodies the next day. Many other witnesses described the events similarly and there was no reason to doubt their testimony. Despite the minor differences between the testimonies in the lower court and in the court of appeal, the witnesses generally described the same locations, buildings and events in both hearings. They also named Angel Gabriel as the commander responsible for the event.

For count 4.2, the murder on Moinjama in Nyandehun, the prosecution explained that the sole witness testifying to this incident gave a consistent and credible account of how he personally saw Angel Gabriel killing Moinjama.

As for count 4.5.3, of forced labor in Lofa County, the prosecution explained how four civilians were mentioned in the indictment. Their testimonies support the indictment, they also named Gibril Massaquoi as the commander ordering them to carry goods for the soldiers.

Civilian 35 and Civilian 40 testified, in relation to count 4.5.5, how Gibril Massaquoi gave the order to cook a heart that was cut out of a man's body in Kamatahun Hassala. Civilian 40 named the perpetrator as Angel Gabriel.

In relation to count 4.5.7, of assault in Kamatahun Hassala, the witness who testified to this event used the names Angel Gabriel and Angel Massaquoi.

The prosecution then examined the events in Monrovia under count 4.3. He described the general situation in Waterside, where civilians were looking for food. There was shooting at the market, soldiers shot into a crowd following the orders of their commanders. According to the prosecution, both civilians and soldiers had testified similarly when it comes to the events in Waterside. There are more soldiers as witnesses when compared to the events in Lofa. Many witnesses mentioned RUF troops fighting in Monrovia and that the Liberians called the Sierra Leoneans aqbah. Many soldiers testified that Gibril Massaquoi was a commander for the aqbah and he used the name Angel Gabriel. A large number of witnesses had described events of civilians being captured and taken to a base under or near a bridge, where they were killed. The events at 99 Steps were discussed separately, the prosecution relied mainly on the witness testimonies or former fighters who had described Gibril Massaquoi's role in the incident.

After going over the witness testimonies and the indictment, the prosecution turned towards the written evidence that Gibril Massaquoi's defense had presented. The prosecution had prepared a timeline based on the written evidence and witness testimonies presented by the defense. For the years 2001, 2002 and 2003 the prosecution demonstrated the time periods where Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts could not be verified based on the evidence presented.

For the year 2001, the prosecution presented a list of dates and locations that could actually be verified. According to the prosecution, credible pieces of evidence only accounted for 29 to 31 days in total in 2001, meaning that despite the vast evidence presented, Gibril Massaquoi had many opportunities to commit the alleged acts as his whereabouts could not be confirmed. The prosecution argued that the written evidence presented by the defense could not refute the possibility that Gibril Masssaquoi could have been in Kamatahun Hassala during the time the alleged acts were committed.

The prosecution also analyzed the defense witness testimonies. Gibril Massaquoi himself had testified that he lived in Makeni in summer 2001 and moved to Freetown in October 2001 after his evacuation. Defense 01 had testified that Gibril Massaquoi had moved to Freetown in November 2001. Defense 10 had testified that he lived with Gibril Massaquoi in Freetown from January 2001 to 10 March 2002. This conflicted with the written evidence presented by the defense. Defense 13 testified that Gibril Massaquoi had lived in Freetown from 1 January 2001 to early 2003 and that they had met every two to three days. This testimony conflicts with the written evidence presented. Defense 14 testified that Gibril Massaquoi lived in Freetown in 2001 and went to Monrovia in May 2001. Defense 21 testified that Gibril Massaquoi lived with him in Makeni from 2000 to October 2001. While this testimony was compatible with Gibril Massaquoi's own testimony and the written evidence presented, it included multiple gaps where he was gone for weeks. The prosecution argued that this would not prevent Gibril Massaquoi from being in Kamatahun Hassala during the time when the alleged acts were committed in 2001.

The prosecution then moved to 2002. They presented a timeline of written evidence and argued that none of the evidence could be used to verify Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts. The only concrete dates for Gibril Massaquoi being present in a particular location where on 5, 11 and 18 July and 5 September 2002, when he was meeting with Corinne Dufka. The prosecution then went over the witness testimonies. A particular uncertainty was related to the timing of the fishing project, as witnesses had placed the dates of the project differently. The prosecution argued that the testimonies of the timing of the project and the possible measures Gibril Massaquoi had taken to prepare for the project were not uniform. It was also maintained that the project could not have prevented Gibril Massaquoi from being in Liberia at any point in time. A similar uncertainty related to the paramount chief elections in Gallinas Perry. Based on witness testimonies and written evidence, the prosecution argued that the timing of the elections had not been verified and therefore the claims that Gibril Massaquoi was participating in campaigning in 2000-2001 could not be confirmed. The prosecution argued that the evidence presented could not be used to determine that Gibril Massaquoi could not have been in Liberia during the campaign period. Gibril Massaquoi could have been in Liberia on 26 July 2002, the date Background 1 had testified as the date he had tortured him in Klay.

Finally, the prosecution discussed the evidence on Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts in 2003. No written evidence was submitted in relation to dates past March 2003, as Gibril Massaquoi had moved to the safe house. The prosecution stated that they do not contest that Gibril Massaquoi was in the safe house for most of 2003. However, various witnesses had placed Gibril Massaquoi in Monrovia during the World Wars, not just prosecution witnesses, but also one defense witness Soldier 15, who had testified that he fought with Gibril Massaquoi in Waterside. All of the defense witnesses who had testified that Gibril Massaquoi could not have left the safe house were former employees of the Special Court, who had a duty to make sure Gibril Massaquoi and his family stayed in the safe house. The prosecution argued that these individuals had been so bad at their job that they had allowed Gibril Massaquoi to travel to Liberia. The evidence relating to the safe house, especially regarding the guards and their shifts, had been extremely contradictory. Various defense witnesses had testified that they had met Gibril Massaquoi outside the safe house or that they had visited the safe house. This demonstrates that the house was not a prison, but a safe house used to protect Gibril Massaquoi and his family. The prosecution questioned whether Gibril Massaquoi truly had no possibility to leave the safe house.

The prosecution then turned towards certain pieces of evidence that the defense had used to argue that prosecution witnesses had confused Gibril Massaquoi with someone else. The prosecution discussed the report drafted by L5 as well as its methodology. The prosecution did not contest that Zigzag Marzah had participated in the atrocities committed in Kamatahun Hassala, but L5's report did not exhaustively demonstrate that Gibril Massaquoi could not have been present as well. There had been multiple violent incidents in the area and it was possible that the report had not reached those who had witnessed the atrocities committed by Gibril Massaquoi. Similar points were made about the report prepared by Corinne Dufka for Human Rights Watch. The two reports by the Liberian Truth and Reconciliation Commission had also mentioned that the documents were by no means exhaustive. This meant that the fact that they did not mention Gibril Massaquoi, Angel Gabriel or Angel could not be taken to mean that a person with these names could not have been present in relation to the alleged acts in Liberia. The statements gathered by the Special Court contained the interviews of about 50 to 55 witnesses. They had been archived in a manner that prevented anyone from knowing where the witnesses had been interviewed or what kind of questions they had been asked. As H5 had testified that the investigators in Liberia had not asked specifically about Kamatahun Hassala or the events during the World Wars, these statements could not be taken to indicate that Gibril Massaquoi was the wrong person to be prosecuted for these acts.

As for the charge of torture, the prosecution presented the fact that Background 1 had first mentioned the torture he had endured in 2008, his testimony was presented as documentary evidence by the defense. Contrary to the defense's claim, the prosecution argued that Background 1 had not mentioned 'SSS' men, which would only include Liberians, but 'SS' men, which could mean anything else. The prosecution also pointed out that Background 1 had mentioned the names Gibril Massaquoi and Angel Gabriel during the Charles Taylor trial, three years before he had founded his organization in 2012, which refuted the theory of a conspiracy. Background 1 was also interrupted during his testimony in the Charles Taylor trial and he was not at all asked about Gibril Massaquoi as his torturer.

The prosecution further examined the different testimonies that Background 1 had provided during this trial. While H1 testified that Background 1 did not mention Gibril Massaquoi as his torturer and had in fact mentioned other names, the prosecution argued that Background 1 had himself testified that he only mentioned Gibril Massaquoi's name to a few cellmates that he trusted. The fact that H1 had not heard this name could not be used to exclude the possibility of Gibril Massaquoi's responsibility for the act. Background 1 had also mentioned various instances of torture in his own testimony, but the charges are only related to the one committed by Gibril Massaquoi. The contradictions in Background 1's testimonies had been explained by Background 1 during his latest testimony.

The prosecution also presented their findings on the identification of the perpetrator by the witnesses. Various witnesses had identified Gibril Massaquoi from the photographs presented as the perpetrator. Various witnesses had also mentioned a commander called Angel Gabriel as the one responsible for the alleged acts, and many had directly connected Angel Gabriel to Gibril Massaquoi. Various witnesses had testified that the RUF commander spoke Krio and Mende or that he spoke like a Sierra Leonean. Most of the witnesses mentioned that the commander had introduced himself, and a large majority of the witnesses who had mentioned the name Angel Gabriel had also connected this name to Gibril Massaquoi. A significantly smaller portion of witnesses had mentioned Angel Gabriel, but not Gibril Massaquoi, while a small portion mentioned that Gibril Massaquoi had not used such a name.

According to the prosecution, just over a half of the witnesses in relation to the events of Kamatahun Hassala and Waterside had mentioned that the perpetrator used a slogan of some sort. Many of them connected the slogan to the name Gibril Massaquoi, while others testified that the slogan included the name Gibril or Massaquoi. A large portion of witnesses also testified that the slogan included the name Angel Gabriel. Additionally, 28 witnesses had correctly identified Gibril Massaquoi from a photograph. While some risk was related to this method of identification, the lower court had not correctly assessed the risk. The witnesses had provided more information in the court of appeal as to whether they had been aware of Gibril Massaquoi's arrest or if they had seen his photograph in the media. Only two witnesses out of these 28 had mentioned that they had seen Gibril Massaquoi's picture beforehand, meaning that the lower court had erred in its risk assessment. Considering the numbers and facts related to the witnesses identifying the perpetrator and connecting the various names to Gibril Massaquoi, the prosecution asked who else could have been the Sierra Leonean leading the aqbah in Monrovia, if not Gibril Massaquoi. According to the prosecution, no reasonable doubt remains as to the identity of the perpetrator mentioned by the witnesses.

The prosecution also addressed some claims made about Civitas Maxima and the Global Justice and Research Project. Witness L1 had claimed that Background 1 had attempted to recruit him to lie about Jungle Jabbah, Kunti Kamara, Alieu Kosiah, Gibril Massaquoi and Agnes Reeves Taylor. The prosecution examined each of these trials to demonstrate that Background 1 or L1 had no real connection to the respondent or the events or that the timing of the events as relayed by L1 was off. The court in Switzerland had also discussed this same issue in relation to Kosiah's proceedings and had, in both instances, rejected any claims of a conspiracy to recruit false witnesses.

Claims had also been made against Employee 1, who had assisted the Finnish police on the ground in Liberia. The prosecution argued that Employee 1 could have never understood what kind of witnesses he was supposed to recruit, as he had no idea about the content of these proceedings which were held in Finnish. Employee 1 had explained in a logical and patient manner all the possibly confusing details found in his notebook or in his testimonies and had maintained that he had conducted himself with a great level of integrity when assisting the Finnish police. The prosecution concluded that given the explanations received from Employee 1, none of these claims could support any possible effect Employee 1 would have had on the witness testimonies and in any event, it was not practically possible for him to do so. The present case included over one hundred testimonies in total, Employee 1 could never have been able to make sure all of them would have been uniform and according to his own made-up story.

Finally, the prosecution focused on how the extensive evidence presented in the present case should be evaluated by the court. They referred to Dr. Korkman's expert statement, which mentioned that contradictions are a sign a lack of credibility. Dr. Häkkänen had highlighted the existing bias in legal thinking about the added credibility of a first testimony. The prosecution argued that the present case and its factual circumstances could challenge this bias in the Finnish legal system. As there are not many cases with evidence relating to events over 20 years ago, the court should adopt a more lenient approach in relation to the witness testimonies. It is impossible to remember all the details from 20 years ago. According to the prosecution, small contradictions and changes should not be taken to indicate a complete lack of credibility. The present case is the first time a Finnish court has to evaluate such testimonies and evidence on such a large scale. The passage of time and the evident trauma of the witnesses should be taken into account when the court evaluates the evidence. The prosecution ended their pleadings with

a number of direct quotes from the testimonies, where witnesses explained the states of trauma the events left them in.

September 8, 2023 – Day 60: The defense's closing arguments

Today marked the final day in the proceedings of the Gibril Massaquoi trial in the Turku Court of Appeals. The whole day was dedicated to the Defense of Mr Massaquoi delivering the closing arguments.

The defense attorney of Mr Massaquoi went through the charges in a meticulous way, analyzing each aspect of the case. He criticized the investigation conducted by the Finnish police before and even during the trial in the lower and appeals courts for not following various standards set in Finnish law, and stressed the extraordinary situation this created during the trial. The way many witnesses were contacted and brought to the trial by the Finnish police or the local employees in Liberia was also criticized by the Defense.

The Defense also focused on the witness testimonies supporting the prosecution's case by highlighting the changes in the testimonies throughout the proceedings. Ultimately, the Defense argued that the Prosecution had not managed to rule out the alternative version presented by the Defense of the events in Liberia between 2001 and 2003 and Mr Massaquoi's role in them, thus not fulfilling the required threshold for a guilty verdict on any of the charges.

The Court will now enter the deliberation phase, with the judgment expected by 15 November.

September 8, 2023 [Finland] Day 60: The defense's closing arguments

Defense final pleadings

The defense began their final pleadings by giving an overview of how the trial had progressed. Civitas Maxima had done its own investigation in 2018 and shared its results with the Finnish authorities. The Finnish police had interviewed everyone that had been interviewed by Civitas Maxima, but none of the witnesses were used during the present trial. The Finnish police decided to get their own witnesses and travelled to Liberia in early 2019. Employee 1 and another GJRP employee were contracted out from the Global Justice and Research Project (GJRP) to help the police during their second trip. They helped the police with finding witnesses throughout the process. According to the defense, all the witnesses found by Employee 1 and the other employee could name Massaquoi or Angel Gabriel. The defense also gave an overview of each trip the Finnish police had taken during the pre-trial investigation, as well as each of the 11 additional investigation reports drafted after the initial pre-trial investigation report had been completed.

The defense discussed the evaluation of the evidence, of how the prosecution had presented a hypothesis that Gibril Massaquoi led troops in Lofa and left the safe house to travel to Monrovia. A new addition to the prosecution's hypothesis was that in various events in Lofa, Zigzag Marzah also participated. The defense had previously presented its own argument that Zigzag was responsible for these atrocities and that Gibril Massaquoi could not leave the safe house.

The Finnish Supreme Court case KKO 2013:96 had set the applicable standard to be followed when evaluating evidence in a criminal case. It is up to the prosecutor to demonstrate that the case and evidence supporting culpability is sufficiently clear to reach a guilty verdict. According to the defense, a central question in the present trial is whether the contradictions and changes in

the witness testimonies are a result of trauma. The District Court had discussed this issue extensively in its judgment. Dr. Häkkänen had presented some counterarguments. The defense stated that trauma itself does not make a testimony credible; it is one explanation among others as to why there may be changes and contradictions between the testimonies of the same person. The experts stated that trauma affects memories in a highly individual manner and traumatic memories may not be any more fragmented than regular memories. The sole fact that a witness' testimony has changed does not indicate that the witness has been traumatized.

The defense highlighted Dr. Korkman's statement that people are susceptible to talking about their experiences with others all the time. She had also stated that people are capable of changing their perceptions and memories based on information received from others; it is even possible that completely new memories are created. The defense argued that the mere possibility of trauma should not be allowed to prejudice the legal protection of the defendant. It must also be possible to take the changing nature of the testimony as a factor undermining its probative value.

The defense raised that the jurisprudence of the International Criminal Court mentioned by Dr. Häkkänen cannot be applied to the present case, as the case does not contain any evidence other than witness testimonies. Any uncertainty as to the historical facts must not be of detriment to the defendant.

The defense focused on the identification done by the witnesses. According to the defense, the first credible identification took place in December 2019, long after the beginning of the police interviews. After Gibril Massaquoi's arrest in Finland, the number of correct identifications greatly increased. Numerous witnesses mentioned, during the appeal proceedings, that they had seen news about Gibril Massaquoi's arrest. The defense pointed out some additional points decreasing the credibility of the identification carried out by the police and criticized the fact that Zigzag Marzah was not included in the photographs, despite the prosecution admitting that Marzah had committed similar acts in Lofa.

According to the defense, the Finnish police had deemed Background 1 to have a conflict of interest in the case. The pre-trial investigation is to be conducted by a police officer duly employed in a public office. This could not be applied to Employee 1, who has not received a training akin to a Finnish police officer. Nothing would have prevented including a Finnish police officer in Liberia when searching for witnesses. In the defense's view, Employee 1 had done things reserved for police officer under Finnish law. Given that Background 1, Employee 1's superior, is a plaintiff in this case and has been separately deemed to have a conflict of interest in the matter, Employee 1's status is also highly questionable. Employee 1 cannot be considered to have been truly removed from GJRP. Employee 1 had also changed his testimony as to how he had found and met witnesses, and whether he had participated in the investigation conducted by Civitas Maxima, as well as in many other details. Some things differed depending on whether it was asked from Employee 1 or from the Finnish police involved in the investigation. All the witnesses found by Employee 1 mentioned the name Angel, Angel Gabriel or Massaquoi.

As for evidence presented, the defense pointed out that a considerable possibility exists that the alleged acts have taken place on the days when Gibril Massaquoi was credibly outside Liberia. When the possible time of commission is multiple months, the prosecution should have been able to time the acts with more precision. According to the defense, the prosecution has not been able to demonstrate that the alleged acts were committed during the time that Gibril

Massaquoi was in Liberia. The defense stated that they do not deny that the alleged acts may have taken place, but the details of the alleged acts in the indictment should be demonstrated with sufficient precision. They maintained that any alternative hypothesis should be excluded before there could be sufficient certainty as to Gibril Massaquoi's guilt.

The defense presented a table highlighting the contradictions in the witness testimonies. According to the defense, it can be seen that the information about the perpetrator gets stronger the further the trial progresses. Various witnesses spoke of mixed names, such as Angel Michael or Zigzag Massaquoi. Many witnesses also mentioned that they had spoken about the events with others, while others first denied but then admitted to it once their pre-trial interview or recording was reviewed. As the witnesses had initially denied having spoken with someone else about the events, nobody tried to investigate whether they did so or with whom. According to the defense, it is impossible to evaluate the role these external discussions may have played on their testimonies, as the witnesses denied having such discussions in the first place. The defense also referred to the many additions in the testimonies.

The defense then began discussing the details in the indictment. As for the events in Monrovia, the original time for the commission of the alleged acts ended on 9 March 2003. On 1 July 2021, the prosecution extended this timeframe up to 18 August 2003, without explaining which parts of the indictment were affected by this extension. The evidence for Monrovia is solely based on witness testimonies and the defense has continuously maintained, based on both witness testimonies and documentary evidence, that Gibril Massaquoi was in a safe house as of 10 March 2003. Gibril Massaquoi had an incentive to not commit acts mentioned in the indictment since signing the witness protection agreement in October 2002.

The defense also presented overviews of the timing of the events, the identification of the perpetrator and how the witnesses had been found. They maintained that some sort of change had happened after defense witnesses were heard for the first time, as there was a sudden change in testimonies about the timing of the Monrovia events and the identification of the perpetrator.

The defense then moved to discuss the counts relating to the events in Kamatahun Hassala. They argued that the timing of the events differs from the timing advanced by the prosecution and that Gibril Massaquoi was not present at the time of the alleged acts. Their evidence countering the indictment is based on written evidence and the fact that Gibril Massaquoi had left Liberia in June 2001. The defense discussed the content of the witness testimonies in detail in relation to every count, highlighting the changes between hearings and the lack of credible identifications by the witnesses.

After discussing the witness testimonies in relation to the counts, the defense turned their attention to Employee 1's conduct and how witnesses were found in Lofa. According to the defense, Employee 1 had travelled between the Finnish police's second and third trip to Lofa to search for witnesses specifically related to Gibril Massaquoi. The defense pointed out that Employee 1's testimony about this trip and the related notes in his notebook had changed from the lower court to his hearing in the court of appeal. The defense went over details related to Employee 1's visit to Kiantahun and concluded that the explanations he gave about the trip could not be truthful. The defense also discussed various sections of Employee 1's notebook in detail.

The defense also discussed Defense 09's testimony. According to the defense, Defense 09 was the only person who had testified having been on the frontline with Gibril Massaquoi. He had also testified that Gibril Massaquoi left Liberia in early 2000. After the pre-trial interview, it came to light that Defense 09 has a strong connection to Civitas Maxima, Alain Werner had contacted the head investigator. Employee 1's notebook contains Defense 09's name with a date after 2019, which according to the defense leads to the question as to whether Defense 09 had already been heard at that time. The Finnish police was not willing to discuss the connection between Defense 09 and Civitas Maxima. Defense 09's testimony had also changed, and he had brought one witness to the case, who knew who the suspect in the case was even before his police interview.

L5 had heard many witnesses about the events in Kamatahun Hassala. Many of them named Zigzag Marzah, while none of them named Angel, Angel Gabriel or Gibril Massaquoi. Corinne Dufka's report contained similar results. The defense had checked the list of victims mentioned in L5's article and the list of victims the prosecution had referred to, drafted by Civilian 50. There were six names that figured on both lists, meaning that they are referring to the same incident.

The defense also focused on Background 1's testimony, as it was central for the torture charges. They highlighted various aspects of Background 1's testimony and the changes in his testimony and in the indictment. In sum, the defense argued that the timing of the events had changed and there was no way to credibly verify the timing of the alleged torture in Klay. The defense also saw it as unlikely that Gibril Massaquoi would have introduced himself, knowing what he was doing elsewhere at the time, it seemed unbelievable that he would have done so. There was also evidence of Gibril Massaquoi being in Sierra Leone in July 2002 around the probable timing of Background 1's torture. Many defense witnesses had testified that Gibril Masaquoi did not leave Sierra Leone in June-July 2002.

As for the mention of the name Angel Gabriel or Angel, the defense referred to the report of the Liberian Truth and Reconciliation Commission in 2009. There was no mention of Gibril Massaquoi, Angel or Angel Gabriel. The Finnish police had conducted a large summary of all the interviews undertaken by the TRC, which included only one mention of a Massaquoi, who, according to the interview, could not speak English well. The defense also presented an overview of witnesses who had not mentioned the name Angel Gabriel or Gibril Massaquoi.

The defense criticized the fact that H5 had expressed his doubt as to the case's timeline to both Alain Werner and Background 1. According to the defense, Werner knew H5's importance in the case and told him to stay off it and promised to write him a recommendation letter for France. The defense pointed out that Civitas Maxima and the GJRP have maintained throughout the case that they do not pay witnesses or affect them in any way, yet Werner had written a recommendation letter for H5. The defense then asked whether there had been any additional witnesses who had been prevented from being brought to the case by Civitas Maxima or GJRP.

The defense focused separately on the issue of the safe house. Gibril Massaquoi had entered the safe house on 10 March 2003. The house had constant surveillance and one could not leave it unnoticed. The premises were checked with every shift change. None of the witness testimonies mentioned a situation where Gibril Massaquoi would have been absent or where someone did not know where he was. The defense rejected the arguments advanced by the prosecution, namely that the guards were so bad that Gibril Massaquoi could have gone to Liberia, by stating that, for example H4 had no personal duty to keep Gibril Massaquoi at the safe house. The other

argument was that the Special Court would have sent Gibril Massaquoi to Liberia. The defense pointed out that it was deemed 'suicide' by Corinne Dufka for Gibril Massaquoi to go to Liberia in summer 2003. Z3 became part of the investigation through Werner and his testimony had changed drastically from the lower court. According to the defense, Z3's testimony in the court of appeal was good for 'what was needed, not for any actual information.'

The defense highlighted the fact that, in the prosecution's timelines, they had not taken all the time needed for travel into account. The defense went over their own timelines, presenting written evidence as to Gibril Massaquoi's whereabouts. Finally, the defense argued that Gibril Massaquoi had presented a vast amount of evidence countering the charges. Many aspects of the case were brought about by accident. Gibril Massaquoi had been in the public eye for a long time, yet there are not many traces of him in relation to the alleged acts to be found.

The defense argued that they have managed to diminish the credibility of the prosecution's witness testimonies with their countering evidence and have demonstrated that Gibril Massaquoi could not have left the safe house in 2003 under any circumstances.

The defense concluded that there is a reasonable doubt as to Gibril Massaquoi's guilt and that all the charges should be dismissed by the court.